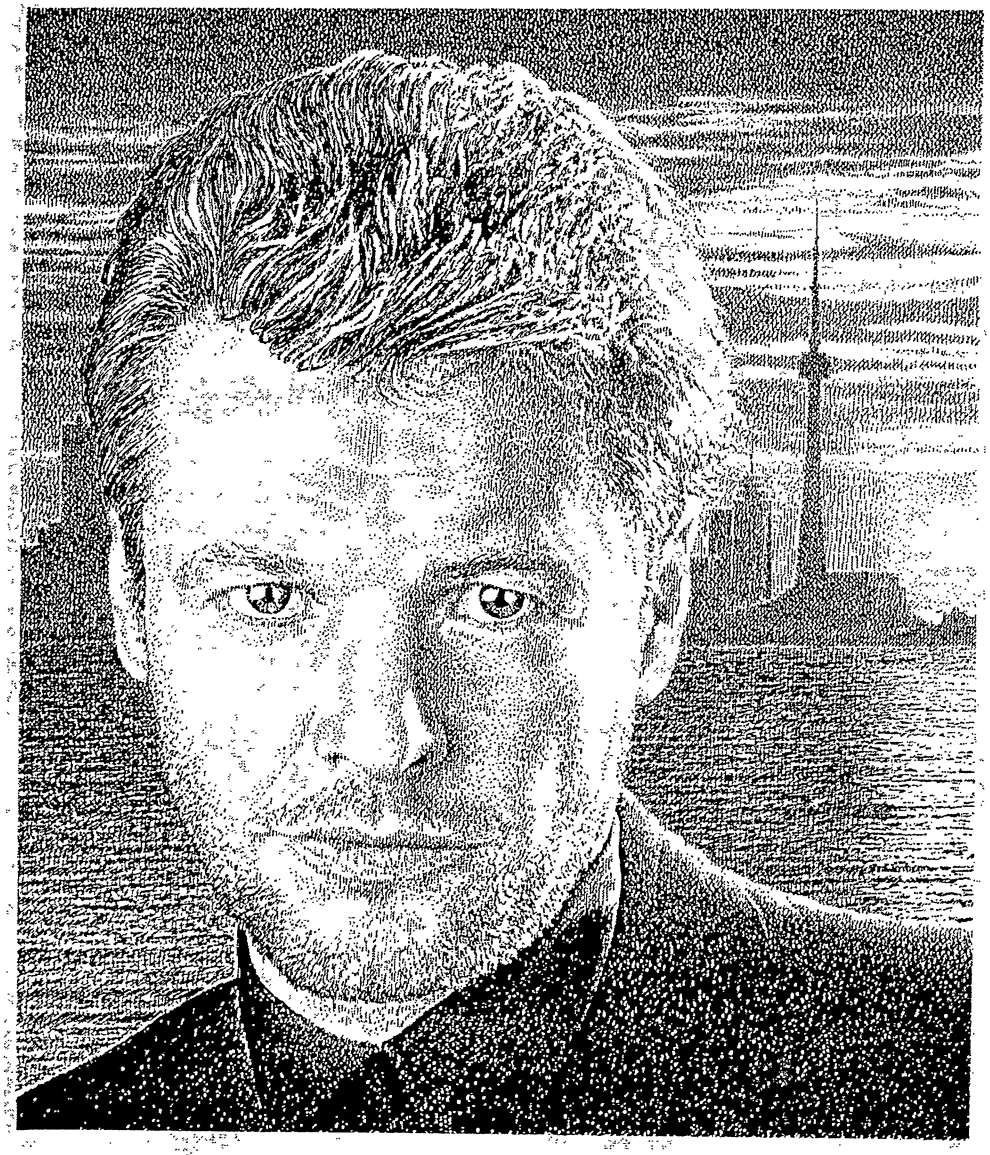
# FOREVER KNIGHT COMPENDIUM



*Judi Moore*

*Thanks to...*
*(Or should it be "Fangs" to...)*
*Barbara Fister-Liltz, for her patience and encouragement and for selecting me for this project in the first place,*
*Frank Liltz and Gargoyles, Unltd., for the contribution of their beautiful artwork,*
*Sue Allen, Denysé M. Bridger, and Lee Ann Harris, for being my Canadian connections,*
*Melissa Keck and Jackie Paciello for their work in production and printing and for putting up with last-minute changes,*
*and the cast, crew, writers, and creators of Forever Knight, for the years of enjoyment!*

FOREVER KNIGHT COMPENDIUM, © March, 1997, by Judi Moore and FENRIS HOUSE, a division of SPECIAL SERVICES, UNLIMITED. Cover art ©1997 by B. Fister-Liltz. Interior art ©1997 by Frank V. Liltz. No part of this book may be reproduced in part or in whole without the express written permission of the author, artist, and/or FENRIS HOUSE, the publisher. This is an amateur publication created solely for the enjoyment of the fans of FOREVER KNIGHT and does not pretend to infringe upon copyrights held by CBSTV, TriStar Television, Paragon Entertainment Productions, James D. Parriott, or any other holder of the aforementioned copyrights.

•Cover art — "Forever Her Knight" © 1993 B. Fister-Liltz

FENRIS HOUSE • A Division of Special Services, Unlimited
8601A West Cermak Road • North Riverside IL 60546-1225 • USA

Layout and setup by St. David Productions
5309 Abinger Court • Tampa FL 33624-4129 • USA

Printing services courtesy of PW Digital Design
• Oak Lawn IL 60453-1659

# CONTENTS

Introduction ..... 1
A Bit of History ..... 2
Nick Knight Credits ..... 4
Forever Knight Credits ..... 5
Nick Knight Synopsis ..... 7
Episode Guide - First Season ..... 13
Dark Knight ..... 15
Dark Knight - The Second Chapter ..... 17
For I Have Sinned ..... 19
Last Act ..... 21
Dance by the Light of the Moon ..... 23
Dying to Know You ..... 25
False Witness ..... 27
Cherry Blossoms ..... 29
1 Will Repay ..... 31
Dead Air ..... 33
Hunters ..... 35
Dead Issue ..... 37
Father Figure ..... 39
Spin Doctor ..... 41
Dying for Fame ..... 43
Only the Lonely ..... 45
Unreality TV ..... 47
Feeding the Beast ..... 49
If Looks Could Kill ..... 51
Fatal Mistake ..... 53
1966 ..... 55
Love You to Death ..... 57
Episode Guide - Second Season ..... 59
Killer Instinct ..... 61
A Fate Worse than Death ..... 63
Stranger than Fiction ..... 65
Bad Blood ..... 67
Forward into the Past ..... 69
Capital Offense ..... 71
Hunted ..... 73
Faithful Followers ..... 75
Undue Process ..... 77
Father's Day ..... 79
Can't Run, Can't Hide ..... 81
Near Death ..... 83
Crazy Love ..... 85
Baby Baby ..... 87
Partners of the Month ..... 89
The Fire Inside ..... 91
Amateur Night ..... 93
The Fix ..... 95
Curiouser & Curiouser ..... 97
Beyond the Law ..... 99
Queen of Harps ..... 101

Close Call ..... 103
Be My Valentine ..... 105
The Code ..... 107
A More Permanent Hell ..... 109
Blood Money ..... 111
Episode Guide - Third Season ..... 113
Black Buddha - Part I ..... 115
Black Buddha - Part II ..... 117
Outside the Lines ..... 119
Blackwing ..... 121
Blind Faith ..... 123
My Boyfriend is a Vampire ..... 125
Hearts of Darkness ..... 127
Trophy Girl ..... 129
Let No Man Tear Asunder ..... 131
Night in Question ..... 133
Sons of Belial ..... 135
Strings ..... 137
Fever ..... 139
Dead of Night ..... 141
The Games Vampires Play ..... 143
The Human Factor ..... 145
Avenging Angel ..... 147
Fallen Idol ..... 149
Jane Doe ..... 151
Francesca ..... 153
Ashes to Ashes ..... 155
Last Knight ..... 157
Writers' Guide ..... 159
General Premises ..... 161
Character History - Detective Nick Knight ..... 162
Character History - LaCroix ..... 167
Character History - Dr. Natalie Lambert ..... 169
Character History - Detective Don Schanke ..... 171
Character History - Janette ..... 173
Character History - Detective Tracy Vetter ..... 175
Character History - Javier Vachon ..... 177
Character Histories - Captain Joe Stonetree ..... 178
- Captain Amanda Cohen ..... 178
- Captain Joe Reese ..... 178
Character Histories - Alma ..... 179
- Grace Balthazar ..... 179
- Lapinsky ..... 179
- Miklos ..... 179
- Norma ..... 179
- Screed ..... 179
- Urs ..... 179
Vampire Lore ..... 180
Inconsistencies ..... 190

# INTRODUCTION

Welcome to the *Forever Knight Compendium!* Here are a few helpful notes...

**Credits** - Acting credits are given as they appear in the episodes. If the character's name was supplied along with the name of the actor, that information has been relayed here. Otherwise, no guesses were made as to which actor played which part. Interestingly, there are several instances of characters' names being listed in the credits which do not quite coincide with the names as they were used in the episode. (Perhaps there was a rewrite somewhere down the line, and not all the bases were covered when it came to the name change.) In a related note, the absence of characters' names in the credits necessitated occasional guesses as to their spelling in the episode synopses.

**Chronology** - Episodes may have aired in different orders in different markets, but they have been listed here in order of episode number (101-122, 201-226, 301-322). Additionally, in order to preserve the chronology, the *Nick Knight* synopsis precedes the *Forever Knight* synopses.

**Flashbacks** - No guesses were made as to specific dates of the flashbacks. If the information was supplied in the episode, it has been conveyed in the synopsis.

*Italics* - Portions of the first season episode synopses are in italics, indicating material found only in the Canadian/European versions. Because fewer commercials are run, the Canadian/European versions run several minutes longer. Sometimes, the U.S. versions are missing entire scenes; sometimes, it's just a line or two; and sometimes, it's nothing but filler. The extra time is often taken up by slower-running credits, or longer scenes of Nick driving in his car, Nick killing time in his apartment, etc. Often, the same filler shots are used, and different bits of dialogue run through Nick's mind, depending on which episode the shots are used in. (How many times have we seen Nick play that same solitary game of chess in his apartment?) After the first season, however, the episodes were shot with the American length in mind, so the second and third season synopses contain no extra material.

**Music Notes** - It is noted at the end of the synopses when the music from a particular episode can be found on the *Forever Knight Soundtrack* (available from GNP Crescendo Records). There are a few exceptions, however. The soundtrack contains the "Forever Knight Theme," but to avoid the redundancy of mentioning it at the end of every synopsis, it is mentioned here instead. Similarly, there are four songs performed by Lori Yates that are frequently heard as background music in the Raven, while Nick is in his car, etc. These songs, "The Hunger," "Black Rose," "Touch the Night," and "Dark Side of the Glass" are mentioned here to avoid repetition. There is an exception to the exception, however. "Dark Side of the Glass" is noted at the end of "Dying for Fame" because it is featured prominently in that episode, rather than having been used as background music. The soundtrack also contains four snippets of "The Nightcrawler" which are not heard in any episode.

**Writer's Guide (Character Histories)** - For the most part, when information is related in a character's history, the name of the episode from which the information was obtained is supplied. In cases where the information is so prevalent in the series, however, that it can be found in almost any episode, no episode title is given. Some examples of this are: the dispatch ID for Nick's car (81-Kilo), the address of the Coroners Building (26 Grenville St.), LaCroix's on-air pseudonym ("The Nightcrawler"), and Janette's name for Nick ("Nicholah").

# A BIT OF HISTORY

*Forever Knight* was a TV series about a vampire cop. Appropriate to the genre, the show died, then rose from the grave - twice, so far!

*Forever Knight* began life as *Nick Knight.* The two-hour pilot, starring Rick Springfield, aired as a TV-movie in 1989. The series wasn't picked up, however, and the show suffered its first death.

Three years later, the pilot was recast (with the exception of John Kapelos as Schanke), retooled, and reshot. Because *Nick Knight* sounded so much like Nickelodeon's *Nick at Nite,* it was renamed *Forever Knight,* a title suggested by the star of the series, Geraint Wyn Davies. This time, the series was picked up, and in the 1992/93 television season, *Forever Knight* aired as part of CBS-TV's late-night lineup, *Crimetime after Primetime.* The show developed quite a following and spawned several fan clubs, but when David Letterman moved his late-night talk show to CBS, *Forever Knight* lost its time slot and was canceled, dying for the second time.

Fan response was tremendous. Letters poured into the offices of Paragon Entertainment and TriStar Television, and in a very unusual move, the show was resurrected (with only one cast member change and a precinct change) and aired in the '94/95 television season in first-run syndication, after having missed the entire '93/94 season.

After its second season, the show's future was again in question, but Paragon Entertainment and TriStar Television joined forces with the USA Network, and the show was picked up for the '95/96 season, although three of the six main characters were lost, and three new characters were added. In another usual move, the show ran on both the USA Network and on local stations in first-run syndication. Midway through the season, however, *Forever Knight* disappeared from the USA Network and resurfaced on its sister station, the Sci-Fi Channel.

Between its incarnations as *Nick Knight and Forever Knight,* the show was revamped (appropriately enough), and the following changes were made:

*Nick Knight* took place in Los Angeles; *Forever Knight* took place in Toronto. In yet another unusual move, the show made no secret of the fact that it was produced in Canada and proudly showcased its Toronto setting. At a time when many Canadian-produced TV series were being made to look as though they were set in "Anycity, U.S.A.," the opening sequence of *Forever Knight* featured Toronto's unique skyline, including the CN Tower, and references were constantly made to real-life Toronto locations.

*Nick Knight* took place entirely in the present, whereas *Forever Knight* included flashbacks into the vampires' pasts, thereby creating secondary story lines and filling the audience in on the vampires' long and colorful histories.

*In Nick Knight,* when the vampires changed from the "normal" (human-looking) state to the vampire state, their teeth changed into fangs, their eyes glowed, and their fingernails became talon-like. Not all three of these changes were necessarily manifested at the same time, although they could be. In *Forever Knight,* the changes were limited to fangs and glowing eyes, which were usually manifested at the same time, although there were occasional exceptions.

*In Nick Knight,* Nick's real first name was Jean-Pierre. In *Forever Knight,* Nick kept his original first name of Nicholas throughout the centuries, although he used many different last names over the years.

Although Nick's age was never specifically stated in *Nick Knight,* press releases referred to him as a 400-year old vampire. In *Forever Knight,* the opening narration revealed that Nick was "brought across in 1228." Assuming that he was in his thirties at the time, he was roughly 800 years old.

*In Nick Knight,* Nick lived in a converted theater, the marquee of which read: *It's a Wonderful Life. In Forever Knight,* Nick lived in a converted warehouse. Both were high-tech, however, featuring electronic security systems and mechanical blinds on the windows.

In *Nick Knight,* Nick drove a black 1959 convertible Cadillac. In *Forever Knight, it* was a '62, and it was blue (although it often appeared green on camera). In both instances, however, it was stated that Nick had chosen that particular automobile because it had the most trunk space of any car made in the last thirty years. (Nick used the trunk of his car for shelter when he found himself away from home at sunrise.)

*In Nick Knight,* Nick warmed his bottled blood in the microwave. In *Forever Knight,* Nick drank it straight out of the refrigerator.

In *Nick Knight,* Nick's friend and confidante, the forensic pathologist trying to help him regain his mortality, was Dr. Jack Burrows. (Note: Press accounts referred to Jack as "Dr. Brittington," but in the TV-movie, he is heard to answer the phone: "Dr. Burrows.") In *Forever Knight,* it was Dr. Natalie Lambert, a change which allowed their friendship to evolve on an entirely different level.

*In Nick Knight,* Nick's superior was Captain Brunetti. In the three seasons of *Forever Knight,* Nick worked for Captains Joe Stonetree, Amanda Cohen, and Joe Reese.

The show died its third and presumably final death at the end of its third season in 1996. Schanke, Cohen, Tracy, and Vachon were all dead, as were secondary characters Urs and Screed. Janette had left town, and LaCroix had decided that it was time for him to move on, as well. True to form, however, the last moments of the series allowed for the possibility of yet another resurrection, perhaps in the form of a TV-movie. Natalie was left on the brink of death, having lost too much blood to survive, unless, of course, she were to be "brought across." Nick couldn't condemn her to an eternity of darkness and chose instead to die with her. The last moments showed Nick kneeling by Natalie's body, with LaCroix behind him, about to stake him through the heart with a wooden staff. It has even been speculated that in the final moments, Nick at last regained his humanity and that LaCroix's "Damn you, Nicholas" was uttered with the realization that he had finally, truly lost his "son." The deathblow was never shown, however, and the final shot, a rising sun, left the audience with a glimmer of hope, or at least of doubt, as to the final outcome.

# NICK KNIGHT CREDITS

RICK SPRINGFIELD..... Detective Nick Knight
JOHN KAPELOS .....Detective Don Schanke
ROBERT HARPER.....Dr. Jack Burrows
RICHARD FANCY .....Captain Brunetti

Film Editor
BENJAMIN A. WEISSMAN, A.C.E.

Music by
JOSEPH CONLAN

Prodution Designer
PAUL EADS

Director of Photography
FRANK BEASCOECHEA, A.S.C.

Executive Producers
ROBERTA BECKER ZIEGEL
BARRY WEITZ

Produced by
S. MICHAEL FORMICA

Teleplay by
JAMES D. PARRIOTT

Story by
BARNEY COHEN
JAMES D. PARRIOTT

Directed by
FARHAD MANN

Unit Production Manager
S. MICHAEL FORMICA

Associate Producer
BENJAMIN A. WEISSMAN

# FOREVER KNIGHT CREDITS

GERAINT WYN DAVIES ..... Detective Nick Knight
NIGEL BENNETT ..... LaCroix
CATHERINE DISHER..... Dr. Natalie Lambert
JOHN KAPELOS ..... Detective Don Schanke (1st and 2nd seasons)
DEBORAH DUCHÊNE..... Janette (1st and 2nd seasons)
LISA RYDER..... Detective Tracy Vetter (3rd season)
BEN BASS ..... Javier Vachon (3rd season)
GARY FARMER..... Captain Joe Stonetree (lst season)
NATSUKO OHAMA..... Captain Amanda Cohen (2nd season)
BLU MANKUMA ..... Captain Joe Reese (3rd season)

Created by
JAMES D. PARRIOTT
BARNEY COHEN

Executive Producers
JAMES D. PARRIOTT
JON SLAN

Co-Executive Producer
RICHARD BORCHIVER (3rd season)

Producers
RICHARD BORCHIVER (lst and 2nd seasons)
NICHOLAS J. GRAY (3rd season)

Consulting Producers
LARRY LALONDE (2nd season)
PHIL BEDARD (2nd season)

Supervising Producers
LIONEL E. SIEGEL (1st season)
NAOMI JANZEN (1st season)
NICHOLAS J. GRAY (1st and 2nd season)
PHIL BEDARD (3rd season)
LARRY LALONDE (3rd season)

Associate Producer/Producfion Manager
NICHOLAS J. GRAY (1st season)

Production Supervisor
NOELLA NESDOLY (lst season)

Production Manager
MICHAEL BROWNSTONE (1st season)
TERRY STEYN (2nd season)

Line Producer/Production Manager
DENNIS CHAPMAN (3rd season)

Director of Photography
BERT DUNK, A.S.C., C.S.C

Music Composed & Performed by
FRED MOLLIN

Production Designer
BILL BEETON (lst season)
JACQUES BRADETTE (2nd and 3rd seasons)

Executive Story Editors
PETER MITCHELL (lst season)
NAOMI JANZEN (lst season)
TONY SHEER (1st season)
MICHAEL SADOWSKI

Executive Consultants
BARRY WEITZ
ROBERTA BECKER-ZIEGEI,

# NICK KNIGHT

## NICK KNIGHT

### Guest Cast

Laura Johnson as "Alyce Hunter"
Craig Richard Nelson Fran Ryan
with
Gregory Wagrowski .....Detective Jessell
Irene Miracle .....Nurse
Davis Roberts.....Dr. Dave
Al Berry .....Desk Sergeant
Dendrie Taylor..... Tanning Attendant
Audree Chapman.....Uniformed Policewoman
Rif Hutton .....Reporter #2
Christopher Bertolini ....Impound Lot Employee
Troy Melton.....Museum Guard
Carl Ciartalio..... Pure Melrose

Michael Nader as "LaCroix"
Cec Verrell Jack Murdock

David Byrd..... Guard #2
Al Fann..... Dedrick
David Correia..... Mechanic
Allison Barron ..... Girl Swimmer
Pamela West ..... Tanning Attendant
Rosanna Huffman..... Reporter #1
Dennis Moynahan ..... Confused Orderly
Freddie Dawson .....Orderly #1
Robert Neches ..... Forensic Man

### Synopsis

At an archeological dig, archeologist Alyce Hunter and her team unearth a ceremonial jade goblet. A year later, the goblet is stolen from a museum in Los Angeles, and a guard is killed.

In a tanning salon, Detective Nick Knight becomes highly agitated and pushes the panic button on the sun bed. When the two attendants rush in, he tells them that he got a little claustrophobic, adding, "It's like a coffin in there." One attendant thinks he's cute, but the other thinks he's weird and remarks, "Comes in three times a week and never gets a tan."

Nick checks on a couple of homeless friends, Jeannie and Topper, in a park and urges them to keep their wits about them until the police "catch this maniac." The police dispatcher beckons "81-Kilo" and alerts Nick to the murder at the museum, saying, "We've got another one."

At the museum, Officer Dedrick tells Nick that the doors were all locked and the alarm was set. He remarks that the killer must have flown in. This is the fourth victim in four weeks to have been drained of blood. The others had been homeless, however. When Nick turns away from the sight of the blood on the guard's neck, Detective Schanke can't believe that they put a guy like this on homicide. Nick and Schanke do not get along at all. While talking to curator Alyce Hunter, who had found the body, Nick remarks that the first four digits on a Mayan stela match his alarm code. Alyce, who is sure that she's seen Nick before, tells him that the stolen goblet was from a dig several miles north of Altun Kinal and had been used in sacrificial ceremonies. Nick impresses Alyce with his knowledge of the archeological site's "curse" and the fact that the Mayan cup was used to drink the sacrificed victim's blood. Outside, the press have converged on the museum and are calling it another "vampire murder."

At the morgue, Dr. Jack Burrows makes Nick drink some tea, which he barely manages to choke down, and Nick reports that he's up to about ten minutes on the sun bed. Jack examines the guard's body and points out to Nick that, while the first three victims' throats had been slashed, the guard's blood had been drained via two puncture wounds in his neck.

At the precinct, Nick reminds Captain Brunetti of their deal, saying, "I work the night shift, and I work it alone." But heat from the mayor's office has made Brunetti decide that this investigation cannot stop when the sun comes up. When he assigns Schanke to work with Nick on this case, Nick asks Brunetti to shoot him instead. Schanke urges Brunetti to take him up on it.

Nick returns to his home, a converted theater whose marquee reads: *It's a Wonderful Life,* and punches in his alarm code: 37922#. Once inside, he hits a switch, causing metal shutters to roll down over the windows, then switches on a 6-TV pyramid. He gets a bottle of blood from the fridge, pulls the cork out with his teeth, and pours the blood into a jade cup identical to the stolen one. He warms the blood in the microwave, then settles down to watch the sunrise on TV.

In her office, Alyce unloads a bag of junk food and settles down to read about Altun Kinal.

That night. Nick awakens and finds two messages on his answering machine. The first is Alyce saying that she might have some information on the jade cup if he wants to call or stop by later. The second is Jack urging

him to eat something and remarking that Nick needs a Jewish mother. Nick grumbles, "I already got one." He attempts to eat some hamburger, but spits it out.

Schanke donates blood at the police station and learns from the technician, Jack Fenner, that he is AB-positive. Schanke eats some raw garlic because his wife says it builds the blood, then purposely breathes right in Nick's face. Nick is repelled and claims to be allergic to garlic.

Nick and Schanke, who must ride one shift together, visit Jack in the morgue. Jack has found some old black silk threads under the guard's fingernails and has determined that this victim, unlike the first three, was fully conscious when he was being drained of blood.

Schanke believes that the guard's murder was committed by a different killer, since it doesn't fit into the homeless pattern. When told not to smoke in Nick's car, Schanke asks why he doesn't drive a nice, clean city car. Nick replies that the 1959 Cadillac has more trunk space than any car built in the last thirty years. Referring to nicotine, Schanke says that addictions are hard to give up. Nick agrees that we've all got our addictions. The dispatcher announces that shots have been fired and that there is a possible hostage situation at the pool at Echo Park. 81-Kilo responds.

Nick and Schanke arrive at the indoor pool to find that a swimming coach has been shot in the chest. Another officer is already on the scene. Nick and the other officer go in after the shooter, although Schanke's experience says it's better to "play the exits." They find the gunman holding a female hostage by the hair. The other officer gets shot in the shoulder and crawls to safety. Nick follows the gunman's command to put his gun away, then the girl knees the gunman in the stomach and runs away when he doubles over and drops his gun. Nick advances on him, but the gunman retrieves his gun and riddles Nick with bullets from the automatic weapon. Nick falls into the pool, where the gunman continues to shoot him. Nick suddenly levitates out of the water, baring his fangs. The gunman crashes out through a window and resumes shooting at Nick, who flies after him. Nick grabs him and throws him into an electrified sign, sending sparks flying.

Jeannie and Topper are followed through the street by someone jingling his keys. Once back in the park, Topper is murdered.

The officer who was wounded at the pool will be okay. He and Schanke report that the gunman claims to have seen a flying monster - a vampire. Of course, he had been smoking crack for 72 hours. Brunetti complains that the press has got everybody in town hallucinating.

At the museum, Alyce reads about a previous dig at Altun Kinal and learns that the bodies of Indian workers were found completely drained of blood. She spots Nick in an old photograph of the excavation team. She enlarges the photo and notices a scar on Nick's chest. Nick's sudden arrival nearly gives Alyce a heart attack. She asks about the bullet holes in his jacket, and he says that it used to belong to a drug dealer. She tells Nick that the dig at Altun Kinal was abandoned because Indian laborers were being killed at night, supposedly by vampires. They were searching for a pair of goblets and had found only one when the dig was abandoned. Alyce suggests that the guard's murderer may have already had one goblet and stole the one from the museum to complete the pair. Nick thinks that Alyce is hiding from life by burying her head in books, artifacts, and dust. He says that by dwelling on yesterday, she will have no today or tomorrow. He claims that it is the voice of experience speaking, but she counters that he hasn't lived that long. "I'm working on it," he replies. They kiss and embrace. Nick's eyes glow, and he bares his fangs. He almost bites her, but stops himself and abruptly leaves before she sees his face.

Jack visits Nick and finds him with glowing eyes and bared fangs, drinking blood, and watching the sunrise on TV. Jack grabs the bottle and tells Nick that it is the blood that keeps him from regaining his mortality. Nick is despondent and resigned to the fact that he is a vampire. When Jack brings up the fact that Nick has murdered in the past, Nick angrily defends himself by saying that he is repaying his debt and caught a killer tonight. Nick kicks Jack out, but before he leaves, the phone rings. Alyce leaves a message saying that she wants to talk to Nick about what happened. On the brink of tears, Nick admits to Jack that he kissed Alyce, then nearly killed her.

Nick tells Jack that LaCroix killed the Indians at Altun Kinal in order to keep him from acquiring the second goblet and performing the ceremony which could have made him mortal. LaCroix is Nick's master, the vampire who brought him over. They have the same blood in their veins, and LaCroix wants to keep it that way. Jack understands that LaCroix killed the Indians and the guard at the museum to keep Nick from getting the cup, but asks why he would have killed the homeless people. Nick replies, "They were always our prey. Nobody

notices, nobody cares when they're missing." It never bothered LaCroix, and he couldn't understand why Nick stopped killing, so he follows Nick from city to city and from century to century, obsessed with keeping him in the darkness. Nick feels that the murders are LaCroix's way of calling him out.

Alyce reads that the Mayan ceremony, in which the sacrificed victim's blood was poured from goblet to goblet, then swallowed by the high priest, was believed to be a cure for vampirism.

Some children playing ball in the park discover Topper's body. A homeless friend tells Nick that he knew something was wrong when Jeannie and Topper didn't show up for the usual Thursday blood drive. Nick blames himself for the murders.

Nick visits a nightclub owned by an old friend, Janette. He confirms that he has been in town for three years and was in Chicago before this. Janette calls Nick "Jean-Pierre" and offers him some blood mixed with wine. He is tempted, but declines and asks, "Where is he, Janette?" She responds, "He hasn't been making these kills, if that's what you think. Nowadays, no one's that stupid." She gives him the information and warns him to be careful, adding, "He's very disappointed." On his way out, Nick encounters Alyce. She heard about the latest murder on the radio and figured Nick would be in the park, then followed him to the nightclub. Three tough-looking vampires surround Nick and Alyce. Nick tells them to back off, but before they leave, one of them grabs Nick by the shirt, revealing the scar that Alyce had seen in the old photograph.

In the car, Alyce confronts Nick with the photograph, which was taken in 1889. She is convinced that he is a vampire, based on the photograph and the facts that he knew about the goblet, could read the glyphs, and can disappear in a matter of seconds. He claims that everybody has a double, and he assures her that he left the museum via the basement and learned about the goblet and the glyphs at NYU. On the radio, "The Nightcrawler" says that he's been in town three weeks and still has not seen his old friend. The next set is dedicated to Jean-Pierre. "The Nightcrawler" is waiting for him. Nick drives to the KTDE radio station and tells Alyce to wait in the car and call for backup if he's not out in twenty minutes. Instead, she follows Nick.

Nick and LaCroix go out the back door of the radio station, down an alley, and into a slaughterhouse. LaCroix fills the stolen goblet with blood from a vat into which an animal's blood has drained. He says that Nick looks pale and asks if he's sure he's not hungry. All Nick wants is the goblet, but LaCroix claims that Nick has never known what he wanted. Immortality was Nick's big wish, and LaCroix gave it to him, only to get contempt, hatred, and desertion in return. Nick says that he couldn't kill anymore and that LaCroix has to kill. LaCroix admits to killing the guard, but not "those pathetic others." That's not the way things are done in the twentieth century. LaCroix changes to the vampire state and grabs Nick. Nick is weak, and LaCroix suggests that he may need an iron supplement. He pours blood on Nick's face and throws him across the room. They spot Alyce watching them, and Nick yells for her to get out. LaCroix levitates to the ceiling and offers Nick the choice of saving the goblet or the girl. He drops the cup, and it shatters on the floor below. LaCroix flies down, Nick flies up, and they battle in midair. Nick throws LaCroix into a wall, impaling him on some steel spikes. Alyce runs outside, where it is now daylight. With his elbow, LaCroix punches a hole in the wall, and sunlight streams in onto Nick. Smoke pours from Nick's body as he runs for the safety of the Caddy's trunk. LaCroix smiles.

Jack tells Brunetti and Schanke that the first three victims had O-negative blood, but the guard was AB. They learn that Nick's car was found illegally parked and has been impounded.

While Schanke retrieves the Caddy, he complains that nobody is listening to him about the case and that Nick is a hotshot. "Don't get me wrong," he adds. "I like the guy. He looks good in leather." But Schanke feels that Nick is in the dark about a few things. Nick listens from the darkness of the trunk.

Jingling his keys, Fenner makes a delivery to the hospital blood bank.

Schanke drives the Caddy to the hospital, parks in the parking garage, and goes inside. Safe from the sun, Nick gets out of the trunk. Inside, Schanke is having no luck. The blood bank nurse will not release any information without the approval of the blood bank administrator, Dr. Dantley, who will be back at 6:00. Schanke tries to enlist Fenner's help, but to no avail. Nick sneaks into Dantley's office and accesses his computer. He calls to check in with Jack and tells him that Schanke was right. All the homeless victims were blood donors and were O-negative.

LaCroix killed only the museum guard. The other killer is still on the street. Nick sounds weak, and Jack advises him to eat something, but Nick refuses to dine on hospital food. While Nick and Schanke are inside, Fenner sabotages the Caddy. As Nick exits the elevator into the parking garage, he hears someone jingling his keys getting into the adjacent elevator. Nick gets back into the trunk seconds before Schanke returns.

While driving back to the station, the brakes go out on the Caddy. Schanke crashes into garbage cans, several other cars, and a fire hydrant. "He's gonna kill me," Schanke laments. From the trunk, Nick mutters, "Schanke, if only you knew."

Alyce has no luck reaching Nick at either the police station or his home, so she gets his address from the phone book and copies down his alarm code from the Mayan stela.

The Caddy is in bad shape, and the mechanic refers to it as two tons of scrap metal. He tries to pry open the trunk, but Nick holds it shut from the inside. While Schanke's back is turned, Nick gets out of the trunk. Upon seeing Nick, Schanke backs away and frantically tries to explain what happened. Nick discovers that the brake line was cut. He admits that Schanke was right about the museum murder being committed by a different killer, and although he is angry about the car, he owes Schanke an apology about the case. Nick nearly collapses, and Schanke says that he looks like death warmed over. Nick explains that he's just hungry.

Alyce lets herself into Nick's home and discovers his jade goblet. She hears the elevator coming back up and discovers Jeannie, badly beaten, lying on the elevator floor. Jeannie doesn't want to go the hospital because "he'll be there."

Nick and Schanke return to the hospital, and Nick almost collapses against a cabinet filled with bags of blood. When asked about someone who wears his keys on his belt, the nurse tells them about Fenner. He's been in counseling ever since his mother died from the hepatitis she contracted from a blood transfusion following a car accident. Fenner blames himself for letting the tainted blood slip through into the blood bank. Nick and Schanke conclude that if Fenner's mother was O-negative, he might blame some of the street people who donated O-negative blood, as well as himself. He might have decided to see to it that they could never donate again.

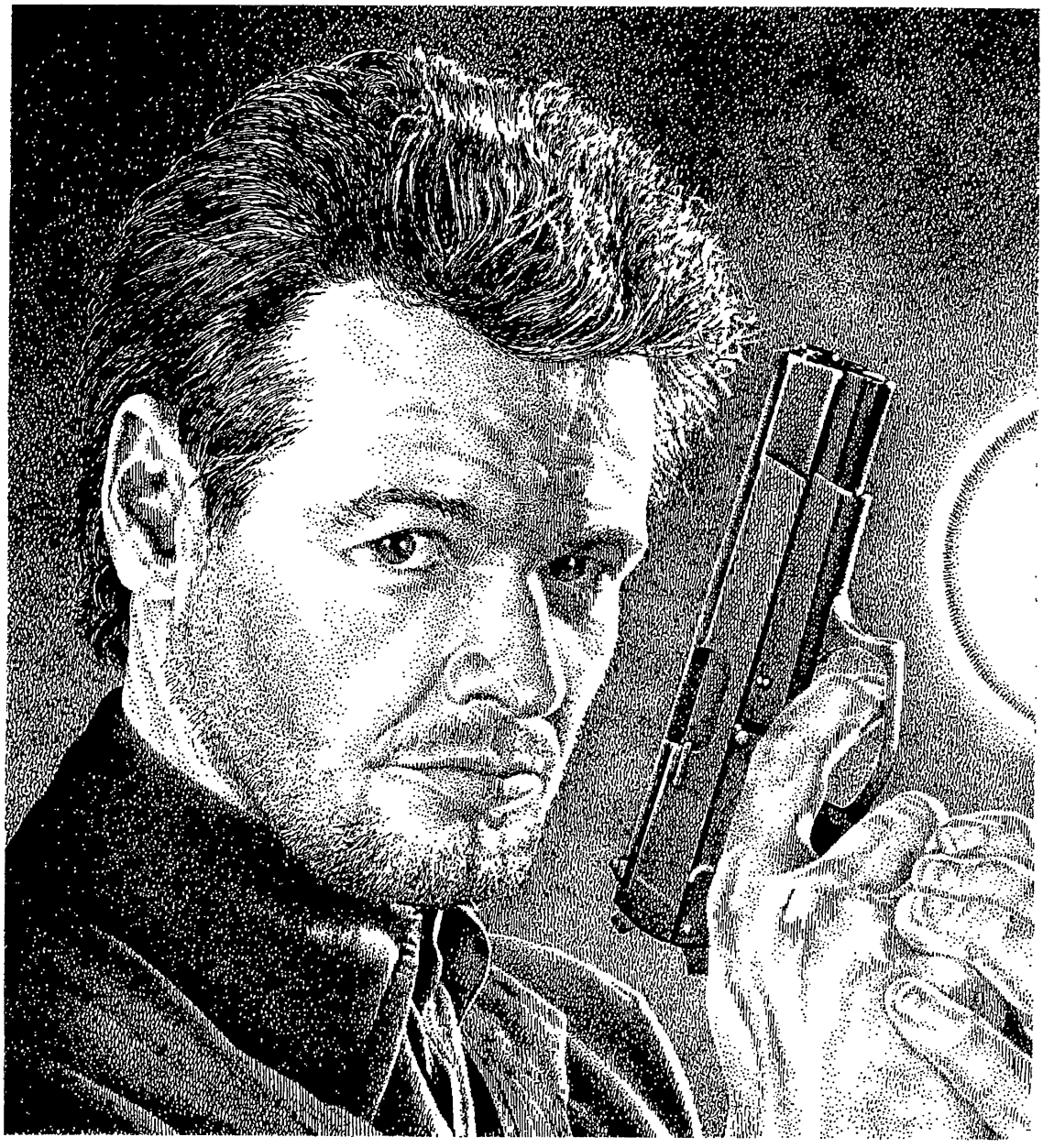
Fenner arrives at Nick's home, and Alyce tells him to take the elevator up, thinking that he is the paramedic she called for. Nick calls home to check his answering machine. When the machine rewinds and starts playing messages, Alyce realizes that it must be Nick, picks up the phone, and tells him about Jeannie. When Alyce sees Fenner, she gets suspicious because he doesn't have a medic bag. Jeannie cries, "No!" and Fenner strikes Alyce, sending her crashing across a table. Nick hears it all, tells Schanke to meet him at his place, then flies home.

Jeannie sticks the straw end of a broom into the blazing fireplace and waves it to fend off Fenner. He kicks it aside, and fire spreads across the apartment. Nick crashes down through the ceiling and throws Fenner against a wall, knocking him out. Nick sends Jeannie out, then rushes through the flames to Alyce. LaCroix flies in, kills Fenner, then says that it's Nick's turn. He reminds Nick that steel spikes can't kill vampires, but fire can. Nick is weak, and Alyce offers her blood to strengthen him. LaCroix urges Nick to take her and make her one of them. Nick says it could kill her, but she counters that it could make her immortal. He nearly bites her, but screams, "No!" and rushes back through the flames to LaCroix. They battle, and LaCroix knocks Nick out. Alyce tries to attack LaCroix with a piece of wood, but he disarms her and grabs her. Nick regains consciousness in time to see LaCroix drink from Alyce's neck, then drop her body to the floor. Nick grabs a burning piece of wood and stakes LaCroix, who becomes engulfed in flames.

In the museum, Nick and Jack gaze at the goblet which Nick has donated "in memory of Dr. Alyce Hunter." Nick feels that Alyce and LaCroix are the lucky ones. Jack rhetorically asks if Nick wants to become mortal so that he can die, or so that he can live and love as a human. There may be another goblet in existence, and Jack will keep trying to cure Nick. Schanke arrives and announces that he and Nick have been made partners. He understands that Fenner left Jeannie for dead, but didn't drain her blood because she was AB-negative, but doesn't understand why Fenner was missing two pints. Nick and Jack convince him that the heat of the fire evaporated some of Fenner's blood. Nick's car has been repaired by Schanke's third cousin, Rudy, from Van Nuys. When Schanke lights a cigarette, Jack tells him that it's the fastest way into a coffin. "One of them, anyway," says Nick. Schanke states that they have no idea what it's like to live with an addiction.

# EPISODE GUIDE

# FIRST SEASON



**DARK KNIGHT**
story by Barney Cohen and James D. Parriott
teleplay by James D. Parriott
directed by Allan Kroeker

**Guest Cast**
Christine Reeves
with

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| Graham McPherson | Nikki deBoer | George Buza | Zack Ward |
| Peter Langley | Helene Rousse | Jodi Pape | Roy Lewis |
| Phil Jarrett | Pat Patterson | Billy Buttery | Bryan Renfro |
| Quyen Hua | Lila Yee | Reg Dreger | Darren Andrea |
| Michael Gencher | Christopher Crumb | | |

**Synopsis**

Paris, 1228 - Nicholas awakens to Janette telling him that they have an endless parade of nights ahead of them. LaCroix says that Nicholas is now as eternal as Paris. Nick is thirsty, and LaCroix tells him that it is time to kill.

Toronto, 1992 - A jade cup is stolen from a museum, and a guard is killed. The press calls it another vampire murder. It is the fourth victim in two weeks to have been killed and drained of blood. Detective Don Schanke is already there when Detective Nick Knight arrives to investigate. They have completely different styles and personalities and obviously do not get along. While interviewing assistant curator Dr. Alyce Hunter, who had found the body, Nick recognizes artifacts from a dig at Altun Kinal which was abandoned a hundred years ago because the site was believed to be cursed. He examines the glyphs on a Mayan stela and remarks that the first four digits match his alarm code. The stolen cup had been used in sacrificial ceremonies to drink the victim's blood.

At the morgue, Nick chokes down a little green tea and reports to coroner Dr. Natalie Lambert that he is up to about ten minutes on the sun bed. Natalie confirms that, like the first three victims, the museum guard had type O blood. The other victims were homeless, however, and their throats had been slit. The guard was not homeless, and his blood had been drained via two punctures in his neck.

Captain Stonetree has been taking a lot of heat from the mayor's office. Since Nick's "sun allergy" only allows him to work nights, Stonetree assigns Schanke to work with Nick on this case so that the investigation will not have to stop when the sun comes up. Nick begs his fellow officers to shoot him, rather than be partnered with Schanke. Schanke just smirks.

Nick brings burgers and fries to three homeless friends: Jeanie, Topper, and Dr. Dave. Since homeless people are being victimized, he wants them to sleep at his place, but they refuse.

At home, Nick drinks bottled blood from a jade cup identical to the stolen one.

Nick flashes back to his first feeding as a vampire. LaCroix carries in a beautiful woman for him to feed on. Nick hesitates, but LaCroix and Janette urge him to satisfy his thirst. Finally, he takes the woman.

Nick awakens with a start, with blood sweat on his forehead. Downstairs, he listens to his messages. *The first tells Nick that he has won a sun-filled week in Hawaii.* The second is Alyce telling him to call or stop by the museum later because she might have some information on the jade cup. The last message is Natalie urging him to eat something, anything, and to go "cold turkey" on the hemoglobin. Nick tries to eat a hamburger, but spits it out.

Schanke donates blood, and since all the murder victims have been type O, he is relieved when the technician, Donald Fenner, confirms that he is A-negative. Schanke eats some raw garlic because his wife says it builds the blood, then purposely annoys Nick by breathing in his face.

Nick and Schanke must drive a couple of shifts together, and Nick reveals that he drives a '62 Cadillac because it has more trunk space than any car made in the last thirty years. When told not to smoke in the Caddy, Schanke complains that addictions are hard to give up. "Tell me about it," says Nick. Schanke feels that the guard's murder was committed by a different killer, since it does not fit into the homeless pattern.

Nick hears distant screams and drives to an apartment building where a gunman is terrorizing the residents and has dragged a women into an apartment. Nick kicks open the apartment door and ducks to the side as the gunman responds with a hail of bullets. He tells Schanke that the gunman has the women against the

back wall, near the window. Schanke is amazed that Nick could have seen inside the dark apartment. Nick tells Schanke that he is going around. Schanke wonders, "Around, what's around?" Nick runs around to the back of the building, levitates outside the apartment window, pulls the gunman out, and they crash together into a pile of garbage. Nick takes to the air, and the gunman shoots him, which has no effect.

As Jeanie and Topper are settling down for the night in an alley, Topper is murdered.

At the museum, Alyce reads up on Altun Kinal. The dig was abandoned because the Indians believed that there were vampires in their midst. She recognizes Nick in a photograph of the excavation crew. Nick arrives out of nowhere, startling her. While holding her to calm her down, he hears her heart beating.

Schanke reports to Stonetree that the gunman from the apartment building claims to have seen a vampire. Of course, the guy had been smoking crack for 72 hours. But Schanke is sure that he saw Nick pull the gunman out through the window, and he had not been smoking crack. Stonetree assures Schanke that vampires are just legends.

*At the museum, a guard finds Nick with Alyce and asks how he got in. Nick that says he came in through the basement and hypnotizes the guard into "remembering" that he saw Nick come up. The guard leaves.* Nick and Alyce talk for a bit, then kiss. While Nick fights the urge to kill Alyce, she tells him that there had originally been two jade cups, but the dig was abandoned before the second was found. She suggests that perhaps the killer already had one cup and stole the other to complete the pair. She doesn't see that Nick's eyes are glowing and his fangs are bared. The internal struggle is too much for Nick to handle, and he walks out on her.

Natalie visits Nick and finds the apartment dark and Nick watching a Bela Lugosi film. He is despondent and has been on a "drinking binge." Natalie chastises him for drinking blood and for using his vampire powers to catch the gunman at the apartment building. Having given up hope of ever being cured or seeing a sunrise, Nick kicks Natalie out. Before she leaves, the phone rings, and Alyce leaves a message saying that she wants to talk to Nick about what happened. Nick confesses to Natalie that he kissed Alyce, then almost killed her.

Alyce reads that the Mayan ceremony, in which the victim's blood was poured from cup to cup, then swallowed by the high priest, was believed to be a cure for vampirism.

Nick tells Natalie about the vampire who brought him across. LaCroix was his master, like a father or a brother, and he killed the Indians at Altun Kinal as well as the museum guard to keep Nick from acquiring the second cup and being cured. LaCroix would do anything to prevent Nick from regaining his mortality. *Nick knows that LaCroix must have entered the museum via the skylight, as Nick had done when he'd visited Alyce. Nick believes that LaCroix killed the homeless people, as well, feeling that their deaths would not be noticed. Killing never bothered LaCroix as it bothered Nick. Nick feels that these murders are LaCroix's way of calling him out.*

Some teens playing basketball in an alley discover Topper's body. His throat has been slit. Blaming himself, Nick frantically wonders where Jeanie is. Dr. Dave says that he knew something was wrong when Jeanie and Topper didn't show up for the weekly bloodmobile.

Nick visits his old friend, Janette, at her nightclub, the Raven. She'd heard he was in town. He confirms that he has been in Toronto for three years and was in Chicago before this. Janette drinks her blood mixed with a little wine and offers some to Nick, but he refuses. Janette says that no vampire would be stupid enough to have made these kills. She gives him the information on where to find LaCroix and warns him to be careful. LaCroix is very disappointed in him.

Alyce had followed Nick to the Raven, and she continues to follow him when he leaves. In his car, Nick tunes in to "The Nightcrawler," who has been in town for three weeks and still has not seen his old friend. The next tune is for Nicholas - his brother, his child. Nick flashes back to his first kill. "The Nightcrawler" says that he is waiting for him.

To be continued...

♪♪("Suite from DARK KNIGHT"and DARK KNIGHT - France 1228" are on the *Forever Knight Soundtrack.*)

**DARK KNIGHT - THE SECOND CHAPTER**
story by Barney Cohen and James D. Parriott
teleplay by James D. Parriott
directed by Allan Kroeker

**Guest Cast**
Christine Reeves
with

| | | |
|---|---|---|
| Graham McPherson | Nikki deBoer | Jackie Richardson |
| Gene Mack | Helene Rousse | Reg Dreger |

**Synopsis**

Nick finds LaCroix waiting outside the CERK radio station. LaCroix leads him down an alley and into a slaughterhouse. Alyce follows at a distance. LaCroix takes a ladle and offers Nick a drink from a vat into which an animal's blood has drained. To make it more appetizing, LaCroix pours it into the stolen jade cup. Nick looks pale, and LaCroix asks if he's sure he isn't hungry. All Nick wants is the jade cup, but LaCroix counters that Nick has never known what he wanted. Immortality was Nick's big wish, and LaCroix gave it to him, only to get desertion, hatred, and contempt in return. Nick just couldn't kill anymore and says that LaCroix needs to kill. LaCroix admits to killing the museum guard, but not the others. He knocks Nick down and pours blood on his face. As Nick becomes angry, his eyes glow, and he bares his fangs.

Watching from a catwalk, Alyce screams at the change in Nick. LaCroix flies up and grabs her. Offering Nick the choice of saving the cup or the girl, he drops the cup. Nick flies up and knocks LaCroix away from Alyce as the cup shatters on the floor below. While Nick and LaCroix battle, Alyce runs outside, where it is now daylight. LaCroix almost decapitates Nick, but Nick kicks him and sends him flying backwards, impaling him on a steel spike.

*In a flashback, Nick tells LaCroix that he wants to go back and that LaCroix has made him a murderer. LaCroix says that it's too late and that he has made Nick a god, made him eternal, and made him his brother. When told that he need never fear anything again, Nick replies that he fears what is inside him now. LaCroix had taken hold of Nick by the back of his neck. Nick roughly disengages LaCroix's hand, sarcastically promises to repay him, and kisses his ring.*

As Nick walks away, leaving LaCroix impaled on the spike, a smile starts to spread over LaCroix's face. Outside, Nick's body smokes as he runs for the safety of the Caddy's trunk.

Alyce calls the precinct looking for Nick, who has not checked in. Stonetree, Schanke, and Natalie worry about where he is. Schanke insists that the keys to the case are the type O blood and the homeless and that the bloodmobile must have something to do with it. They are notified that Nick's car was found illegally parked in an alley and is being towed in. While picking up the car, Schanke complains that nobody is listening to him about the case. Nick may be a hotshot, but Schanke thinks he is in the dark about a few things. Nick listens from the darkness of the trunk.

Schanke visits the hospital and tries to verify that the murder victims had been blood donors, but the nurse insists that she can't release any information without checking with the blood bank administrator, Dr. Kipper, who will be back at 6:00. Schanke tries to enlist Donald Fenner's help, but to no avail.

Safe from the sun in the hospital's parking garage, Nick gets out of the trunk. He breaks into Dr. Kipper's office and gets the information he needs from Kipper's computer. He calls to check in with Natalie and tells her that LaCroix only killed the guard at the museum. Schanke was right, and all the other victims had been blood donors. Natalie remarks that he sounds weak and suggests that he eat something, but he refuses to dine on hospital food.

Back in the trunk, Nick hears the jingling of keys on a belt as someone approaches the car. Fenner cuts the brake line on the Caddy.

Schanke promises to return to the hospital with a warrant. In the car, he plays loud polka music. Nick writhes in the trunk, holds his hands over his ears, and swears to kill Schanke. The brakes go out, and as Schanke loses control of the car, he laments that Nick is going to kill him.

Unable to get hold of Nick, Alyce gets his address from the phone book and copies down his alarm code from the Mayan stela.

At a body shop, Schanke is told that the Caddy is no longer an automobile, but a sculpture made from two tons of scrap metal. The mechanic tries to pry open the trunk, but Nick holds it shut from the inside. As

Schanke is about to leave, Nick, who has gotten out of the trunk, calls him back. Schanke backs away from Nick, frantically trying to explain what happened, then Nick finds the cut brake line. He could kill Schanke about the car, but owes him an apology about the case. Schanke was right about the type O blood and the homeless being the keys to the case and about the murder at the museum being committed by a different killer. Nick nearly collapses and explains that he is just hungry. Schanke offers to buy him a souvlaki, but Nick says that he'll wait until he can sink his teeth into something.

Alyce lets herself into Nick's home. As the door is about to close behind her, someone stops it. In the apartment, Alyce sees Nick's jade cup, then hears die elevator. She opens the elevator door to find Jeanie, badly beaten, lying on the elevator floor.

Nick tells Schanke that he got the information on the blood donors from Dr. Kipper. At the hospital, Nick again almost collapses as a cart filled with bags of blood is wheeled by.

Donald Fenner is outside Nick's apartment. Alyce calls for an ambulance, but Jeanie does not want to go to the hospital because the man who beat her up works there.

When asked about someone who wears his keys on his belt, the nurse identifies Donald Fenner, who lost his mother last year due to the hepatitis she contracted from a blood transfusion following a car accident. Apparently, she was type O and could therefore only accept type O blood. If Fenner blamed street people who donated type O blood, he might see to it that they could never donate again.

Nick calls home to check his messages. As the machine rewinds, Alyce realizes that it must be Nick, picks up, and tells him that Jeanie is there, barely alive. The doorbell buzzes, and Alyce sets the phone down to admit Fenner, thinking that he's the paramedic she called for. She gets suspicious, though, because he doesn't have a medic bag. They struggle, and he throws her across a table. Nick hears it all, tells Schanke to meet him at his apartment, then flies out of the hospital.

Jeanie sticks the straw end of a broom into the blazing fireplace and waves it to fend off Fenner. He grabs it and tosses it to the side. As the fire spreads, Fenner starts strangling Jeanie. Nick crashes through a window and grabs Fenner. He almost bites Fenner, but manages to stop himself. He sends Jeanie out, then charges through the flames to get to Alyce.

LaCroix suddenly appears, kills Fenner, then says that it's Nick's turn. He reminds Nick that steel spikes can't kill vampires. Nick can barely stand, and he is obviously too weak to fight. Alyce offers her blood to strengthen him, but he refuse because it could kill her. She counters that it could make her immortal and insists that it's what she wants. Nick almost takes her blood, but finally grabs a burning piece of wood, charges back through the flames, and bums LaCroix's face. LaCroix throws Nick against a wall, knocking him out, then grabs Alyce. Nick comes to as LaCroix is biting Alyce. Nick stakes LaCroix with the burning wood, driving him back against the elevator door. Engulfed in flames, LaCroix disappears. Nick kneels on the floor, cradling Alyce.

At the museum, Nick and Natalie gaze at the jade cup which Nick has donated "in memory of Dr. Alyce Hunter." Nick feels that Alyce and LaCroix are the lucky ones. Natalie, who gave Nick a blood transfusion to prevent him from starving to death, reminds him that he doesn't want to become mortal again just so that he can die, but so that he can live and love as a human. There may be another jade cup out there, and Natalie will keep trying to cure him. Schanke arrives, and Nick is distressed to learn that since Schanke was the only available blood donor, he now has a pint of grade-A Schanke in him. Schanke understands that Fenner left Jeanie for dead, but didn't drain her blood because she was B-negative, but doesn't understand why Fenner was missing two pints. Nick and Natalie convince him that the fire in the apartment evaporated some of Fenner's blood. Schanke takes out his cigarettes, and Natalie tells him that it's the fastest way to a coffin. He replies that she and Nick have no idea what it's like to live with an addiction. Nick and Natalie exchange significant looks, and Schanke hands over the cigarettes. Unbeknown to the three of them, the newly made vampire, Alyce, watches from the skylight.

♪♪("Suite from DARK KNIGHT"and"DARK KNIGHT- France 1228" are on the *Forever Knight Soundtrack.*)

**FOR I HAVE SINNED**
written by Philip John Taylor
directed by Gerard Ciccoritti

**Guest Cast**
Maria Del Mar
Michael McManus
with

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| Lawrence Bayne | Christina Cox | Tracey Cook | Colin Fox |
| Norma Dell'Agnese | Richard Zeppieri | Thea Gill | Michael Ricupero |
| Martin Martinuzzi | Lupe Arenas | Michelyn Emelle | |

**Synopsis**

A married department store employee is murdered in her car after having an after-hours tryst in the store. Her attacker tells her that she doesn't deserve to wear the cross around her neck.

At the Raven, Nick tells Janette about two women who have been murdered this week - one decapitated, one disemboweled - but she doesn't care what happens to humans. Schanke enters and is drawn to a beautiful vampire, Alma. Having told him to wait outside, Nick escorts him out. Schanke accuses Nick of wanting to keep all the beautiful women for himself. Nick says that the Raven is dangerous for Schanke, since he's a married man. Schanke insists that fooling around is a family tradition and claims to be a killer ladies' man. Nick doesn't think he has it in him.

The body of the department store employee has been found laid out crucifixion-style with spikes in her hands, feet, and heart. Nick can't look at it long and has to turn away. *Once the body is removed, Nick determines that she was murdered elsewhere and the body moved afterwards. There is not enough blood on the scene, only small pools where the spikes had been.*

At the morgue, Natalie examines a crucifixion wound, and Nick won't approach until she places the hand beneath the sheet. When shown the victim's cross, Nick feels weak and afraid. All three victims had worn crosses, and Natalie hands it to Nick in an evidence bag.

At St. John's Church, a man confesses to Father Pierre Rochford that he has sent three sinners to hell. He says that he is doing God's work and that there will be another murder.

At home, Nick swallows a garlic pill - another of Natalie's attempts at a cure. Instantly, he is overcome by intense pain. Schanke calls and leaves a message that all three victims were parishioners at St. John's. When the pain subsides, Nick dumps the cross out of the bag and picks it up by the chain.

In a flashback, Nick follows a young woman into a church. She is not afraid of him, although he says she should be. Knowing who and what Nick is, she says that those who choose to live forever live in constant fear of death. She will pray for both of them. Impressed by her lack of fear, Nick asks her name. It is Joan. She leaves, and Nick holds his hand up towards a cross in the church. Before he can touch it, his hand bursts into flames, and he screams in pain.

Nick clutches the victim's cross for a few seconds, then opens his hand. The only damage is an imprint burned into his palm. The garlic pills have definitely improved his condition.

Outside the church, preparations are being made for the Easter pageant. An older priest advises Fr. Rochford that he can do nothing to stop a sin that would identify the sinner.

Schanke returns to the Raven. Alma asks him to dance, then lures him into a back room. She seduces him and almost bites him, but Janette bursts in and stops her. Janette says that Alma is not the kind of woman to fool around with and that Schanke could have become permanent member of the night shift. Janette tells him never to return, adding that she is doing him a favor.

At St. John's, Nick refuses to enter the church and insists on talking to Fr. Rochford outside. The priest says that he knew the victims and buried them all, but will say nothing more.

Magda, an employee at a phone sex service called Loose Lips, gets a call from a man saying that she has profaned the church by feeding the fires of lust and will be consumed by flames. Upset, she leaves work early and is accosted by a masked man in the stairwell.

Driving nearby, Nick hears the screams. He bursts in and gets shot in the stomach. The shooter takes off, and when Magda goes to call an ambulance, Nick takes off after the man, revealing a hole in the glass

behind him where the bullet passed right through him. Nick rounds the corner of an alley and chases down a masked man who is running away. When Nick yells for him to freeze, the man turns around and removes his mask. It is Fr. Rochford.

At the precinct, Nick and Stonetree play a tape of Magda's threatening phone call, but Fr. Rochford, who was in the alley because he wanted to warn Magda, denies recognizing the voice. Nick accuses him of lying and protecting a killer, but he insists that he is protecting the rules and beliefs of his religion. Nick comes down hard on Fr. Rochford, who maintains that the church grants salvation and everlasting life. He asks if there is nothing that Nick believes in that strongly. Nick flashes back to 1431. Joan of Arc is being called a heretic and will die a martyr. He offers to bring her across, but she is willing to die to keep the church strong. She says that she will live on in the hereafter. When asked how she can be sure her God will be waiting on the other side, she says that it is pure, simple faith. She offers Nick her cross to remember her by and to remember that the faith he has lost is always there to regain. He won't take the cross, *so she sets it at his feet.*

Nick tells Magda that the bullet just grazed him. She offers to act as bait to help catch the killer, but the police insist that she stay at a motel with a policeman to guard her.

At Nick's apartment, Natalie admires Joan of Arc's cross. Nick tells her that she wanted spiritual immortality, not the kind he had to offer. He asks Natalie to bring the cross closer, but turns away as she approaches. He explains that vampires fear the cross because it is a symbol of the one true light, and they are creatures of the dark. Nick has decided to tackle his fear of the cross because he will be spending the next day in a church.

The next morning, Nick stands in the predawn light across the street from the church. *Schanke calls Myra just to see how she is doing, but it is obvious that she is not happy to be awakened at 6:00 a.m. Nick believes the phone call was prompted by a guilty conscience. Schanke and three other officers will stake out the outside of the church, and Nick will be inside.*

Inside, Nick flashes back to Joan of Arc tied to a burning stake. She tells him not to mourn for her - she will live forever. She asks him to hold up her cross to give her courage, but he can't.

Nick gets dizzy and tries to leave, but is driven back inside by the sunlight. He takes refuge in the priest's confessional. When a woman comes to confess, he pretends to be asleep. Then Schanke enters the confessional, feeling guilty about his encounter at the Raven. Nick is amused and, in an Irish brogue, encourages him to speak freely. Schanke relates the story, but when the "priest" supplies Alma's name, Schanke realizes who is on the other side and bursts in on Nick, who reminds him that he was told to stay out of the Raven and is supposed to be covering the church from the outside. He tells Schanke to say twenty "Hail Marys" and not to go there again.

At the motel, Magda pretends to take a shower and sneaks out the bathroom window.

Fr. Rochford yells at Nick for violating the sanctity of the confessional. Weak and stumbling, Nick says that he's trying to catch a killer. The priest tells Nick that everyone can be forgiven and that even he can have life everlasting. Flashing back to Joan of Arc, Nick collapses.

It is now night, and Schanke observes the church from his car. He asks if Nick is okay, and Nick replies that he is alive and well and claims that Schanke's confession made him sick. While observing the church, Schanke sees Magda enter. He reaches for the radio, but gets knocked out.

While praying in the church, Magda is frightened by a man who arrives and sits next to her.

Schanke regains consciousness and alerts the others that Magda is in danger.

Outside, Magda is tied to the cross erected for the Easter pageant. When Nick arrives, the killer lights a piece of wood on fire and waves it to fend him off. Nick knocks him out, but the fire connects with a pile of sticks at the base of the platform, setting everything ablaze. Nick rushes through the flames and unties Magda. Covering her head with his jacket, he holds her and leaps to safety. She asks how he did it, and he replies that it took a little bit of adrenaline and a lot of faith.

At the precinct, Magda says that she believes in forgiveness and feels sorry for the killer. In thanks, she offers Nick her cross. He tries to refuse, but she places it in his hand. In a strained voice, he thanks her. He finally understands that the priest couldn't betray his faith. Fr. Rochford encourages him to come to church, saying that confession is good for the soul. Nick feels that his partner has confessed enough for both of them. Schanke arrives with Natalie examining the bump on his head. His head is pounding, and Nick says that it's his conscience. Nick shows Natalie that he's holding a cross. It bums, but not as badly. Perhaps he's a step closer to both God and mortality. Schanke wants to grab a bite to eat, but Nick has to decline. The sun is coming up.

**LAST ACT**
written by Brad Wright
directed by Rene Bonniere

**Guest Cast**
Torri Higginson
with

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| Mackenzie Gray | Robert Bockstael | Laura Press | Allison Mang |
| Denise McLeod | Doris Petrie | Gillian Vanderburgh | Gema Zamprogna |
| J. R. Zimmerman | Elena Kudaba | Tony Meyler | |

**Synopsis**

Marilyn Siegel, a young doctor in her residency, is upset over having just lost a patient and is comforted by Dr. Cole, another female doctor. Shortly thereafter, she is interrupted while in the shower. She smiles and at first seems pleased, then screams as her visitor, in surgical gear, slashes her wrists with a scalpel.

A beautiful vampire waits on a harbor park bench for the sunrise. Morning arrives, and as the sun begins to climb in the sky, the vampire smolders, bursts into flames, and finally disappears. Only the garments she had been wearing remain on the park bench.

Nick is having a bad day. He's irritable and frustrated because he's got eight outstanding cases and a pile of clues that are leading nowhere. He and Schanke investigate an apparent case of spontaneous human combustion at a harbor park bench. Schanke is skeptical, having never heard of a fire that destroys bones, but saves polyester. Nick picks up and recognizes a ring among the pile of garments on the bench.

Nick flashes back to acting in a play 200-300 years ago. His costar, the playwright, is the beautiful vampire who had worn the ring. After the performance, they revel in the fact that they have been blessed with the gift of eternity and make love in the dressing room.

Nick and Schanke investigate Marilyn's apparent suicide at the hospital. Dr. Cole believes that Marilyn killed herself because of the pressure she was under and the grief of having just lost a patient. Schanke provides a lift home to Marilyn's fiancé, Carl Jants, a medical student.

*In a flashback, Nick and Erica have just made love, and with his blood coursing through her, she shares his memories of the crusades. She hopes that she has not infected him with her ideas of death.* Erica enjoys life so much that she feels that if and when the time comes when she no longer shouts for joy and contributes to life, she would rather die than become a burden.

Natalie feels that the doctor's death was probably a suicide, but Nick decides to investigate rather than settle on "probably."

Nick comes home and listens to a message from Schanke. According to Carl, Marilyn had been depressed. Schanke also reports that Nick's lead on another case failed to produce any witnesses. Nick hears Erica's voice asking if he has become a burden. He opens the blinds on one window and sticks a finger into a shaft of sunlight. The finger starts to smoke, and Nick pulls it out of the light.

Nick is in his loft reviewing a pile of unsolved cases and hears Erica saying that maybe it is time to move on. He sees her standing in the sunlight pouring through the open blinds of the window. She wants him to join her in the light. Nick hesitates, and Erica disappears.

At the hospital, Nick is informed by two nurses that some people believe that Marilyn's death was not a suicide. Dr. Cole chastises the nurses for sharing hospital gossip. Nick speaks to Dean Simmons, a cancer patient who had been particularly close with Marilyn. Dean only has a couple of months to live and is angry that Marilyn could have taken her own life.

Stonetree is considering handing over half of Nick's unsolved cases to another detective. He wants Nick to write Marilyn's death off as a suicide because at least then they will know who did it. Nick gets a 24-hour extension to continue investigating the case.

Nick and Janette visit Erica's apartment and are shocked to discover its condition. It is dismal, filled with cobwebs, and all the plants and flowers are dead. Nick flashes back to Erica dancing with a doll, Catherine, in her arms. Erica feels that it's a tragedy that vampires cannot create life, whereas mortals revitalize their love for life with each new generation. Nick is brought back to the present by a knock on the door. It is a young actress bringing the playbill for Erica's new play, *Last Act,* which opens the following night.

Natalie is waiting for Nick when he arrives home carrying Erica's doll. He arrives with only seconds to spare before the sunrise and is about to walk into the shafts of light coming through the open blinds when Natalie, alarmed by his self-destructive behavior, pushes him out of harm's way. He tells her about Erica and the frustration that he's been feeling lately. He feels that after almost 800 years, he is no longer making a contribution, and perhaps he has lived enough. Natalie insists that suicide is never the answer, adding that Marilyn Siegel would not have committed suicide. She has run some additional tests and discovered that Marilyn was six weeks pregnant.

Schanke arrives and is appalled by Nick's nearly empty refrigerator. The number of bottles of "red wine' in the fridge cause Schanke to wonder if Nick has an alcohol problem. Schanke is not convinced that the fact that Marilyn was pregnant meant that she didn't commit suicide.

Schanke visits Carl at the home he shared with Marilyn. The home is bright and cheerful and is filled with plants, flowers, and a cat. Despite the fact that her coworkers feet that Marilyn would never have killed herself, Carl insists that she was depressed. At the mention of Marilyn's pregnancy, Carl says that they hadn't been sure that she was pregnant, which is why he didn't mention it himself. According to Carl, Marilyn didn't want a baby.

Nick attends Erica's play, in which a grandmother passes on fond memories to her granddaughter, Catherine. The grandmother has enjoyed her life and is ready to move on. The sun is rising to light Catherine's day. It's been a long time since it has warmed the grandmother. It is Catherine's turn to experience life for herself.

At the hospital, someone enters Dean's room and fills a syringe from a vial.

When Nick and Schanke arrive at the hospital to question Dean, they learn that he has overdosed on morphine, but is still alive. *Schanke wonders if it is more than a coincidence that Dr. Cole was the one to discover both Marilyn's body and Dean's overdose.* When Dean regains consciousness, Nick and Schanke question him about just how close he and Marilyn had been.

It turns out that Marilyn was going to have Dean's baby. It was her way of making him immortal. Nick and Schanke decide to set a trap.

Schanke pays another visit to Carl and breaks the news that they believe that Marilyn may have been murdered. He tells Carl about the cancer patient, Dean, who was obsessed with Marilyn and who claims that the baby was his. Schanke says that Dean overdosed on morphine, "spilled his proverbial guts," and is still unconscious, but will pull through.

At the hospital, Nick takes Dean's place in the bed, while Schanke hides in a nearby closet. Erica appears to Nick and urges him to follow her into death, but Nick still finds life exciting and believes that he has more to give. He insists that he will never die by his own hand. When Erica tells him that his belief that he can regain mortality is only a fantasy, Nick replies that there are two ways to escape eternity. "One way is to join the dead, the other to join the living." Erica kisses Nick, says she will be waiting, and disappears.

Carl, dressed in a wig and surgical gear, enters Dean's room and stabs Nick, It infuriates Nick that life could be so cheap to Carl. Schanke bursts in with his gun drawn, but is knocked down by Carl running out. Nick catches Carl and roughs him up, throwing him across the room. With glowing eyes and bared fangs, Nick clutches Carl by the front of his shirt and shoves him through a window. He dangles Carl outside the window and asks why he deserves to live. Schanke rushes in and convinces Nick to pull Carl back inside, saying, "Think of the paperwork if you drop him." Nick throws Carl back into the room, and Carl begs Schanke to keep Nick away from him, claiming that Nick is a monster. Schanke replies that Carl is alive and advises him not to blow it by insulting his partner.

Nick has taken Schanke and Natalie to see the play. Even though it was about death, Natalie found it very life-affirming. Schanke, who slept through most of it, found it very sleep-affirming. Nick passes Erica's ring on to the young actress who played Catherine. Schanke wants Nick and Natalie to fill him in on what he missed, since his wife is sure to ask about it. Natalie tells him that he missed the middle ages, and Schanke asks if they were funny. Nick says that he enjoyed them.

## DANCE BY THE LIGHT OF THE MOON

written by Roy Sallows
directed by Michael Levine

### Guest Cast

Cyndy Preston
with

| | | |
|---|---|---|
| Patrick McKenna | Michael Killinger | Marina-Rae Nicholas |
| Julie Crossen | Lauren Griffen | Betty-Lou Buckindale |
| Marie Siebert | Murray Oliver | Susan Rimar |

### Synopsis

An accountant, Ben Crawford, has a rendezvous with a woman in a warehouse. He arrives carrying a bundle, and she wants him to tell her how it felt to steal for her. They are kissing passionately when Crawford is attacked from behind and killed by David Burkhart, a policeman. The woman begins to passionately kiss Burkhart, then stabs and kills him.

The police are stunned to find that the abrasions on Burkhart's fingers match the cord that was used to strangle Crawford. Since traces of the same lipstick were found on both bodies, they know that a woman was involved. Stonetree takes it hard because Burkhart was a close friend of his. He wonders what could make a good man turn evil.

Nick flashes back to 1228. Janette asks how bad he wants her.

Natalie has analyzed the lipstick traces and found it to be a theatrical lipstick. Schanke has had someone named Patrice checking the telephone records of both men. He gets beeped and returns the call to find that they had both dialed a strip club called Jilly's. Schanke is surprised that Patrice takes offense when he says, "Thanks, hon." "Jeez!" he complains. "You can't call anybody 'honey' nowadays!" *As Nick and Schanke leave, Nick kisses Natalie on her head and says, "Bye, hon."*

At Jilly's, Nick questions a stripper, Ann Foley, who the manager says knew both men. She is the woman from the warehouse. While Ann dresses behind a screen, Nick sneaks a sample of her lipstick under his fingernail. She says that she can't be of much help to Nick. Crawford used to talk about his golf scores, and Burkhart was investigating a fraud case, but she doesn't know whom the case involved.

Schanke has learned that Crawford used to throw big tips around the club and claim that it didn't matter because the money wasn't his. Schanke teases Nick about his obvious attraction to Ann and reveals that what "does it" for him is autumn afternoons, plaid skirts, and knee socks. He recalls Martha Brocker in junior high. Martha wanted Schanke to tattoo "Ringo Forever" on her, which he attempted to do, on her knee, with a ball-point pen. He was so nervous, however, that he wrote "Ringi Forever." Now, whenever he sees a plaid skirt, he forgets how to spell. While watching a stripper, Schanke wonders if women have any idea of the effect they have over men.

Nick flashes back to 1228. Janette asks Nick if, after his conquests in the crusades, he can surrender to desire.

Schanke comes to Nick's apartment the next day with confirmation that Crawford was embezzling. They don't know what he did with the money, however.

At the morgue, Natalie confirms that Nick's lipstick sample, while not the same color, was the same type found on the murder victims.

Nick follows Ann Foley home. She enters her apartment to find him standing inside by an open window. When asked how a stripper could afford such a luxurious apartment, she replies that is was paid for by a corporate lawyer. Nick has relied too much on appearances. Ann reveals that she herself was the corporate lawyer.

Nick flashes back again to Janette seducing him and telling him that her darkness is absorbing his light.

Ann is told that she is a suspect in the murders because she knew both men and because lipstick similar to hers was found on the bodies. She trips up by revealing that she knows that Burkhart killed Crawford. That information had not been released to the press. She says that all the evidence on her is circumstantial and claims that she can come up with an alibi if she needs one. She gave up law because she wanted to live in that

part of herself that other people are afraid to even visit. She strips because she likes to watch others descend to that place, as well. She says that everyone has a dark side and asks Nick if his life is a lie. Against Nick's warnings, Ann seduces him. saying that she wants the darkest most dangerous part of him.

Nick flashes back to Janette telling him to say good-bye to the light. She says that no matter how good and shining a knight he has been, the darkness was always there inside him.

Ann claims that she can feel the evil in Nick, and it makes her want him. Doing what is wrong excites Ann, and she wants Nick to steal Burkhart's case book for her.

At work the next night, it is obvious that Nick didn't get much sleep, and Schanke is angry with him for spending the evening with a suspect. Burkhart's case book is at Stonetree's apartment, and Nick asks for the key so that he can pick it up.

When Nick shows up at the coroner's office, Natalie wonders where he's been and if he cares about the case anymore. She tells Nick about three other murders in the last four years, all unsolved, one of which was a double murder like his present case. Schanke has filled her in on Nick's new diversion, and she is angry with him for having "more important things on his mind" than the case.

Nick brings the case book to Ann, who burns it in the fireplace. He says that it felt good to steal. They kiss passionately, and she tells him it would feel good to do something far worse than stealing.

Nick reports to Stonetree that the case book wasn't where Stonetree had told him to look for it. Stonetree wonders if he is losing his mind, and Nick says the book might turn up.

Schanke has found something that he thinks will close the case. There were some similar murders in Buffalo a couple of years back, and all the men had been patrons of a strip club at which Ann Foley worked. Nick convinces Schanke to talk to Ann before reporting this to Stonetree.

They arrive in a warehouse to find Ann dressed in a plaid skirt and knee socks. Ann is seducing Schanke when Nick comes up from behind him and strangles him with a cord. Schanke slumps to the floor. Nick and Ann kiss, and she admits killing Burkhart, saying that it made her feel sexy and powerful. He reveals a hidden microphone and arrests her. A man bursts in and shoots Nick at Ann's command to kill him. Nick falls to the floor. Ann and the gunman run out, and Nick and Schanke get up. Nick claims that the gunman missed him and asks if Schanke is okay. Schanke says not to worry about it - he'll wear turtlenecks. They take off in pursuit of Ann and the gunman.

Schanke and the gunman shoot it out in an alley, and Schanke finally shoots the man. Ann climbs a fire escape only to find Nick waiting for her on one of the upper landings. She knows what it feels like to kill and wants to know what it feels like to die. She leaps from the landing. As she dies on the street below, she says that it feels so good.

When Nick returns to the precinct after dropping off something for Natalie, Schanke accuses him of being on the make twenty-four hours a day. Nick replies that he and Natalie are just good friends and that Schanke wouldn't understand. Nick tells Schanke that everything Ann did stemmed from one motive - cheap thrills. Stonetree remarks that those cheap thrills turned out to be pretty expensive, and Nick replies that sometimes you get more than you bargain for.

*A rose and a bottle of perfume have been placed on Natalie's computer at the morgue.*

In a flashback, Nick and Janette have evidently just made love. Nick is half-dressed and moves one of the straps of Janette's gown back up onto her shoulder. Janette gets up from the bed, while Nick reclines and watches her with a smile on his face. The smile fades, and Nick pulls back suspiciously when LaCroix enters the room. LaCroix bares his fangs, and his eyes glow as he tells Nick that they are going to be friends for a long, long time.

**DYING TO KNOW YOU**
written by Tony Sheer
directed by Brad Turner

**Guest Cast**
Elizabeth Marmur
with

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| Brett Halsey | Pia Southam | Victor A. Young | Richard McMillan |
| Catherine Swing | Markus Parilo | Chandra West | Richard Gira |
| Christine Reeves | Christina Cox | Helene Rousse | |

**Synopsis**

While Jennifer Hedges and her daughter, Janice, are shopping, their chauffeur, George, is murdered. The killer takes his place behind the wheel, while George lies dead beside him on the passenger side. The women get back into the car, not realizing what has happened. By the time they realize that the driver isn't George, it's too late, and they're trapped in the speeding limousine.

Denise Ford, a psychic, calls Stonetree to say that she knows that there's been a kidnapping.

The limo has been found, and Nick and Schanke investigate. Stonetree introduces Denise to Conrad Hedges, the husband and father of the kidnap victims. Denise admires the work that Hedges does at his foundation, Human Touch. Schanke has no faith in psychics, but Nick treats Denise with respect. Schanke claims that his life was ruined by a psychic. Myra has an aunt who claims to have the power and who told Myra that Schanke wasn't going to see another spring. All winter long, Schanke had to eat watercress, bean sprouts, and low-fat yogurt. He asks if Nick has ever eaten low-fat yogurt, then comments that he's never seen what it is that Nick does eat.

While sitting in the driver's seat, Denise "sees" the murder and feels wind and cold metal, sensing that the driver is nearby. Her visions of the murder keep being interrupted by flashes of Nick with Janette and with Joan of Arc. She feels ancient and says that she is a black shape flying against the moon. Schanke is convinced that she has flipped. Denise's powers are vindicated, however, when the chauffeur's body is found in an air-conditioning duct.

At the morgue, Denise tells Natalie that she's not sure how much help she's going to be. The images aren't as clear as they should be. When Nick arrives, Denise touches George and tries to relive the moments before his death. She tries to see the killer's face, but flashes on LaCroix. Upon seeing the killer's sunglasses, she flashes on Nick running to escape the sun while his body is smoking, and she cries, "Sunlight is death!" She flashes in quick succession on Nick driving a flaming stake into LaCroix, Joan of Arc burning at the stake, Nick levitating, LaCroix biting Dr. Alyce Hunter, LaCroix about to decapitate Nick, Nick running to escape the sunlight, Nick's hand bursting into flames as it approaches a cross, and Nick standing in front of candles in a church. In a panic, she pulls back from the chauffeur's body. Nick convinces her to try again. She sees the moment when the killer approached the limousine and knocked on the window, then flashes on Nick with his eyes glowing and fangs bared, Nick about to bite Donald Fenner, and Nick about to feed on his first victim. She screams hysterically, backs away from Nick, and runs out in terror.

Hedges is an important man, so Stonetree is taking a lot of heat. Schanke reports that Hedges is apparently a saint and has no enemies, but Stonetree advises him to dig deeper. Hedges arrives to inform them that he has received a ransom demand for one million dollars. Stonetree feels that Nick and Denise will produce results if they spend some time at the Hedgeses' house.

While en route to pick up Denise, Nick flashes back to early America. He is the black shape flying against the moon. Matthew, a religious man, is frightened by the sight and runs into the barn, where he finds Nick calmly grooming a horse. Nick claims to have been in the barn for an hour. When Matthew relates what he saw, Nick tells him that it's a tale fit for the tavern. Matthew is sure that he's seen a demon, but Nick tells him that devout men are not troubled by such things. He must have seen an owl or a cloud.

Denise apologizes for her previous hysterics. She asks Nick if he believes in past lives, adding that he should.

At the Hedgeses' home, Denise "hears" old arguments, then flashes on Nick biting a vampire lover, Erica. When she sees him reflected in a mirror, she sees him as a vampire. Bits and pieces of arguments

continue to be interrupted by visions of Nick's past. She is frustrated and ready to quit, then is drawn to Janice's room. Opening a jewelry box, she envisions Nick rising out of it as if it were a coffin. She tells Nick the things she has seen and demands an explanation. Before he can answer, Schanke calls. Jennifer Hedges has been found with her throat cut.

At the morgue, Denise attempts to gain information by touching Jennifer, but is frustrated by visions of Nick's past. When she refuses to let Nick walk her out, Natalie surmises that Denise knows the truth about him.

Nick flashes back to eavesdropping on Matthew praying. Matthew believes that he is losing his wits and that he is bewitched, cursed, and demented beyond all remedy. Matthew prays for help because he cannot live this way.

Conrad Hedges makes a televised plea to the kidnappers not to harm his daughter. He promises that there will be no more interference from the police. Nick feels that the kidnapping may be a scam. Denise sensed trouble at the house, and it doesn't make sense that the kidnappers would have wasted an asset by killing Jennifer before they collected any money.

Denise quits the case, feeling that she can't continue to work on it and keep her sanity.

In a flashback, Nick returns from hunting to find Matthew waiting for him. Nick claims to have been hunting a fox that has been bothering the henhouse. Matthew is troubled by Nick and has been lying awake nights doubting his senses. Nick begs Matthew's forgiveness. Matthew has taken Nick in and given him shelter, and Nick never intended to repay his kindness with torment. Nick tries to hypnotize Matthew into forgetting what he has seen, but Matthew resists. He wants to know what Nick is, and Nick replies that he is just one of God's creatures.

At Nick's apartment, Natalie prepares a protein drink for him, but Nick balks at it because it's too pale. She informs him that protein doesn't have to be red to be potent. She urges Nick to tell Denise the truth to save her sanity. Stonetree calls to inform Nick that Denise has quit the case and that Hedges has disappeared with the ransom money. Nick tells Natalie to call Schanke and have him meet Nick at the Hedgeses' home. Against Natalie's wishes, Nick flies out the window.

Outside Denise's apartment, Nick flashes back to finding Matthew hanging from the rafters in the barn.

Nick breaks into Denise's apartment and tells her the truth. Despite being scared, she is relieved that she is not crazy and is fascinated by his story. She agrees to work on the case again and asks Nick to take her flying sometime.

At the Hedgeses' house, Schanke complains about being dragged out of bed. Denise knows that Myra was out this evening. Schanke says that she went bowling. "Yeah. That's right. Bowling," Denise agrees. The tone of her voice causes Schanke to worry and phone Myra.

Denise senses that Jennifer and Janice knew something that Conrad wanted kept quiet, and she gets a strong sense of violence.

Natalie reports that traces of powdered milk were found on Jennifer's body, reminding Nick of Human Touch's food depot. Denise is angry when Nick won't let her accompany him.

Hedges brings $500,000 to the kidnappers at the food depot. Hiding, Nick hears Hedges complain about Janice being still alive. The kidnappers take the money and reveal that Janice is in the trunk of their car and knows all about her father dipping into the widows' and orphans' fund. She also knows that her father is the one who planned her abduction. The kidnappers leave Janice's death up to Hedges. He opens the trunk and is about to shoot her when Denise arrives and confronts him. Nick emerges and knocks out the two kidnappers. Denise struggles with Hedges and gets shot in the abdomen. Nick throws Hedges across the room, knocking him out. He removes Janice's gag and assures her the police and paramedics will be there soon. He then picks up Denise and flies out with her. Barely conscious, she thanks Nick for taking her flying.

At his apartment, Natalie tells Nick that he couldn't have saved Denise. He blames himself because telling her the truth caused her to return to work on the case. Natalie points out that Denise made the choice to follow Nick.

At the precinct, Natalie brings lunch for the gang. Schanke mistakes Nick's protein shake for a milk shake and is appalled by the taste. He fares no better with a burger and runs out in horror upon learning that he has just eaten tofu.

**FALSE WITNESS**
written by Naomi Janzen
directed by Jorge Montesi

**Guest Cast**
John Evans
Ellen Dubin
with

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| Martin Doyle | Kelly Fiddick | Monique Mojica | Dean Gabourie |
| Garth Dyke | Rosemary Lawless | Robert Russell | Alexa Gilmour |
| Robert Thomas | Richard Partington | Lili Francks | Joanna Hartley |

**Synopsis**

The police believe that Murray Kozack, a pornography producer, strangled and killed a porn actress, Betty Gilroy. It is believed that Kozack has the murder on videotape. In order to avoid eighteen months in jail, an associate of Kozack's, Pete Farber, has made a deal with the police to talk to Kozack while wearing a wire, in hopes of getting Kozack to admit to killing Betty. Nick listens to the conversation from his car, while Schanke and another officer listen from a van. When Farber mentions Betty Gilroy, Kozack gets suspicious and rips Farber's shirt open, revealing the microphone. The police can tell something has gone wrong, and Nick flies across a field and crashes through a window seconds after Kozack has shot Farber. Kozack insists that Farber shot himself, but Nick claims to have seen the murder. The police take Kozack away just as another of his associates, a dominatrix named Mistress Tamara Dugan, shows up. She gives Schanke a hard time and claims that police are some of her best clients.

At the precinct, Nick is a hero because the police have been trying to nail Kozack for years. A crown prosecutor takes a statement from Nick, who claims that he climbed a fence, ran across the field, entered through an open window, ran up the stairs to the top floor, and ran down to the end of the hall. He claims that Kozack pulled the trigger just as he entered the room. Natalie is disappointed in Nick because she knows that he must have used his vampire powers to get to the scene of the shooting so fast. She knows that Nick didn't actually see the shooting because his report states that Farber was shot from a distance of four or five feet, but the autopsy reveals that he was shot from point blank. She reminds him that in the mortal world, perjury is a crime also.

Nick flashes back to a trial two centuries ago. A man claims to be innocent, but a woman on the witness stand claims to have seen him kill Sarah Fergus. Nick wants the others in the courtroom to listen to the man.

Kozack's trial date has been set, and Nick will have to appear at 10 a.m. He wants to send in a videotaped testimony, but Stonetree will not allow it because Nick is the only witness and must take the stand. Schanke's wife, Myra, has been Skin Pretty's leading saleslady for two years running in the Toronto region, and Schanke sells Nick a tube of Ozone Shield Sun Block, which guarantees 100% protection from the sun. It has a very pleasing coconut-peach scent.

Nick and Schanke visit Mistress Tamara. She denies any knowledge of a video of Betty's death and says that she would never do or say anything to hurt Kozack - unless he wanted her to.

Nick admits to Schanke that he didn't actually see the shooting. Schanke had already figured this out. Either Nick lied, or Schanke has the Six Million Dollar Man for a partner. Schanke says it doesn't matter that Nick lied, only that they finally nail Kozack.

Schanke is having a bit of a career crisis and complains to Stonetree that the public sees the police as bad guys, not heroes. Stonetree tells him to go home and get some sleep. He also tells him not to do anything heroic on the way.

The court date arrives, and Nick awakens with blood sweat on his forehead. *Schanke comes by for a visit. He's tired, but all keyed up. He says that if he has any more coffee, he could probably fly home. This sounds like a good idea to Nick. Schanke gives Nick a pep talk, telling him that it's okay to lie in court if it means nailing Kozack and making the police heroes again.*

While drinking his breakfast, Nick flashes back to a tavern two centuries ago. There are two musicians playing, and Nick is enchanted by the beautiful violin player. Janette calls them common street players.

LaCroix says that it's a pity that music is one of the only things that mortals excel at. He claims that it's because mortals have souls, and vampires do not. Nick goes outside and discovers that Janette has just killed the violinist. With her eyes glowing and blood dripping from her fangs, she admits that she was wrong - Nick does have good taste. The other musician finds Sarah's body and is holding her when a woman comes by and starts screaming, "Murderer!"

Natalie drives Nick's car to the courthouse's parking garage, with Nick in the trunk. The previous night, Natalie had claimed to be an interior decorator and had sabotaged the pull cords on the courtroom blinds. Natalie is worried about what Nick is going to say on the stand, but he assures her that after 800 years, he knows what's wrong and what's right. As Nick walks by, she asks, "Do you smell piña coladas?"

During Kozack's trial, Nick keeps flashing back to the trial of John Underwood for the murder of Sarah Fergus. Nick tells the court that he saw a woman kill Sarah, but the other woman, Venetia Dalton, keeps insisting that she saw John do it.

Kozack claims that Farber shot himself when confronted with the fact that he was betraying a friend by working with the police.

Nick takes the stand and manages to conceal the fact that his hand was burned when he placed it on the bible to take the oath. Kozack's defense attorney has a deposition from a decathlete reporting that it took four minutes to recreate Nick's heroics. If Nick's story was true, it would mean that he accomplished the same feat in just over two minutes. The pull cord on the blinds has been repaired, and sunlight begins to shine on the witness stand, forcing Nick to pull farther and farther back. Wisps of smoke escape unnoticed from Nick's hand. Nick is tom between telling the truth and nailing Kozack, but finally, not wanting to repeat Venetia Dalton's mistake, he admits that he did not see the shooting. The case is dismissed, and Nick is now a pariah among the other police officers.

*Nick and Janette go for a stroll, and she can't understand why he cares about the case or the lives of mortals. When asked why he concerns himself with these specks in time, he says that it will help him find his soul Janette tells him that his soul is long gone. He lost it when LaCroix brought him over. Janette wonders where LaCroix is, and Nick flashes back to battling LaCroix in his apartment. When he doesn't answer, Janette surmises that Nick has killed LaCroix. She calls him pathetic and says that he doesn't belong to mortals, or to vampires. He is not true to his own kind, or to himself.*

Even after taking a few days off, Nick is still being given the cold shoulder at the precinct. He feels that people are more upset with him for not sticking to the lie than for lying in the first place.

Nick obtains a warrant and visits Mistress Tamara. Listening outside the door, he hears Tamara tell Kozack that he is lucky to have gotten away with both Betty's and Farber's murders. Tamara has the videotape of Betty's death and has been holding it over Kozack's head. Kozack says that he only killed Betty because Tamara made him do it. Kozack struggles with Tamara for the tape. Nick bursts in, and Kozack shoots both Nick and Tamara, then escapes with the tape. Nick calls for an ambulance, then flies after Kozack's speeding car. He lands in front of the car with his eyes glowing and fangs bared, causing Kozack to swerve and stop. Nick pulls Kozack from the car and arrests him for the attempted murder of Tamara Dugan. Kozack saw the bullets go right through Nick, and Nick tells him to go ahead and say that in court. He will be called a liar.

At his apartment, Nick laughs at Natalie, who is crying over the end of the movie *King Kong*. Nick is unmoved by it, and Natalie takes back everything she ever said about Nick's having a chance at being human. Kozack and Tamara are both going to jail, and the other officers have begun to forgive Nick. Natalie observes that Nick is not immune to happy endings, after all. Natalie wants to know what became of John Underwood, and Nick tells her that he was sentenced to death, but someone managed to break into his jail cell and help him escape. He ended up playing first violin in a symphony orchestra. Natalie looks up from the popcorn bowl, and Nick playfully growls and bares his fangs. She screams, throws popcorn in his face, and tells him to stop it. He just laughs at her.

**CHERRY BLOSSOMS**
written by Roy Sallows
directed by Brad Turner

**Guest Cast**
James Hong
with
Ho Chow — Shirley Cui — Janet Lo
Daniel Lee — Oscar Hsu

**Synopsis**

Nancy Leong, her brother, and her uncle get into a cab in Chinatown. The progress of the cab is blocked by a van. Two men get out of the van and riddle the cab with machine gun fire. A third man from the van surveys the damage, tells the others that they are done, and they leave.

When Nick and Schanke arrive on the scene, Stonetree informs them that it was a professional hit. Ray Kwan from Immigration arrives, and Stonetree tells the detectives to cooperate with him. Kwan informs them that the murder victims had been illegal immigrants, but they had been important. Nancy was going to testify against one of Hong Kong's major crime families. Nick informs Kwan that all three murder victims were male. Nancy must have gotten out of the cab alive.

Natalie confirms that there was someone else in the cab. Three blood types were found, and only two of them are accounted for by the driver and his two male passengers. Natalie is irritable and having a bad day. Her budget has been cut, and she has to let two attendants go.

Kwan offers to assist Nick and Schanke in their investigation, since the people in Chinatown don't trust the police, and he speaks their language. Nick suggests that Schanke and Kwan interview the residents of Chinatown together. He also suggests that there might have been a leak in Immigration, since the hit men knew where to find Nancy.

Nick returns to investigate the crime scene and follows blood droplets to an acupuncturist's shop. He breaks in and flashes back to San Francisco, 1916. A Chinese woman, My, is using acupuncture in an attempt to cure Nick's need for blood. My's young son brings in tea, then leaves the room. My places a needle in Nick's neck, immobilizing him. As My leaves the room through one door, Janette enters through another.

Nick's reverie is interrupted by an old acupuncturist, Dr. Chung, who holds a gun on him. Chung doesn't trust Nick and denies having seen Nancy. Nick gives Chung his card, then leaves. Chung flashes back to 1916. He is My's son. He recalls spying into the room and seeing Nick holding his mother's dead body. Nick, in the vampire state, growls at the boy, then flies up and out of the room. The child shakes his mother and begs her to wake up. The old acupuncturist weeps at the memory and crumples Nick's card.

*Schanke and Kwan are not working well together. Kwan say that Eastern culture is more civilized than Western culture because it's been around longer and that the people in Chinatown won't talk to them because, even though Kwan is Chinese, he's working with a "barbarian."*

Schanke tells Stonetree that he suspects Kwan was the leak in Immigration. At Nick's suggestion, Schanke is put in charge of an investigative team. Nick claims not to be a team player and says that he can do more good alone. Stonetree reluctantly agrees. "Way to go," Nick tells Schanke. "Give 'em hell."

Nick follows Dr. Chung to Nancy. He wants her to go to a hospital, but she's afraid.

Schanke revels in his new role. He has briefed the team of detectives and set up a command post complete with a map covered by multicolored pins, the significance of which only Schanke understands. Nick reports finding Nancy alive, but won't reveal her location because she doesn't trust Immigration or the police. Stonetree tells Kwan that they know where Nancy is and will be bringing her in. After Kwan leaves, Stonetree tells Nick to bring a doctor to Nancy.

Nick recruits Natalie for the job, even though she's not sure it's a good idea. She reminds him that most of her patients over the last few years have been dead. *Nick remarks that this will be a nice change.*

A car follows Nick and Natalie to Nancy's location. Handcuffed in the back seat of the car is Kwan. The hit men promise to release Kwan's family once they have Nancy.

Natalie is impressed by Chung's medical treatment of Nancy, but says that she will still need surgery to close the internal wounds. Nick says that once Nancy testifies, she will be given a new identity, and her past

will be over. Chung replies that one never forgets his past and flashes back to Nick holding the body of his mother.

In another room, Natalie is putting on her coat when the hit men burst in. Nick grabs Natalie and pulls her out of the way just as a hail of bullets fly by. Nick changes to the vampire state and battles the hit men. He knocks two of them out, but the third grabs Natalie and shoots Nick repeatedly. As Nick ignores the bullets and closes in on the hit man, Chung comes up from behind and incapacitates the hit man by sticking a needle in his neck. Nick unsuccessfully tries to hypnotize Chung into forgetting what he has seen.

Nick has radioed in, and a team of police have arrived. Chung talks to Stonetree, and Nick is sure that his secret is being revealed. Nick fears that he might have to leave and promises to get in contact with Natalie somehow. She wants him to promise that he won't ever stop trying to become human. But Chung had merely asked Stonetree if Nick could give him a ride home. Stonetree tells Nick that Kwan was the leak in Immigration and that Schanke has persuaded one of the hit men to take him to the location of Kwan's wife and children.

When they are alone together and Nick's back is turned, Chung paralyzes him with a needle in the neck. Nick comes to in the acupuncturist's chair, completely immobile. Chung says Nick is the thing that killed his mother, which Nick says is impossible, since he hasn't killed anyone in a hundred years. Chung accuses Nick of lying, and Nick realizes that Chung is My's son.

Nick flashes back to Janette entering the acupuncturist's room in San Francisco, followed by LaCroix. LaCroix is disappointed that Nick is again attempting a cure, but Janette is delighted with Nick's present condition and calls him an immovable feast. When My reenters the room, LaCroix changes to the vampire state and kills her. LaCroix looks up from the body, with blood dripping from his mouth, and tells Nick, "You are what I am." LaCroix leaves, and Janette pulls the needle out of Nick's neck before following him.

Chung has placed a piece of paper with Chinese characters over Nick's heart and is about to drive a stake through when Nick begs him to wait. He insists that there were three of them there and asks if Chung remembers a beautiful woman. Chung remembers seeing Janette kissing Nick while Nick was paralyzed with the needle in his neck. Nick convinces Chung to allow Janette to come and speak in his defense.

The sun is rising as Janette arrives at the acupuncturist's shop. Smoke pours from her body as she runs from her car to the shop, tears the door off the hinges, and runs inside. She sees Chung with a stake poised over Nick's heart, and with glowing eyes and bared fangs, she growls that Chung has ten seconds to live. Nick calms Janette down and gets her to confirm his story that LaCroix killed Chung's mother. She also tells Chung that Nick has repented his ways and tries to do good. Janette gets Chung to remember the killer's face, and he realizes that it was not Nick. Chung removes the needles from Nick's neck, and Nick and Janette embrace.

Nick shows Janette around his apartment for the first time. She is not impressed by his surroundings, but he explains that if a cop has too many possessions, people will think he's dirty. She drinks some of the cow's blood that Nick drinks, then shudders at the taste. She tells Nick that his life would he so much easier if he came over and joined the vampire community again for good. He refuses to do that. Janette wonders if the life Nick has chosen is really better, since he needed her to save him. When he tells her that he is grateful for that, she wants him to show her. Nick is kissing Janette passionately when Natalie arrives and interrupts them. Nick changes back from the vampire state, and Janette pulls the strap of her gown back up onto her shoulder. Nick introduces the two women, telling Natalie that Janette is just an old friend. Janette says that it's a pleasure to meet Natalie and that Nick has spoken of her often. Janette moves out of Nick's arms, and he makes a feeble attempt to pull her back, but it is too late. She is moving towards Natalie, saying that they will have to get together and talk. Nick looks nervous about the proposition.

♪♪("CHERRY BLOSSOMS - The Ambush" is on the *Forever Knight Soundtrack.*)

**I WILL REPAY**
written by Brad Wright
directed by Jorge Montesi

**Guest Cast**
Lindsay Merrithew
Shelley Young
with

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| Louise Cranfield | Nancy Cser | Dean Gabourie | Ashley Brown |
| Jorge Montesi | Felix Gray | William Fisher | Denise McLeod |
| John Lefebvre | Larry McLean | John Stoneham Sr. | |

**Synopsis**

Natalie gives her brother, Richard, a lift to the police station because his car has broken down. He is a prosecutor for the crown and is trying to put away Saul Craven, who has been linked to several murders. At the precinct, Craven says the police have nothing on him. Vanessa DelGardo, who is waiting to give her statement to Richard, is afraid to testify against Craven and wants protection. Suddenly, a prisoner gets a gun away from one officer, shoots another, and uses another as a shield as he makes his way to the door. Richard arrives and tries to sneak up behind the man, but gets shot in the chest. Nick gets the gun away and throws the man over a desk. Natalie, who was outside and heard the shot, rushes back in to find that her brother has been shot.

Natalie keeps vigil at Richard's hospital bedside, along with his wife, Sarah, and daughter, Amy. Meanwhile, at the precinct, Nick comes down hard on the officer whose gun had been taken away from him. Schanke worries that Vanessa DelGardo will now feel that the police can't protect her and will change her mind about testifying. Richard regains consciousness, and Natalie assures Sarah that he will be okay, although she doesn't seem convinced herself.

Driving back from a visit to the hospital, Nick flashes back to England, several centuries ago. A woman, Elizabeth, stole some fish from some men on a beach. They catch her, demand payment, then see that she has leprosy. They stab her and leave her to die, but Nick finds her.

Natalie arrives at Nick's apartment very distraught. She knows, from having cut up people who've died from less, that Richard isn't going to make it. She wants Nick to bring him across and make him immortal. When he refuses, she angrily demands to know why Nick is the only one who deserves to live forever. He says that the life he could give Richard is worse than death, and she retorts that if that is so, he should just walk out into the sun and end it all. She says that Nick owes her and asks if he has any humanity. He doesn't know. She was the only one who ever thought he did. She leaves very upset.

Nick flashes back to carrying Elizabeth off the beach. He tells her that he can save her, make her immortal, and make her beautiful again, but she must become a vampire.

*At the Raven, Nick seeks Janette's advice about bringing Richard over. Janette claims not to be the mothering type and says that she has never brought anyone across. She has never been able to stop herself in time, while there was still life in the person. She asks if Nick is prepared for the eternal bond that will exist. He doesn't believe that that will happen, but she reminds him of how LaCroix followed him through the centuries. Janette says that LaCroix was Nick's father and creator and that he loved Nick. Nick counters that LaCroix wanted to control him and make Nick like himself. Janette tells Nick to be sure to take the responsibility if he decides to do this.*

Vanessa will not testify. Nick remarks to Schanke that what happened to Richard isn't fair.

Richard isn't going to pull through and is dying right in front of Natalie's eyes. In a flashback, Nick makes Elizabeth promise to do anything he asks if he brings her across. Natalie begs Nick to save Richard. Nick grabs Natalie's hand, and amid flashbacks of bringing Elizabeth across, he does the same for Richard. When the heart monitor registers nothing, Natalie accuses Nick of killing Richard and asks when the last time was that he tried this. Then the monitor beeps, which Nick says will happen every ten minutes or so. They remove Richard's "corpse" from the hospital, claiming that his death is part of an ongoing police investigation.

At Nick's apartment, Nick and Natalie tell Sarah that Richard is alive. A homeless man was buried in his place. Richard stirs upstairs, and Nick sends Natalie and Sarah away. In a flashback, Elizabeth awakens as a vampire. Nick assures her that she is beautiful again and will live forever.

Richard wakes up hungry, and Nick gives him a bottle of blood. When he learns what he has become, Richard asks what will happen to him now. In a flashback, LaCroix tells Nick that he will live longer than in his wildest dreams. He expounds on all the opportunities that he's given Nick and says that Nick is a blessed man. Nick assures Richard that he will be able to lead a fairly normal life, as he does. Nick warns Richard about some of the things that he must avoid now: sunlight, fire, garlic, and crosses. Richard is amazed to discover that his wound has healed. He wants to see Sarah and Amy, but Nick says that he won't be ready until he learns to control his urges and desires. Nick flashes back to Elizabeth killing one of the men on the beach. Nick warns Richard not to make him sorry.

Nick is out, and Richard wakes up in a blood sweat after dreaming that Craven had Sarah tied up in his office. He calls his wife, who is ecstatic to hear that he's really alive. She can hardly wait to see him. Richard wanders around the apartment and finds Joan of Arc's cross in a box on an end table. He looks at it for a moment, then has to turn away. When he hears on the radio that the charges against Craven have been dropped, Richard's eyes glow, and he bares his fangs.

At the precinct, Natalie seems cheerful. Schanke gives her flowers and assures her that the crown prosecutor will throw everything he's got at Richard's killer. The man will not see daylight for a long time. Nick is uneasy, but Natalie is positive that everything is going to work out.

Richard goes out. When he encounters a man attacking a woman in an alley, he kills him.

Schanke thinks it's good that Natalie can accept death, since it's going to happen to us all. "Yeah, that's what they say," replies Nick. Schanke recalls that it took a long time for Myra to get over her mother's death, but she finally accepted it. They get a call from the dispatcher about a homicide at the corner of Booth and Superior, which is in Nick's neck of the woods. The woman who had been attacked tells Schanke that the man who killed her attacker did it with his teeth.

*Stonetree briefs the department about a killer on a spree who has killed three times in the last three hours, ripping his victims apart with his bare hands. Schanke says that all the victims were vermin, and public opinion is that this killer is doing the police's job for them. Schanke tells Stonetree that Nick was with him until he heard about the second killing, then he disappeared.*

Janette tells Nick that no one she knows would be stupid enough to make a kill so nearby. Nick admits to bringing Richard across. He thought he could handle it. She is angry with him for putting them all at risk. Nick must find Richard.

Vanessa is tied to a chair in Craven's office, and one of Craven's men knocks her out. When Richard arrives, Craven says that he's supposed to be dead and orders his men to shoot him. The bullets have no effect, and Richard advances with his eyes glowing and fangs bared.

In his car, Nick flashes back to Elizabeth after she killed the man on the beach. She is paying people back for turning on her when she had leprosy. All she wants is revenge.

At Craven's office, Nick finds everyone dead - even Vanessa, whose neck has been bitten.

At Nick's apartment, Natalie is distressed over Richard's actions. He couldn't control his desire to make the streets safe. Nick reminds her that Richard is not the man he used to be and that he has lost some of his humanity. Natalie blames herself. Richard comes downstairs and says that it's Nick's fault, not Natalie's. He can't see that what he's done is wrong. When Sarah arrives, Richard tries to hypnotize her into coming to him, but Natalie pulls her away. Nick and Richard battle. Richard throws Nick onto the dining room table, smashing it. He then bums Nick by holding his face against Joan of Arc's cross. Nick flashes back to pushing Elizabeth into a fire, killing her for betraying him. Natalie grabs the cross and tries to ward Richard off, but he backhands her, sending her flying over a chair. Richard advances on Sarah. Nick grabs a leg from the broken table and stakes Richard through the heart. As he did when he killed Elizabeth, Nick asks Richard to forgive him. Richard is engulfed in a blue light, then disappears in a cloud of smoke. Sarah faints, and Natalie cries.

Nick hypnotizes Sarah into forgetting what happened. She says it's too bad that Richard didn't get a second chance, and she hopes that Amy will understand that his death is something that God wanted. Natalie assures her that sometimes children understand better than adults do.

♪♪("Nick's Piano Theme" (performed by Geraint Wyn Davies) is on the *Forever Knight Soundtrack.*)

**DEAD AIR**
written by Alison Bingeman
directed by Steve DiMarco

**Guest Cast**
Diane Cary
David Hewlett
with

| | | |
|---|---|---|
| Jonathan Wise | Dan Pawlick | Tannis Burnett |
| Justine Campbell | Barbara Barsky | Steve Whistance Smith |
| Reiner Schwarz | Megan Smith | |

**Synopsis**

Dr. Christina Noble, a radio psychiatrist on CTOK, is doing a show on "intimate secrets" when a woman calls, then is replaced by a man on the phone. The man tells Dr. Noble that he has strangled the woman. Dr. Noble brings a tape of the call to the police, but there isn't much to go on, and Stonetree isn't even sure that a murder really has occurred.

The next night, Nick and Schanke listen in as Dr. Noble does a show on "the shadow side of ourselves." Schanke claims never to listen to the show, but trips himself up when he makes disparaging remarks about previous show topics. The killer calls again, from a bridal suite. Nick leaves Schanke in the car and flies to the radio station. Schanke must respond alone to an emergency call at Spadina and Queen. On the radio, the caller says that his victim is nothing and has to die. *Nick flashes back to LaCroix holding a man at knife point. LaCroix says that the man is nothing and will die slowly.* A gunshot is heard as the killer commits his second murder on the air. Schanke investigates an apartment where a dog has been barking incessantly, and no one has seen the tenant for two days. He finds the body of a woman, made up and tied to a bed.

Nick, Stonetree, Natalie, and a team of investigators have joined Schanke. The time of death is consistent with last night's radio broadcast, and Nick confirms that this was the on-air murder by hitting the redial button on the phone and getting the radio station.

Stonetree assigns Schanke to start checking motel bridal suites for the second victim, while Nick goes to the radio station. Schanke wants to know why Nick gets the "live ones," and Stonetree replies that it's because he likes Nick.

The next night, the topic is "helplessness and anger." A device has been installed to trace the calls coming into the radio station. The killer calls and asks Dr. Noble why she isn't working in an office with a couch and a big swivel chair. He suggests that maybe she wasn't good enough. He hangs up before the last digit of his phone number can be obtained. Dr. Noble tells Nick that her skills are rusty. Schanke calls to report that he has found the second victim. *Dr. Noble is upset that she hadn't been told when the first victim was found. She worries that her show might be responsible for these deaths.*

The second woman is found in the same condition as the first. When Schanke remarks that they are dealing with a serial killer, Nick flashes back to Janette and LaCroix toying with LaCroix's victim. Janette puts a crown on the man's head and says that he looks like LaCroix's father. Nick urges LaCroix to drink the man's blood and be done with it. LaCroix chides Nick for not appreciating the pleasure, creativity, and satisfaction involved in killing.

Dr. Noble arrives at the hotel room where the second murder took place. She wants to help catch the killer. The detectives have been told not to share any information about this case with the media, and Schanke doesn't want Dr. Noble involved. Nick assures Schanke that Dr. Noble is trying to help and agrees to stay with her while she looks around the crime scene. He looks a bit nervous, however, when she pulls back a curtain to look outside. The sun has risen.

Schanke pays a visit to a psychiatric hospital to check for former patients with a history of similar crimes. The nurse tells him that, although she's sure the patients' records make pretty interesting reading material, the hospital is not a lending library. Schanke produces a warrant which grants him access to the hospital's records, but does not specify the hospital's database, so he is shown to a room filled from floor to ceiling with filing cabinets and boxes of old records.

Dr. Noble surmises that the killer dresses his victims and puts makeup on them because he is trying to conquer them, but it's really his way of conquering his own fear. A hair sample and analysis of the tapes reveal

that the killer is a white male between the ages of 20 and 25. Dr. Noble adds that he is probably attractive, intelligent, and charming, but lacks self-esteem. The killer feels apart from the human race, and therefore, the rules that apply to others do not apply to him. Each murder confirms his belief that he is worthless. Dr. Noble is reminded of a former patient who was severely abused by his mother. When Dr. Noble felt that the therapy was not successful, the boy was admitted to a hospital. She feels that she let down and abandoned her patient, but Nick says that she's being too hard on herself. After the boy was discharged from the hospital, he brutalized and killed his mother. That was the reason that Dr. Noble gave up her private practice. She feels that whoever has been making these kills might be symbolically killing his mother, as well.

Nick flashes back to LaCroix torturing his victim. LaCroix claims that his cruelty was bred into him and says that the resemblance to his father is uncanny. He calls his victim "father" and wants him to say, "I love you, Oedipus. I'm sorry, Oedipus. Forgive me, Oedipus."

In the hotel's parking garage, Nick steps around shafts of sunlight and tells Dr. Noble that she has a real talent. After she leaves, he climbs into the Caddy's trunk, where he will have to spend the day.

That night, Stonetree berates Nick for letting Dr. Noble in on the case. Schanke calls from the hospital to report that he has blisters on his corneas and still has thirty boxes of files to go through. Nick fills him in on Dr. Noble's profile of the killer, to which Schanke replies, "Okay, that's great. That's fabulous. Let me just write this down. That's N-o-r-m-a-n Bates." Schanke gets off the phone and spots a computer in an empty office. "Hello, Norman!" he exclaims.

A former patient calls for Dr. Noble at the radio station, and her producer, Ted, patches the call through to her car phone. The patient is Matthew Reid, the boy who killed his mother. He has been listening to Dr. Noble's show and is disturbed by what has been happening.

Schanke arrives at Nick's apartment to report that he has found a former patient with a similar homicide. The patient's doctor was Christina Noble.

The radio station is running a "highlights" tape because Dr. Noble has gone to Matthew's apartment. Nick takes over the radio show, and his topic is "fantasy." Dr. Noble tells Matthew that he didn't deserve the way his mother treated him, to which he replies, "Not at the time." Matthew locks the door so that Dr. Noble won't abandon him again. He then admits that he escaped from the hospital. Matthew switches on the radio program and calls to tell Nick that he is living out his fantasy. Nick keeps him on the line long enough to complete the trace. He leaves Schanke behind the microphone and flies to Matthew's apartment.

Matthew brings Dr. Noble to the roof at gunpoint. He accuses her of lying to him and says that she blamed him for killing his mother. She tells him that she never lied to him and that if anyone had blamed him for his mother's death, he would have been in a prison, not a hospital. Matthew calls Dr. Noble "mother" and says that he's going to kill her for making him hate her. Nick lands on the roof behind Dr. Noble. As Nick advances on Matthew, Matthew shoots at Nick and backs away. He stumbles into some power lines and a transformer, electrocuting himself.

The radio program has a new host, and the subject is "kinky." Schanke listens on the car radio, but switches the station as Nick returns to the car, bringing Schanke a burger. Nick switches back to CTOK. The host wants to hear from uniformed men and wonders if women really get turned on by men in uniform. Dr. Noble is at the radio station and gives the new host, Marcia, a thumbs-up. Nick dials the station and encourages Schanke to share a story. Schanke wants Nick to hang up, but Nick says that repression is a serious thing, almost as bad as denial, and that Schanke could wind up on Dr. Noble's new couch. He gives the phone to Schanke, who begins, "It happened when I was a rookie ..."

**HUNTERS**
written by Peter Mitchell
directed by Michael Levine

**Guest Cast**
Daniel Kash
with

| | | |
|---|---|---|
| William Colgate | Debra Winter | Nicu Branzea |
| Araby Lockhart | Bill MacDonald | Robert Hollinger |
| Rachel Luttrell | | |

**Synopsis**

Nick and Schanke walk with Schanke's ex-partner, Jimmy Anderson, on his beat. He has been offered a promotion to daytime commander, but enjoys being a vice cop. Besides, he's a night owl. Nick can relate to that. When Anderson calls Schanke "Donut," Schanke explains that he used to have an affinity for junk food. Nick says it's now a full-blown addiction and threatens to resurrect the nickname. A shot is fired from a rooftop, and Anderson falls dead into Schanke's arms. The killer was quite a marksman. Stonetree tells Schanke to take some time off, but he is determined to hunt down the killer. Nick backs Schanke up, and Stonetree gives them the case.

Nick wants to access Anderson's cases, but the precinct's computer is down. Schanke is sent a photo of himself holding Anderson's body. The target drawn on Schanke's face indicates that he will be next. He agrees to send his wife and daughter to their cabin up north, but won't go with them. Nick says that the equation has changed now that Schanke is a target, but Schanke claims that Nick doesn't understand. In a flashback, Nick, Janette, and LaCroix, on horseback, are chased by four men on horseback. It's daylight, and their bodies are smoking. Janette feels that she can't go on, but Nick refuses to leave her behind, despite LaCroix's urging. They take refuge in an abandoned cabin. A shot comes through the wall, and LaCroix falls to his knees, wounded.

Schanke reluctantly agrees to stay in a motel with a police guard, Will Struthers. Nick visits while they eat Chinese food. Schanke reads the personal ads in the Police Special and decides that Nick needs a woman in his life. A window is opened from the outside, and explosives are wired inside the bathroom. As much as Nick has enjoyed this male bonding, he leaves, promising to check on Myra and Jenny. As he reaches his car, there is an explosion, and the motel room goes up in flames. Nick gets Schanke out, but it is too late for Struthers, who had probably detonated the plastique by switching on the bathroom light. Schanke survived because the bed pinned him against a wall. Schanke wants to believe that the killer tailed them and got lucky, not that it was someone in the precinct who knew his location. Schanke says that he's got no place to hide.

Janette agrees to shelter Schanke for a day or two, although Nick knows what will happen if Schanke finds out what she is. Schanke is being hunted, and Nick and Janette know what it's like to be a target. In a flashback, Nick and LaCroix are weak, but hold the cabin door shut as Janette yells for the hunters to leave them alone. When one of the hunters shoves a burning stake through a window, Nick angrily pulls him inside. LaCroix urges, "No mercy," and Nick kills the man.

Nick warns Schanke to stay away from the women at the Raven. Schanke goes nuts being cooped up after hours and calls Nick to say he could do more good on the outside, acting as bait. Nick disagrees. Seeing a beautiful woman go into a back room, Schanke agrees to stay. Nick wonders if he put Schanke in the wrong cage. In the wine cellar, Schanke spots a coffin among the many unmarked bottles of "red wine." As he is about to open a closet door, Janette demands to know what he is doing. When he reports seeing someone lurking around, Janette assures him that she is quite capable of taking care of herself and her club. She explains the coffin by saying that they cater to the occasional fetishist. She sends him upstairs, then calms the vampire trying to sleep hanging upside down in the closet. She warns all the others to watch out for Schanke.

The precinct's computer has been up and running since morning, but Nick is more of a night person. Norma, the desk clerk, provides printouts of Schanke's and Anderson's arrests, commendations, and medical and personal histories, all of which was accessed through their badge numbers. Since Nick is Schanke's partner and was at the shooting, she enters his badge number, 16596, as well. Norma discovers a glitch. Only Nick's last couple of years are on file, with no medical history, no birth records, and no information on what police force he was with before this one. He urges her not to worry about it, but she seems troubled.

Schanke keeps Janette up talking. He says he's a man of action and the best defense is a good offense. She agrees. She, too, has been pursued and feels that running and hiding get you nowhere. Schanke wants her to tell that to Nick, but she says Nick doesn't need to be told. In a flashback, Janette and LaCroix are weak, but Nick is enraged and fights the second hunter who has entered the cabin. Janette relates the tale, substituting the hunters for a Chicago gang that Nick took on single-handedly. His violence had surprised even Janette. The "gang" would have killed them if not for Nick. But he has changed and now believes that reasoning is the solution to every problem. Janette believes that striking back is what differentiates the winners from the losers.

Finding no likely suspects in the files, Nick believes that the killer, a marksman, might be a cop or an ex-cop. He hears Norma report to Stonetree that, according to her database, Officer Knight doesn't exist. Nick enlists Janette's help in contacting Larry Merlin. She warns him that he is using all his favors up at once. Since Nick has been flagged as a blank file, Merlin will not only have to access the Toronto mainframe, but load information into systems all the way down the line, from the hospital he was born in, to his last job. It could take up to a week, and it will cost.

Schanke is frustrated with hiding out, but Nick convinces him to stay by saying that, even though it's hard for him to admit, Schanke's wife and child would be better off with him alive than dead. Later, Schanke wants to go to the newsstand across the street. Crossing his heart, he promises to be right back. As he leaves, Janette mutters, "Please don't do that in front of me." The latest Police Special contains this personal ad: "DONUT DON, IT'S TIME WE TOOK A TRIP DOWN 'MEMORY LANE,' COME ALONE, ANYTIME TONIGHT, OR I'M GOING HUNTING AT YOUR COTTAGE UP NORTH COUNTRY." Schanke commandeers a car and speeds off. Stonetree informs Nick about the commandeered car, and Nick learns from the newspaper vendor that Schanke was reading the personals. After reading the ad, Nick takes off, also.

Schanke drives to "Memory Lane," a police training course designed to test a trainee's reactions. When a cardboard figure pops out, Schanke shoots at it, then gets shot at. The unseen shooter chides Schanke for having a hard time, saying that he thought a detective's best weapon was his mind. Schanke gets shot in the arm. Nick asks Stonetree about "Memory Lane" and concludes that the killer *is* a cop wannabe who was at the academy with Schanke and Anderson.

The killer taunts Schanke for having gotten a target score of 78 out of 100. The killer had gotten 97. Schanke and Anderson never cracked 80, yet they became cops. As Schanke shoots another cardboard figure, the killer reminds him of Alice Henderson, an innocent bystander who got killed three years ago when Schanke botched a bust. The killer reveals his identity as "Buzzsaw" McAvoy. McAvoy had flunked the psychiatric evaluation and is unstable. He has followed Schanke's and Anderson's careers, and he's bitter because Anderson was set for a promotion. McAvoy just lost out on one because the "academy mess" is still on his file.

Nick flies to "Memory Lane" and flashes back to the cabin. LaCroix and Janette have located a trapdoor in the floor and take refuge in the darkness below. Nick won't join them, however, because there is still one more hunter to be dealt with. Another door opens on "Memory Lane," revealing the motionless silhouette of a policeman. For once, Schanke does not fire. As Schanke passes, the figure smiles and moves out into the hallway behind him. In a flashback, the last hunter holds up a cross, trapping Nick in a comer. LaCroix's hand crashes up through the floorboards and grabs the man's ankle. The hunter falls to the floor, and LaCroix strangles him from below. Nick enters the hallway behind McAvoy and yells to Schanke as McAvoy is about to shoot him from behind. Schanke spins and fires one shot into McAvoy's heart.

A week later, Norma can't understand why Nick's file is now complete. Stonetree doesn't trust computers. He goes right to the source and asks where Nick was born. When Nick says it was Chicago, 1957, Norma corrects him that it was '58. "Oh yeah," Nick agrees. "It was New Year's Day. You know, I always get mixed up by that." Schanke feels that he got in over his head, but Nick assures him that we can all lose our judgment when the right buttons are pressed. Feeling that McAvoy was right, Schanke wonders how good a cop he is. Nick reminds him of the good work he has done in previous cases and assures him that he is a good cop. Schanke will try not to get a swelled head, but Nick claims that "Donut" lost that battle a long time ago.

**DEAD ISSUE**
written by Lionel E. Siegel
directed by Mitch Gabourie and Nicholas Gray

**Guest Cast**
Lori Hallier
Mark Strange
with

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| Louis Di Bianco | Tony De Santis | David Ferry | George Kapelos |
| Natalie Radford | Owen Young | Claire Cellucci | |
| Bernard Browne | Susan Potvin | Adam Bramble | |

**Synopsis**

A man and woman rendezvous in a nightclub, then go to her apartment. They are kissing passionately and removing their clothes when the man wants to try something new - something that will be even better than the video they were going to watch. He strangles the woman, but she fights him off and throws a vase at him. Two shots are fired, and the man is killed.

The woman, Lynn, and her husband, Police Inspector Anthony Fiori, are good friends of Captain Stonetree's. The police and media converge on the apartment building where Lynn has killed the man who allegedly broke in and tried to kill her. Lynn claims to have the shot the man in self-defense. Schanke says that the dead man looks familiar and probably has a long record. Nick replies that Schanke always says that and is usually wrong. Nick talks to the officer who was first on the scene and learns that when the officer arrived, Lynn was crying and saying over and over that it was all her fault.

*In a flashback, Nick and a beautiful model, Ilsa, pose nude for an artist. Ilsa is crying, and Nick tries to comfort her. She claims to be unworthy of his help, but says there is one remedy for her guilt that is within Nick's power.*

Schanke has identified the dead man as Charlie "The Mole" Gubbins, who was wanted in connection with white slavery, pornography, and prostitution. Nick is forced to admit, with a grimace, that Schanke was right. Schanke does a victory dance.

Nick has a hard time believing that someone who was almost choked to death could get off two such accurate shots and hit her attacker in the heart. Stonetree counters that he has been with the Fioris on the firing range and knows that Lynn can shoot. Nick says there are other things that don't fit, indicating the pornographic videotape found in the room. Stonetree orders him to drop it.

Schanke feels that Nick is suicidal for not dropping the Fiori case and refuses to accompany him to the video rental store that the tape came from. The owner of the store tells Nick that Mrs. Fiori called them to report finding the tape in a parking space and was going to return it to them.

At the Fioris' house (they have both an apartment and a large house), Stonetree and Inspector Fiori worry about how Lynn will handle the press coverage of the case. Stonetree suggests that Fiori take Lynn on a vacation.

Nick learns that a neighbor in the apartment building wasn't there the night of the shooting, but had seen Gubbins there on two previous occasions. Schanke doesn't want to hear it.

Nick flies to the Fioris' home and eavesdrops while they pack for vacation. Inspector Fiori says life would be beautiful if his wife really cared about him. Lynn admits that she's not worthy of her husband. She doesn't want him to love her, but he does, and he refuses to get a divorce.

In a flashback, Ilsa wants to die because she has committed the crime of seducing a gentleman. The painter tells Nick that art has its rewards, and Nick could reap a reward this very night. Indicating Ilsa, the artist says she puts up strenuous resistance, but it's worth the effort.

Natalie and Schanke are worried that Nick is jeopardizing his entire career. When Nick tells Stonetree that Gubbins had been to the apartment before, Stonetree is furious that Nick hasn't dropped the case. Forensics couldn't find the bullets in the wall where they should have been, but Nick found them in a stereo speaker - a place which contradicts Lynn's story.

Stonetree brings Lynn to the station for a statement. She admits that she and Gubbins were lovers, but sticks to the self-defense story.

In a flashback, Nick tries to convince Ilsa that it wasn't her fault that the artist raped her and that she hadn't seduced him.

*Nick tells Natalie that Lynn could not have fired the shots. The location of the bullets proves that the shots were fired by someone taller, who was standing off to the side, not in front of Gubbins.* Nick flashes back to Ilsa saying that she is evil, even when she tries not to be. She begs Nick to take her life. *Natalie gives Nick a "veggic drink. " He takes a sip and says it's like poison. He muses, "One must take just a tiny drop at first if one is ever to be immune to it." He tells Natalie not to mind him. His mind just wandered. She wants to know how far, how long ago.*

Nick visits the Raven, and Janette tells him that one of the lowlifes that Gubbins hung out with is there. Nick asks Janette to point him out. "What would you do without me?" she asks. Nick responds, "Oh, I don't ever want to have to face that." They kiss, and she purrs, "That was the correct answer." She points out a face that is already familiar to Nick - Morgan Delitchky, the video store owner.

Nick brings Delitchky to the station for a statement and tells Schanke to get the photo of Stonetree and Fiori from Stonetree's office. Stonetree catches Schanke taking the picture.

Nick flashes back to finding Ilsa dead, having poisoned herself. The artist is annoyed because now he will have to pay to get her buried.

Nick goes to the Fioris' home and tells Lynn that he knows she didn't kill Gubbins. She refuses to talk about it further and says that she can't take much more of this.

Back at the precinct, Delitchky identifies Inspector Fiori from the photo and says that Fiori told him that if he wanted to stay in business, he'd tell anyone who asked that Lynn simply found the tape.

Stonetree visits Lynn and says that they know she didn't kill Gubbins. She maintains that his death was her fault because she brought him to the apartment. Stonetree insists that even though she will feel guilty for the rest of her life, she is not a murderer because she didn't pull the trigger. Fiori comes home, and Stonetree tells him that they know the truth. Schanke calls, looking for Stonetree, and when Stonetree answers the phone, Fiori hits him from behind, knocking him out.

Fiori puts the unconscious Stonetree in a van, then tells Lynn to drive Stonetree's car to the beach and leave it there. On the way to the beach, Lynn pulls the car over and cries. Fiori brings Stonetree to a tunnel and ties him up. Nick and Schanke find fresh blood at the Fioris' house and put out APB's on Stonetree's and the Fioris' cars.

A police officer finds Lynn in Stonetree's car and brings her to the station. She tells Nick and Schanke where to find her husband.

Fiori tells Stonetree that he knew about Lynn's affair with Gubbins and that it hadn't been a threat to their marriage. But Gubbins had taken the games too far and was going to hurt Lynn. Stonetree correctly surmises that if Lynn hadn't stayed with Fiori, he would have killed her, as well. Nick flies down from above and behind Stonetree, and Fiori shoots several times. Fiori runs out as Nick unties the captain. Nick and Stonetree chase Fiori and converge on him from opposite directions. Fiori shoots Stonetree in the leg, and Nick grabs Fiori from behind.

*The next day, Nick is barely awake when Natalie calls him from the department picnic. She says that he's the only thing missing, but he thinks that it would spoil the fun if he started to smolder between the hot dog and ice cream courses. She replies that it's almost sunset, and with Schanke's help, she persuades him to come down.*

*The sun has set, and Nick arrives. Schanke proudly announces that "Schanke's Scorchers" won the softball game, 11 to zip, with Stonetree pitching a no-hitter. Nick congratulates the captain, who is missing Fiori. Fiori's trial will be in three weeks, but Stonetree is more worried about Lynn. Natalie says that with any luck, Lynn will divorce her husband and start her own life. Nick flashes back to Ilsa and says that it doesn't take luck, but courage. Stonetree leaves, and Nick remarks to Natalie that with all the changes he's seen for women over the years, for some it seems that nothing has changed. Natalie replies that for millions of them it has. Nick says that he has the pleasure and pain of knowing one of them. "Lucky you," she replies, and he gives her a friendly kiss.*

**FATHER FIGURE**
written by Michael Sadowski
directed by Gary Farmer

**Guest Cast**
Chantellese Kent
with

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| Illya Woloshyn | Alan Aarons | Marvin Ishmael | Jocelyne Saint-Denis |
| Marlon Brand | Robert Godin | Jean Stawarz | Randy Butcher |

**Synopsis**

A young girl, Lisa Cooper, steals some comic books from a newsstand and runs off. In her haste, she bumps into a CPA, Marty Angelo, running down an alley. He spills his briefcase, and while Lisa runs down the alley, he stops to collect the papers. A car pulls up, and two men get out. They tell Angelo that he should have checked his arithmetic, then shoot him twice, killing him. When they notice Lisa down the alley and realize that she has seen them, they take off.

Nick arrives and finds another officer, Dell, covering for Schanke, who is attending his daughter's concert. The murder was a professional hit. Angelo must have been skimming from one of his customers. Nick hears a heartbeat and finds Lisa hiding behind a trash bin.

Natalie and Lisa sit in Nick's car, while Nick and Dell stand nearby saying that it's a shame that someone as young as Lisa has to deal with murder. The hit men are watching and take note of Nick's license plate: 35H MV6. Dell remarks that it isn't easy bringing up kids and tells Nick that he should try it. Nick replies that he wants to and that he does think about it sometimes.

Nick flashes back to London during World War II. A young boy, Daniel, steals Janette's purse and runs off, but Nick catches him. LaCroix wants to roast Daniel over a fire, but when Daniel calls Janette a princess, her attitude softens, and she gives him a shilling. He is homeless, and Janette convinces the others to at least take him for a meal.

Lisa's father is an oil rigger who works offshore for a month at a time. Until he can return, Stonetree gives Nick protective custody of Lisa. Carmella DeMarco, who takes care of Lisa while her father is away, tells Nick and Schanke that Lisa is a real handful. Lisa is carrying a lot of guilt because one time she went out into the road, and when her mother went to pull her back, she was hit and killed by a drunk driver. Carmella wishes Nick good luck taking care of Lisa, adding that he'll need it. Nick complains to Schanke that he is not right for this assignment, but Schanke assures him that his instincts will kick in. Schanke adds that after spending a few hours with Lisa, Nick will probably get the biological urge to have some of his own. When Schanke asks Nick how old he is, Nick replies that he is a lot older than he was five minute ago.

With Lisa's help, composite sketches have been made of the killers. Nick is taking Lisa home in an unmarked precinct car because the Caddy is too open. Lisa says that her comic books keep her company when her dad is gone. She thinks that her father is away so much because he hates her. Lisa's favorite comic book character is Janie Jinx, a perpetually unlucky crime-fighter who sounds like a lousy role model to Nick. They are being followed, so Nick tells Lisa to get on the floor of the car. The hit men pull up along side of them and shoot. Nick gets hit in the shoulder, and the hit men speed away. *Lisa asks if Nick has been shot, but he says he's okay.*

Lisa calls Nick's apartment his "fortress of solitude." He agrees that solitude is a good word for it. Nick calls Natalie and tells her that he "caught one." "How bad?" she asks. "Well, you know. I'll live," he responds, and she agrees to come over. Upon seeing all the bottles in Nick's fridge, Lisa asks if he has a drinking problem. Nick calls Schanke and interrupts his favorite TV show, *I Dream of Jeannie.* He tells Schanke about the attempt on their lives. Rubbing his shoulder, Nick asks Schanke to come over to get some ballistic evidence and to bring some food.

Lisa says that she's glad Nick found her, and Nick flashes back to London. Janette enjoys having a little one about the house because it makes them seem like a real family. It's a strange, but sweet sensation, and she likes it. Daniel's mother died in an air raid, and his father ran away when Daniel was small. His only relative is an aunt up north, whom he's never met. Janette and Nick give Daniel a toy fire engine. He thanks and hugs them, and LaCroix walks away, disgusted.

Lisa can tell that Natalie has "got it bad" for Nick and says he should marry her. Schanke arrives with the food, and Nick is repelled by the garlic on the pizza. Schanke is losing badly to Lisa at poker when Natalie arrives. She wants to take a look at Nick's shoulder, and he tells Schanke that he pulled a muscle. Lisa reports that the perps riddled Nick with bullets and says that Nick isn't afraid of anything. Schanke thinks Nick might be afraid of marriage and children.

*Upstairs, Natalie examines Nick's wound and is surprised to find it still open. This indicates that Nick's metabolism is changing, and they might be seeing shades of mortality. Natalie says that the program must be working, adding that Nick can now see himself in the mirror. "Yeah, only sometimes," he replies. The "low fat, zero cholesterol, no sodium, absolutely no flavor" artificial blood that Natalie has given Nick must be working.* When Natalie hits a nerve while extracting the bullet, Nick feels pain, which is another indicator that his condition is improving. Nick tells Natalie that he's enjoying the baby-sitting duty, even though he's afraid of it. If mortality is his future, maybe a family of his own is possible. Nick flashes back to London, where LaCroix suggests that they keep Daniel because it would make Janette happy. LaCroix feels that it would be an interesting experiment to bring across someone so young. Nick calls LaCroix deranged and says that he wants no part of it.

As Natalie and Schanke leave, Nick gives Schanke the bullet, claiming that he dug it out of the upholstery. Nick puts Lisa to bed and tells her that she shouldn't blame herself for Angelo's death any more than she should blame herself for her mother's. Lisa worries that the killers will find her, but Nick promises to protect her. Nick flashes back to London, where he gives Daniel some money and convinces him, through hypnotism, to run for his life.

The next morning, Lisa shakes her head in disapproval when she finds Nick asleep on the sofa with two "wine" bottles on the coffee table. *She helps herself to cold pizza for breakfast and tastes some of Nick's "wine." It's "gross," so she empties the glass into the sink. She tries to rouse Nick, but he does not respond.* She opens the blinds and amuses herself by reflecting sunlight around the room using a mirror. When she shines the light on Nick's eyes, he starts to smoke and wakes up screaming. Nick, in the vampire state, locks himself in the bathroom, howling in pain, as Lisa keeps apologizing from outside the door. Nick rinses his eyes, then collapses in pain, yelling that he is blind. Lisa retreats upstairs and throws herself on Nick's bed.

In a flashback, Daniel welcomes Nick home with glowing eyes and bared fangs. LaCroix just laughs.

At the police station, Schanke talks to Lisa's father and asks whether poker is the best thing to have taught her. Mr. Cooper says that it was just something that they could do together.

The killers have obtained Nick's address by tracing his license plate. Nick, still blinded, hears them on the roof and calls to Lisa, but she won't answer him. He locates the phone, but the line is dead. When Lisa finally answers, he tells her to stay still. Suddenly, a hole is blasted through Nick's door. Lisa screams, and Nick flies up and hovers near the ceiling as one of the hit men enter. When the hit man takes a shot at Lisa, Nick flies down, tackles him, then throws him through the glass block window. The second killer crashes down through the skylight.

Schanke tells Lisa's father that he is missing the best years of his daughter's life and that he should be there for her more often. An officer informs Schanke that an explosion has been reported at 101 Gateway Lane - Nick's address.

Nick flies up and throws the killer over the railing of the loft and down to the living room floor, rendering the man unconscious. Nick then hypnotizes Lisa into forgetting that she saw him fly. Lisa feels responsible for everything because if she hadn't stolen the comic books and been running, she wouldn't have bumped into Angelo and slowed him down. Nick says that Angelo was a thief stealing from thieves. His life killed him, Lisa didn't. Also, the drunk driver who killed her mother was responsible, not Lisa.

Lisa and her father reunite at Nick's apartment. He apologizes for not being there for her and says that they should have a serious talk about whether or not he should go back to his job. Lisa leaves her comic books behind, but wants her father to take her back to pay for them. She has her own money now, since a nice detective taught her to play poker.

♪♪("FATHER FIGURE - Nick's Lullaby to Lisa" is on the *Forever Knight Soundtrack.*)

**SPIN DOCTOR**
written by Michael Sadowski
directed by Leon Marr

**Guest Cast**
Lisa Howard
Dixie Seatle as "Barbara Norton"
with

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| Barry Flatman | Christa Daniel | Brenda Kamino | Sandi Ross |
| Scott Walker | Robert Morelli | Michael Reynolds | Chantal Craig |
| Deborah Lobban | Anita La Selva | Timothy MacDonald | Ron Bulied |
| Patrick McKenna | | | |

**Synopsis**

Mayoral candidates Clifford Hiatt and Judge Barbara Norton have set up their campaign headquarters at opposite ends of the Hotel Percival Convention Center. While bathing in his room at the hotel, freelance journalist Gilbert Reeves watches television coverage of the campaign. He is electrocuted when someone tosses the small TV into the tub.

While investigating, Nick finds a medallion among Reeves's belongings, one side of which reads: "Make Luck," the other reads: "Steer Faith." Reporters learn of the murder and converge on the hotel to get the candidates' views on crime in the city. Amid the flash of the light bulbs, Nick flashes back the 1950's, when he was accused of being a "dirty communist" and a "lousy red." Schanke, who supports Hiatt, and Natalie, who supports Norton, bicker, annoying Nick.

Reeves's fiancée, Mona Wayan, tells the detectives that Reeves was working on a big deal that was supposed to make them a lot of money, but she doesn't know any more than that. She confirms that Reeves was a junior alderman in Ottawa ten years ago. Nick has found papers indicating that Reeves was working on the Rothwiler Industries scandal. Stonetree tells the detectives to keep a lid on the investigation and to offer "no comment" to reporters. According to the hotel's phone logs, Reeves had been in contact with Frank Titus of the National Intruder.

At the morgue, Natalie and Schanke continue the debate. Natalie reminds Schanke that Hiatt was involved in the Rothwiler probe, but Schanke claims that nothing was ever proven.

Schanke becomes a volunteer worker for Hiatt's campaign. *He calls Myra from campaign headquarters because he can't remember whether or not he is registered to vote.*

Titus tells Nick that Reeves contacted him about a sex scandal involving a mayoral candidate, but he never said which candidate it was. When told that the National Intruder's motto is: "The truth will out," Nick flashes back to being told the same thing in a subcommittee hearing. Titus suggests that whomever Reeves was sleeping with probably knows all the details.

Mona is retiring for the night in her hotel room. She cries and looks at a picture of herself and Reeves. She then eats one of the mints that have been left on the pillow. Unfortunately, it has been laced with cyanide. Nick arrives, but it is too late. Mona dies in his arms.

At the morgue, Nick chastises both Schanke and Natalie for their campaign work, saying that they are biased in the investigation. He flashes back to his own hearing, where the investigators won't listen to the truth, even though that is what they claim to want. He tells Schanke and Natalie that they have to decide whether to be zealous, or thorough.

On his computer at home, Nick reviews an article on Hiatt written by Reeves, then reviews a Chicago Herald article on his own hearing. Nick, then known as Nicholas Girard, was the night curator and associate professor of the archeological museum at the University of Chicago.

Schanke snoops through the records at Hiatt's campaign headquarters and calls Nick. It had been alleged that in exchange for special consideration, Hiatt tried to change zoning so that Rothwiler could develop protected land. Rothwiler's name is nowhere to be found on the list of Hiatt's political contributors, however. The allegations against Hiatt were never proven. Nick once again flashes back to his own hearing. He insists that the accusations against him are totally without merit.

A fingernail fragment covered with blood was pulled out of a vent on the TV, and Nick calls the coroner's office for the results of the DNA tests. Grace tells him that the tests have not been done yet because the sample is in Natalie's evidence locker, and Natalie has gone to a Norton rally. At the rally, Nick tries to pull Natalie away from reporters, but she reveals that she supports Norton and offers "no comment" when asked if the focus of the investigation is on Hiatt.

In Natalie's car, Nick scolds her. They are followed and forced off the road into a parked car. Natalie's car flips into the air, bursts into flames, and lands upside down. Nick escapes, pulls Natalie out, and they run to safety as her car explodes. Natalie is convinced that this was Hiatt's response to her implication that the investigation was focusing on him. Nick feels that Hiatt would have to be an idiot to try to kill someone who had said that in front of three television cameras.

At her campaign headquarters, Norton urges her campaign manager, Laura Neal, to call it a night, but Laura refuses. She will not rest until she gets Norton into City Hall.

Natalie's DNA tests confirm that a woman killed Reeves.

Hiatt holds a press conference to deal with the rumors that he is under police investigation. He urges voters not to let the taint of scandal sway their opinion. In a flashback to his own hearing, Nick is asked why he keeps bottles of animal blood in his refrigerator. He will not answer and is called a monster. Feeling that he has already been tried, convicted, and sentenced, Nick may have no choice but to resign his position at the university.

Laura worries that Hiatt's press conference will garner sympathy for him. She urges Norton to hold one, as well, and play it "humble" and "humanitarian," urging voters not to hold anything against Hiatt until the investigation is complete. This tactic should sway voters Norton's way.

Nick has learned that an old, out-of-service phone number in Reeves's book belonged to Norton's private apartment ten years ago. Schanke has found Reeves's unfinished Hiatt/Rothwiler exposé and the draft of another article on the campaign. In the campaign article, Reeves misspelled "from" as "form" six out of ten times - a bad typing habit that does appear in the Rothwiler exposé. The exposé was obviously planted by the killer to throw suspicion onto Hiatt.

At home, Nick reviews videotapes of the campaign and finds one in which Norton pins a medallion like Reeves's onto Laura's jacket. He calls Schanke and says it's time to switch sides.

Schanke poses as a telephone repairman at Norton's press conference. Norton urges voters not to be influenced by the gossipmongering of the press. Before the investigation, the contest was being played out on a level field, and she wants to level that field once again. Nick spots Laura in a videotape with a bandage on one of her thumbs. Norton admits that she had an affair with Reeves some years ago. Laura is obviously distressed at Norton's public admission and reproaches her in private. Norton did what she thought was right, but Laura accuses Norton of betraying her and the city. Laura pulls a gun and says that she won't let Norton give up. Nick calls Schanke and tells him not to take his eyes off Norton because she could be in danger. He has found some videotape that makes a pretty good case against Laura.

Laura forces Norton into a car and promises to take her to City Hall. Schanke tries to stop her, but she shoots at him. Schanke commandeers a taxi and takes off after them, while Nick follows from the air. On the steps of City Hall, Laura admits that she killed Reeves because he was going to blackmail Norton. She killed Mona because Mona might have been in on it also. Nick emerges from behind a pillar and tells Laura to drop the gun, but she won't. Several police cars pull up, and Schanke, driving the taxi, crashes into one of them, distracting Laura long enough for Nick to rush over and grab the gun. Laura collapses into tears, and Norton hugs her.

While looking through a box of artifacts in Nick's apartment, Natalie admires a figurine from the Paleolithic period. Nick tells her that it's a very, very important piece. Coming across a nameplate, she asks if it, too, is a very, very important piece. "Indeed," he replies. "You are looking at a desk nameplate taken from the Chicago area, circa 1954. It represents the end of a significant period in the ongoing transient life of a certain indigenous vampire." Natalie knows how Nick feels about archeology and says that he must have hated leaving it behind. Nick says that he had some remarkable students, and he thinks that he was actually making a difference. Natalie doesn't doubt it for a moment. Nick says that it's never pleasant moving on, particularly when you have no choice. On TV, Norton makes her concession speech. Nick says that she was tried and convicted by the press, a trial you can never hope to win. The coverage switches to Hiatt's victory party, where Schanke is dancing and celebrating in front of the podium. Natalie says that Schanke is a terrible winner.

**DYING FOR FAME**
written by Shelley Goldstein
directed by Jon Cassar

**Guest Cast**
Tracey Cook
Richard Eden
with

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| Nahanni Johnstone | Chandra Galasso | Dani Elwell | Hal Eisen |
| Madhuri Bhatia | Gerry Mendicino | Elizabeth Harpur | Theo Brand |
| Mitra Lovett | Carolyn Stewart | Tara Charendoff | Jeremy Harris |
| Judy Sinclair | Alan Feiman | Kevin Rushton | Jonathan Hartman |

**Synopsis**

A music video of rock star Rebecca's latest hit, "Fan Kill," plays on the TV while a man and woman make love. The man's tattoo reads: "Rebecca fan for life." The woman slips a knife out from under the pillow and repeatedly stabs the man. It's the same knife used in the video.

The next morning, Rebecca's manager, Marty Benson, is going crazy because Rebecca has not shown up for rehearsal. He gets one of the backup singers, Wendy, who looks remarkably similar to Rebecca, to stand in for her.

Rebecca's video has been running 24 hours a day as she is about to kick off her 52-city tour. The video, in which Rebecca sings that her fans must die, is controversial and has brought death threats. Sixteen community church groups want to shut the concert down, while 100,000 fans want the show to go on. Stonetree estimates that half of those fans will want to take a shot at Rebecca. Stonetree has so many cops handling crowd control that he calls in the night shift early.

*Nick and Natalie are having lunch in a fifties-style diner, which is also occupied by, among others, a punk, a man in a cowboy hat, a teenager in a fifties-style skirt, sweater, and bobbysocks, two ladies at the counter, and a young girl. The waitress sets a plate of French fries in front of Nick, and Natalie warns that he might be overdoing it. He pours ketchup on the fries and declares that he is about to join the ranks of humanity. He picks up a fry and realizes that it is covered with blood. He looks around and notices that the young girl's and teenager's hands are covered with blood, the ladies at the counter are drinking blood, and blood drips from the mouths of the punk and the man in the cowboy hat. The waitress, Janette, fills Nick's coffee cup with blood and urges him to drink up. The cook, LaCroix, whose mouth is also dripping with blood, says that Nick knows it's what he really wants. Janette and LaCroix bare their fangs and laugh at Nick.*

*Nick wakes up in a blood sweat.* Schanke calls and leaves a message saying that Stonetree is sweating blood and duty calls, even though he knows that Nick is much too cool to come out and play during the daytime. Rebecca is also awakened by a ringing telephone. Marty's assistant, Bree, warns her that Marty is borderline hysterical and says that a car is waiting in front of the hotel. Nick and Rebecca drag themselves reluctantly from their respective beds. Rebecca notices the man lying motionless on the bed and mumbles, "Thank you, Santa, but what I really wanted was ice skates." She pokes the man and tells him, whatever his name is, to please get out. She cannot remember anything of the previous night. Nick drinks his breakfast and wonders, "What time is it? What day is it? What century is it?" Rebecca rummages through several liquor bottles to find one that is not empty. When she finds one, she drinks her breakfast, as well.

Having wrapped himself up in a coat, gloves, hat, and sunglasses, Nick drives to the police station. When he lifts his hand, a bit of his wrist gets exposed to the sunlight and starts to smoke. When Schanke comes out, Nick motions for him to drive, then slides over to the passenger seat. Schanke thinks Nick is overreacting to the ozone thing, then asks if Nick has been to a barbecue.

At the hotel, Natalie notes that Billy Conway was stabbed in nice, neat little rows. He has been dead about twelve hours, and there are no signs of a struggle.

Nick and Schanke go backstage at Rebecca's concert. Schanke tries to impress a girl by telling her about a Bachman-Turner Overdrive concert. She remarks that her father had a BTO album. Nick asks Schanke if he's feeling his age. Schanke replies, "Never," then wonders if Mick Jagger ever feels old. Nick doesn't know about Mick, but he sure as hell sometimes does.

While Rebecca sings "Dark Side of the Glass," Nick envisions various happy scenes: a father and son playing catch, a family having a picnic, and a couple walking along a beach. In each case, when the people notice Nick, they become frightened and turn away, shutting him out.

After the concert, Rebecca tells Nick and Schanke that she knows nothing about Billy. She claims to have gone dancing the previous night, but was drunk and doesn't remember where she was. She went out in disguise, so no one will be able to confirm her story.

Nick doesn't think Rebecca is guilty and argues with Schanke, but Stonetree informs them that she has confessed to the murder. Reporters and fans descend on the police station. A man hands Nick an envelope addressed to "whoever's in charge," which contains Polaroid snapshots of a woman dancing. Schanke remarks that by morning, it will be Woodstock out there, and Nick wistfully repeats, "Woodstock." Schanke wonders if Nick was there, then realizes that he would have been too young. When Schanke leaves, Nick says, "Actually, I was with the Grateful Dead."

Nick dreams of Woodstock and LaCroix telling him it's time to rock. Nick levitates above the stage, with eyes glowing and fangs bared, while "Fan Kill" plays. He sees the woman from the Polaroids in the audience. Nick wakes up on his couch and looks again at the Polaroids. He flies to Rebecca's hotel and finds in her closet the dress, wig, and glasses from the photographs.

Schanke listens to heavy metal music and announces that he just doesn't get it. Stonetree offers him a Neil Diamond CD, but Schanke says that's only for emergencies. Nick calls Schanke and tells him that someone was trying to provide an alibi for Rebecca. He wants Schanke to get the Polaroids to a lab for an estimated time of exposure and to have Natalie reopen Forensics.

Nick visits Rebecca in her cell. A prisoner was brought in earlier for busking without a permit, and Rebecca traded her sunglasses for his guitar. Nick is impressed by her music, but she says that it won't be on her album, since it's not about sex. She is disillusioned with her life a rock star and asks Nick if he knows "what it is like to watch yourself being slowly immortalized? To watch the life being slowly sucked from you. The things that make you real ... gone." She says that you can try to fight it, but it's far too powerful and seductive. She always wanted to be famous and warns Nick to be very careful what he wishes for. Marty comes in with an entourage and tells Rebecca that she is being released, thanks to Nick's having reopened the case.

Nick is alone in the cell and envisions LaCroix, in a policeman's uniform, congratulating him because he's going to be released ... if he's sure that it's what he really wants. Nick is sure, but LaCroix laughs hysterically and tells him that it was all a joke. There is no release.

Stonetree gives Natalie's report to Nick. Rebecca was cleared because she didn't match either blood type on the knife, although the Polaroids made a pretty good case, as well. The music channel on TV reports that a letter has been sent to "whoever's in charge," promising to vindicate Rebecca's fans.

Backstage before the concert, Wendy visits Rebecca with words of encouragement. The other two backup singers wonder where Wendy is, but it doesn't really matter because tonight's concert is on tape. The concert begins, and while "Fan Kill" is being performed, Nick spots the Polaroid photographer in the audience. Nick reaches the man seconds after the man has taken out a gun and shot the singer. Nick leaves Schanke with the killer, then rushes to the body on stage. He removes his jacket and covers the victim's face.

At the morgue, Natalie is not sure how long she can "sit on this," but Nick pleads with her to go slow on the autopsy and buy him some time.

Nick returns to the now quiet and empty concert hall. He hears a heartbeat backstage and finds Rebecca, who is bound and gagged. She tells him, "It's Wendy," then wonders why anyone would want to be her.

Wendy had killed Billy in hopes of framing Rebecca and replacing her. Rebecca takes advantage of the fact that she is believed to be dead and abandons her life of fame for a life of anonymity. Marty convinces the record company representatives to go along with the ruse. "Call it the Elvis syndrome, the Morrison syndrome." By quitting while she's ahead, she stays ahead, and they can pump out a new "greatest hits" album for every sighting at a 7-Eleven. It's a deal that will last for eternity.

♪♪("Dark Side of the Glass" is on the *Forever Knight Soundtrack.*)

**ONLY THE LONELY**
written by Susan Martin
directed by Michael Levine

**Guest Cast**
Barclay Hope
with

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| Sandi Ross | Karen Racicot | Nancy McClure | Dan Delabbio |
| Nick Johne | Scott Walker | Kent Sheridan | |

**Synopsis**

Jill Fisher's date brings her home. Although she had a nice time, she is reluctant to invite him in. His beeper goes off, and he asks to use her phone to call the hospital. Once inside, he rapes and murders her.

This is the third in a series of similar murders. Nick and Schanke find a copy of Jill's videotape from Singular Interests, a dating service. Natalie defends the use of dating services and admits that she has thought about using one. Schanke offers Myra's matchmaking services, but Natalie declines, asking, "Anyway, who has time for dating?" Schanke says that Nick does and asks what the hell is wrong with him. "Beats me," replies Natalie. "Ask him." As Natalie drives away, Schanke asks Nick, "What is wrong with you, anyway?" Nick reiterates Natalie's sentiments about not having time, but Schanke doesn't buy it.

At the morgue, the staff throws Natalie a surprise party for her 30th birthday. When Schanke tells Nick where he got the piece of birthday cake that he's munching on, Nick is distressed to realize that he completely forgot Nat's birthday. Alone in the morgue after the party, Natalie flashes back to her 28th birthday. The victim of an explosion is brought into the morgue in a body bag. He had tried to stop a gang robbery and had been tossed a pipe bomb. Eddie, the attendant who brought the body in, says that there's no ID and not much of a face left to look at. While Natalie takes a phone call, the blood that had leaked from the body bag is reabsorbed.

Nick and Schanke pay a visit to Elsa Bergen at Singular Interests and learn that Jill hadn't had a date in six months. The other two victims weren't even members.

Natalie comes home to her cat, Sidney. She is out of cat food and suggests that Sidney take her out to dinner for her birthday. Later, while leaving a grocery store, Natalie bumps into Roger Jamison and bloodies his nose. She lends him her scarf to stop the flow of blood. Noticing the cat food that has spilled from her bag, Roger excuses her, saying that she's probably hurrying home to feed her cat before it takes revenge on her drapes. He worries about ruining her scarf, but she says it's okay. She hardly ever gets to ride with the top down, anyway. He says that's a shame. En route to Natalie's to deliver a bunch of daisies, Nick runs into her and Roger. She says that the flowers are beautiful and look like big suns. He gives her a card signed: "With affection, Nick." When he leaves, Natalie tells Roger that Nick is just a friend, and Roger asks if he can meet Sidney sometime. She tells him that "Sidney Lambert" is in the book. Natalie flashes back to unzipping the body bag, revealing Nick's face, and commenting that it is not so bad, not so bad at all.

Schanke visits the morgue to give Natalie the phone number of Myra's friend's brother, Lionel. Natalie kicks him out.

At home, Nick stares at a bottle of blood and flashes back to regaining consciousness on Natalie's examining table. While she is on the phone asking if some mistake has been made, since this guy looks like he just barely cut himself shaving, Nick's wounds heal. He sits up on the table, with fangs bared, eyes glowing, and growling. As Nick feeds on a bag of blood, Natalie demands to know who and what he is. Nick is brought back to the present by the ringing phone. Stonetree has Elsa Bergen in his office. It turns out that the other two victims had been members of the club, but they weren't in the computer because their memberships had expired. The victims hadn't had any dates in common, but Elsa tells the detectives about a former employee, George Bomphrey, who had worked on the computer and who was fired for sexually harassing a female employee.

Natalie and Roger stroll through a park on a lunch date, and she tells him it's been a while since she's spent any time in the sun. She flashes back to Nick's revelation in the morgue that he is a vampire. She touches his face and finds it cold. "I'm dead," he tells her, but she disagrees.

The lunch date has lasted all day. As Roger returns Natalie to her apartment, her pager goes off, and she invites him in. They are kissing as she opens the door to find Nick waiting inside. He'd just tried to page

her. He was worried about where she was, and they argue in loud whispers behind a screen separating the kitchen from the living room. Roger says that he should hit the road, and Natalie smacks Nick loudly in the chest. Emerging from the kitchen, Nick's arm possessively around her shoulders, Natalie insists that it is purely work related. She pushes away from Nick and walks Roger to the door, where they kiss good-bye. Nick feels that Natalie was being a little too familiar for a first date and says that he feels protective towards her. "Protective, like towards a sister, protective?" she asks. She seems disappointed when he answers, "Yeah, like towards a sister, yeah." Stonetree calls to inform Nick that a fourth victim has been found.

It turns out that George Bomphrey was in jail when two of the four murders took place. Nick uses his powers of persuasion, however, to get George to admit that he sold some files to a man driving a white van with a picture of a flower on the side.

Natalie can tell by the latest victim's fingernails that the killer must have some pretty heavy-duty scratches. Grace forgot to get a fourth sample to use as a control in Jill Fisher's DNA tests, so Natalie gives her the scarf with Roger's blood that she was taking to be cleaned. Nick comes by to apologize for ruining Natalie's evening. Although she claims to have forgiven him, she doesn't act like it. He says that he cares for her and doesn't want to stand in the way of her happiness. He tells her that he's glad she's seeing someone. Natalie says that Nick has made himself perfectly clear, and she is obviously upset as she dismisses him, claiming that she has a lot of work to do.

In a flashback, *Nick and Natalie pass on the street. He is testing her to see if she has forgotten, but she hasn't. Apparently, she can't be hypnotized.* She is not afraid and says that fear is based on ignorance. She would rather try to understand. *Nick says that she's a unique woman, but she says no, she's a scientist. Nick tells her that science won't help her understand the hell of an existence that he's locked himself into.* Natalie offers to help, but he says that no one can help him. He tells her that his immorality is a curse, a fall from grace, and that evil is a metaphysical condition. Natalie counters that he is not evil, since he ended up on her table because he tried to help people. She is sure that his condition is a physical one. When asked what she would expect in return, Natalie answers that solving a puzzle is its own reward for her. Returning to the present, Natalie calls herself a liar, then calls Roger and sets a date for the following night.

Driving Natalie's car, Roger tells her that she needs a vacation and that he is taking her to the tropics. *Natalie tells Roger that he is good for her, and he responds in kind.* They arrive at Humber Nurseries, where white vans with flowers on the sides are parked out front. When asked what an attorney is doing with the keys to a nursery, he says that it's owned by one of his clients.

In a panic, Grace informs Nick that a genetic match has been found, and Natalie is with the killer - Roger Jamison. She has also learned from the provincial bar that Roger is not an attorney.

Natalie and Roger enjoy a picnic in tropical surroundings. At her apartment, Nick finds a delivery box from Humber Nurseries. Natalie flashes back to feeling Nick's cold face and Nick telling her that he is dead, and she snuggles closer to Roger. As they kiss, she flashes back to Nick telling her not to get too close to him - he doesn't want to kill her, but might anyway. Roger unbuttons her blouse, and she pulls back, feeling that they are going too fast. He loses his temper and pushes her down, then quickly apologizes and wants to start over. He takes off his jacket, and when Natalie sees the scratches on his arm, she takes off. Running blindly through the nursery, she trips over a hose and is knocked unconscious when she falls. Nick crashes through the ceiling of the greenhouse, grabs Roger, and sends him flying through the glass ceiling. Roger lands in a pile of fertilizer. As Nick picks Natalie up, she revives and momentarily panics. When she realizes that it's Nick holding her, she collapses into tears in his arms, and he holds her closely.

At the precinct, Natalie is praised for helping to catch the killer, and Stonetree reminds her of the saying about "one bad apple." She is about to leave for a vacation in the desert when Nick pulls her back and asks if she has any idea how worried he was about her. She does. They almost kiss, but embrace instead. Nick then kisses her on her forehead. When Schanke tells her that Lionel is coming to the station, she quickly departs, saying that with her luck, he'd be related to aliens. As Natalie leaves, a tall and very handsome man introduces himself to Schanke as Lionel.

**UNREALITY TV**
written by Michael Sadowski
directed by Clay Borris

**Guest Cast**
Laura Robinson
Jason Blicker
with
Greg Spottiswood Daniel MacIver Julie Wildman Rodger Barton
Patricia Foley

**Synopsis**

A reporter from Cop Watch, Tawny Teller, and her cameraman, Bobby, are riding along with Nick and Schanke. Schanke is reveling in the attention when they are called to the scene of a mugging. While Schanke tries to save the victim's life, Nick chases down the suspect, followed by Tawny and Bobby. Bobby takes cover behind a parked car and shoots video as the suspect fires at Nick. Nick, with glowing eyes and bared fangs, pursues the suspect into an alley, but can't use his vampire powers to catch him because Tawny and Bobby have come up behind him.

During the autopsy, Tawny and Bobby both get queasy and run out of the room. Natalie remarks that the sight of blood does strange things to some people. "Tell me about it," replies Nick. As Natalie extracts a bullet, Nick flashes back to his time as a doctor in the Civil War. He uses his powers of hypnotism to release a patient from pain. Sullivan, a photographer at the camp, requests that Nick take a look at some strange photographs.

The videotape is reviewed to find that the muzzle flash illuminated the killer's face with each shot. Using a computer to enhance and enlarge the image, Bobby and Tawny are able to provide the detectives with a clear picture of the killer, which is printed out as a snapshot. Nick apologizes for having been against the ride-along. *As he is leaving, Nick passes Danny, a studio technician. He pauses and studies the technician, then shakes his head and continues out.*

Nick compares the killer's picture to a book of mug shots and flashes back to the Civil War. Sullivan's photographs of a battle the previous night show LaCroix flying down and feeding on a fallen soldier. Sullivan asks if it is an angel, and Nick affirms that it is the angel of death.

Tawny continues to review the videotape. Using computer enhancements, she gets a clear picture of Nick getting shot.

In a flashback, LaCroix visits Nick in the medical tent. It's been a while since they've seen each other - since the Crimea or the War of 1812. Nick accuses LaCroix of following carnage like a vulture. LaCroix replies that he doesn't care for the conflict, but loves the free food. When asked if he abstains, Nick replies that he does not prey on misery, but takes only what sustenance he needs so that he can work. "You warm my dead heart, Nicholas," LaCroix says sarcastically. LaCroix knows that Sullivan has pictures of him, and Nick knows what that means. Nick tells LaCroix that "they" are not needed and to tell "them" that he has taken care of it. LaCroix knows that Nick has not yet taken care of it. Nick can't hide his thoughts from LaCroix because they had "skipped" those lessons. Nick knows the code in these matters and must handle the photographer, or the Enforcers will.

In his apartment, Nick hears the elevator and hides a "wine" bottle under a sofa cushion. He is nowhere to be seen when Schanke and the news team enter, and Schanke is startled when Nick suddenly comes up from behind him. Nick would have appreciated a phone call, but Schanke and the others wanted to capture the "reality of the man." Bobby looks around the apartment and comments that it's a little dark. Nick sharply warns him not to touch the blinds. Schanke explains that Nick has a skin disease and is very, very sensitive to the light. Tawny thinks that a cop with a disability might make a good angle. She asks if he's a little sore and explains that she reviewed the videotape and could swear that he took a hit. Nick remarks that he seems to be in one piece now. Schanke shows Nick a sketch of a suspect which was faxed by the Vancouver P.D. and looks like their picture of the killer. Apparently, the killer is a "tourist."

While checking out motels, Schanke continues to ham it up. In response to a question from Tawny, he says that he's known Nick about a year. When asked if Nick seems eccentric, Schanke reels off a list: the skin

condition, he only works nights, he has no family, he shies away from social functions, he's never bought Schanke a meal, and he never seems to eat - not even donuts. Schanke sarcastically concludes that, no, Nick doesn't seem eccentric. Tawny asks if Nick has ever been shot in the line of duty, and Schanke answers that he hasn't in this force, but Nick never seems to bring up the past. Nick is not what you would call a "sharer." Schanke resumes his on-camera performance. When told to tone it down, he dramatically begins, "This is the city ...

The killer's picture has gone out all over town. That night, Schanke's shift is over, and although Tawny says that he should go home, he insists on riding along to check out a lead at a motel by the lake. They are told by the desk clerk that Morris Peters from Vancouver is staying in room 213 - the honeymoon suite. Upon their arrival, Peters shoots through the door. Bobby gets hit in the leg by a ricocheted bullet. Schanke gets Bobby out and goes to call for backup. Tawny picks up the video camera and follows Nick, who has burst into the room, only to find that Peters has escaped over the balcony. Nick vaults over the balcony wall, flies down, and tackles the fleeing Peters. He looks back and sees that Tawny has caught him on videotape.

At the station, Schanke reports that Bobby has a shattered tibia, but will be okay. Nick tells Tawny that they need to talk, but Schanke pulls her away for the fun part - paperwork. On TV, a promotion for the next episode of Cop Watch airs, and Nick flashes back to the Civil War. He tries to hypnotize Sullivan into destroying the photographs and forgetting what he has seen, but Sullivan resists Nick's suggestions.

Nick visits Tawny at the studio. He tries to hypnotize her into destroying the tapes and forgetting what she has seen, but she resists and accuses Nick of doing something to her mind. Tawny leaves, and Nick flashes back once again. He finds Sullivan dead and the Enforcers waiting for him with a stake. LaCroix tells the Enforcers that Nick has no part in it and that the fault is his. Nick is allowed to leave. *The Enforcers set fire to Sullivan's equipment, and LaCroix departs also.*

Nick visits Janette, who tells him that if he had hung around with his own kind more this past century, he would have known that as long as someone possesses empirical evidence, he or she cannot be made to forget. The tape must be destroyed soon, or the Enforcers will come.

Schanke decides to follow his dream, and he gives Star Search Talent Agency a call.

Tawny shows Danny, the night technician, the tape of Nick flying. She has made a copy and hidden the original. No one else has seen it. As she is about to leave, she finds that Nilson, the night watchman, seems to be sleeping on the job. Elevator doors open behind her, revealing two Enforcers baring their fangs and growling. As they chase her through the building, she runs into Nick. He admits that he's the same kind of creature as the Enforcers, who are sworn to protect their secret and to keep the world from discovering the knowledge of their existence. If Tawny doesn't do what he says, they'll both be killed. Pursued by the Enforcers, Tawny tells Nick that the tape is hidden and that no one has seen it except Danny. He tells her that Danny is a vampire, to which she replies, "Danny? He seemed so nice. You think you know somebody." The tape is hidden in a safe, and Tawny fumbles with the combination lock. Nick finally rips the door off. Holding both the original and the copy, Tawny says that it's the biggest story of her career, and she can't turn the tapes over. The Enforcers burst in. One throws Nick across the room, and the other grabs Tawny, who drops the tapes and tries to fend him off. Tawny is about to be killed when Nick grabs the tapes and thrusts them into the Enforcer's hand. Tawny swears that those are the only tapes, and Nick tells her to surrender her will to him, to submit. He hypnotizes her into forgetting what she has seen. One Enforcer approaches Nick with a stake, but Nick tells them, "It's done. It's over." The other Enforcer grabs the wrist of the one with the stake, and they leave.

*Tawny wakes up at the control board in the studio. Nick asks how the show is going, but she's forgotten where she left off. "Good," Nick mumbles. She is about to say something else, but Nick has disappeared. Nick encounters Danny in the hallway and tells him that it's time to move on. They bare their fangs and growl at each other, but Danny finally backs down and leaves.*

Nick hosts a party to watch Cop Watch. Schanke signs Bobby's cast, "Show business is my life, henceforth. Yours in crime prevention, Don Schanke." As a memento of their time together on the front lines, Tawny has given Nick a book, A *Hundred Years of Combat Photography.* The book contains a photograph of Sullivan standing beside his camera. When the Cop Watch episode airs, Schanke's agent calls. Schanke has been dropped.

**FEEDING THE BEAST**
written by Alison Bingeman
directed by Richard Lewis

**Guest Cast**
Carrie-Anne Moss
with

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| Marina Anderson | Hadley Obodiac | Diego Chambers | Peter Messaline |
| Julie Armstrong | Louis Wrightman | Ian Deakin | Christine Reeves |
| Helene Rousse | | | |

**Synopsis**

A man and woman are kissing in a dark room. He stops and says he can't do this anymore. It's sick, and besides, he's first up. She says they'll get someone else, but he leaves. Another woman enters and asks if that was Skip's voice that she heard. The first woman insists that she was alone. The second woman doesn't believe her, but says to come on, the meeting is starting.

At a twelve-step meeting, an alcoholic, Skip Holling, praises the program and his sponsor, Monica. Later, he finds a bottle of liquor in his car. A gun is fired, and the bullet shatters the bottle and hits Skip. A lighter is ignited and tossed into the car, which bursts into flames.

While investigating, Schanke bums a cigarette from a member of the group, Angie W. Monica Howard, Skip's sponsor and the only member to give a full name, tells him it's a nasty, nasty habit. She won't tell Schanke what her addiction is, but he hopes it's balding, married men.

At home on vacation, Nick is clearly distraught as he slaps paint onto a canvas, which is almost totally black, broken only by bits of gray. He fights it, but finally grabs a bottle of blood, pulls the cork out with his teeth, and drinks. Schanke calls and asks if Nick has any bad habits.

Stonetree wants Nick to go undercover at the twelve-step program. Nick asks Natalie if she thinks the program can help him give up blood. She replies that it wouldn't hurt to give it a shot.

At the meeting, Monica likens an addiction to "feeding the beast," which demands to be fed over and over. Nick flashes back to various episodes in his life as a vampire. He meets Monica, then Hillary, who says not to feel pressured to join this particular group. She seems to disapprove when another member, Henry, tells his sponsor, Monica, that they will talk later. Hillary tries to steer Nick to Angie, but Monica gives him her number and says to call if he needs any help. The first step is to admit to someone he loves and trusts that he is powerless before his addiction.

After the meeting, someone smashes Henry in the face with a brick, then sticks a syringe in his arm. Both murders involved the victim's choice of drug and were probably committed by the same person. Natalie reports that both men had sex shortly before death. Nick gives Stonetree the meeting's sign-in sheet, with the members' last names and phone numbers, although he feels a bit like Judas. Nick admits to Schanke that he is an addict. Schanke laughs it off, then remembers the bottles of "red wine" in Nick's refrigerator. He dismisses it and assures Nick that he is perfectly fine. "So much for step number one," Nick says to Natalie, who wonders what step number two is.

At home, Nick pours bottle after bottle of blood down the drain. *Later, in a dream, Nick stands at the lectern and admits that he's an addict. It's the hunger that drives him. The lectern shakes violently and bleeds. He admits that he drinks blood so that he can live forever. LaCroix enters, carrying Monica, and asks what is so terrible about that? Monica urges him not to listen to LaCroix and says she can help him. LaCroix tells him to listen to his hunger. Nick finally yields to his thirst and feeds on Monica. Nick wakes up in a blood sweat. He goes down to the kitchen and combines whatever drops of blood remain in the bottles, trying to get enough to drink.* He almost drinks, but hurls the bottle against the wall, instead. He reaches desperately for the phone.

In a diner, Nick pours ketchup on French fries and is amazed that he can eat some. When asked about Skip and Henry, Monica says that there is a rule against romance between sponsors and members. Taking Nick's hand, she says it takes time to build trust, and she is there for him.

At the station, Schanke denies having a problem with cigarettes and says that Nick has no problem, either. Natalie is stunned by Nick's rosy cheeks and the fact that he ate French fries. He says the program is working, but she warns him not to get his hopes up too high. She reports that the killer is right-handed, and there were identical skin cells under the fingernails of both victims.

At the next meeting, Nick and Angie concur about what a great sponsor Monica is. Nick stands and admits he's an addict. It's been three days since he stopped using, and he's still alive.

Later, Monica admires Nick's "work in progress," which is now mostly gray, with streaks of red. When Nick resists her sexual advances, she becomes infuriated and tells him that recovery is just the space between fixes. There is no magic bullet and no cure. She will get relief, with or without his help. She leaves, and Nick envisions LaCroix in the loft, saying that Nick is wasting his time and asking where the last bottle is. Schanke calls and leaves a message saying that Monica is a "love junkie" and has been arrested three times for giving massages at the Windsor Arms Hotel. Stonetree wants Nick to bring her in. As Nick drinks from a bottle that was hidden in the fireplace, Schanke apologizes for his earlier remarks about addictions. Nick's his partner, and he'll take him any way he can get him.

Nick drinks heavily at the Raven. He has rejected humanity and is "revamping" himself. Janette calls Schanke to come and get him, then stops Nick from killing a girl in the back room. The girl runs out just as Schanke and Natalie arrive. Janette is frightened by Nick and backs away from him. She advises Schanke and Natalie not to go back there because Nick is dangerous and has had too much to drink. Natalie insists, and Janette tells her, "It's your neck." Schanke calls out, "Hey, Nick, whatever you're going through, I'm with you, buddy. Hang in there." Nick rejects Natalie's help and wonders what secrets she is hiding, what kind of betrayal. Is she writing a medical paper on him, or just seeking some dark sexual thrill? He says that Monica is a killer, like himself - an irredeemable, uncontrollable beast. Remembering that he's supposed to bring her in, Nick crashes through a window and flies out. He will show Monica what backsliding really is.

Nick finds Monica kneeling by a dead body in a room at the hotel. She cries and insists that she didn't do it. As the body is brought out, Nick tells Natalie that as soon as he walked in, the cop in him took over. He apologizes for the pain he caused her, and she forgives him. No one said it would be easy. Clutching her hand to his heart, he breathes a sigh of relief. Natalie reports that the knife slashes on tonight's victim were made by the killer's right hand. When Schanke asks Nick how he got there so fast, Nick doesn't answer, but apologizes for his earlier behavior.

With her left hand, Monica lists every twelve-step member she's had a relationship with.

At a twelve-step meeting, Nick admits that while he is an addict, he is also a cop. He says that there is a killer in the group and urges anyone with information to call him.

Nick is adding streaks of yellow to his now mostly red painting when Hillary calls. Nick tells Schanke that he's meeting Hillary at the twelve-step center and to send backup if he doesn't hear from him in twenty minutes. At *the center, Nick finds Angie's dead body with a note that reads: "LOVE ME" taped to her jacket. Monica arrives and says that Angie had said to meet her there. A masked figure shoots at Nick, and Nick sends Monica out to call 911. A second shot is fired and hits Nick.* In the main meeting room, Hillary stands at the lectern and admits that she is addicted to looking out for her sister, Monica, who is now seated next to her, very upset. As Nick approaches, Hillary fires again. Nick holsters his gun and slowly walks to the podium. Monica was hurt badly as a child, and Hillary couldn't help her then, but she can help her now. Schanke arrives with backup as Hillary explains that all the others took advantage of Monica's need for comfort. Nick gets the gun away from Hillary, and Monica hugs her before the police take her away. A policeman offers a cigarette to Schanke, who replies, "You gotta be kidding."

At Nick's apartment, Natalie admires his painting, which is now mostly yellow and very cheerful. Schanke arrives, and Nick implies that he knows nothing about art, claiming that Schanke has a velvet painting of Elvis in his locker. Schanke studies Nick's painting and offers the following critique: "Interesting. Very interesting. Mm-hmm. I'm seeing a kind of subtextual renaissance of the ideal. The playful use of light and shadow, if I'm not mistaken, portends almost a ... a stylistic opening, no, unfolding, with the realms of psychological expression. The ... the nature of self acceptance, the ... the journey from darkness into light, from doubt into ..." "Hope?" Nick and Natalie suggest in unison. "Exactly," Schanke continues. "The ... the destruction of the existential and, I'm delighted to see, the triumph of the humanistic." Nick looks satisfied with the appraisal, but Natalie looks skeptical. Schanke explains, "Myra keeps a copy of *The Andy Warhol Diaries* in the john." Now Natalie looks satisfied, and Nick looks crestfallen.

**IF LOOKS COULD KILL**
written by Naomi Janzen
directed by Michael Levine

**Guest Cast**
Jennifer Dale
Terri Hawkes
with

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| Allison Hossack | Kymberley Huffman | Sharolyn Sparrow | Mark Kehr |
| Bill Vibert | Gwen Park | David Spooner | Debra Winter |
| Shanya Vaughan | Deni Delory | Chuck Roe | Desmond Campbell |
| Louis Taylor | | | |

**Synopsis**

Norma Dean tries to purchase some blush at the cosmetics counter of a department store. Rather than ring up the sale, the saleslady pesters her about a makeover. Norma can't concentrate, her vision starts to swim, and she attempts to walk out with the blush. When the clerk tries to stop her, Norma shoots her, shattering her collarbone, and is in turn fatally shot by the security guard.

Schanke wonders what made Norma go crazy. Judging by the contents of her purse, Nick decides that it was the sheer effort of trying to stay gorgeous and young. Natalie checks out the cosmetics and decides to save the cash and grow old gracefully. In a flashback, a baroness asks Nick to make her what he is, so that the weight of another day will not pull on her. Natalie unzips the body bag and notices that Norma looks older, and her hair has started to turn gray.

*Nick and Schanke visit Norma's roommate, Kiki, to break the news. Commenting on the apartment's décor, Schanke doesn't know if he's in a sorority house, a gym, or a museum. Nick agrees that it's eclectic. Schanke says it reminds him of Nick's place.*

*At the morgue, Natalie discovers her first gray hair.* Pulling back the sheet to begin Norma's autopsy, Natalie finds the body of an old woman.

Nick and Schanke visit Norma's employer and friend, Bernice Appelbaum, at The Spa Experience. A member of the gym, Agnes Ferguson, feels that her personal trainer is pushing her too hard and hits him in the head with a free weight, sending him crashing into a mirrored wall. A customer screams, and Schanke runs to the injured trainer. Nick chases Agnes into the parking lot. She is disoriented, rocking back and forth, and can't remember where she parked her car.

Natalie is baffled by what has happened to Norma and finds an unidentified virus in the blood test. But since the virus had been killed, she doesn't see how it could have had any effect. Nick suggests that the virus was dead when it was injected, like a vaccine. Natalie is relieved that she can now look for a medical explanation, rather than a supernatural one. Nick assures her that if Norma had been a vampire, she would not have died of a gunshot. Besides, when vampires die, they disappear. Natalie hands Nick the social security check found in Norma's back pocket.

Schanke badgers Bernice. Two incidents in one day involved two of her friends, and she must know something. Clearly at the end of her rope, she insists that they both seemed fine. She doesn't know why they snapped. Nick offers her a lift home, but she doesn't want to be alone. She knows a place where she can unwind.

Nick and Janette observe the dancers while Bernice works out her tension on the Raven's dance floor. Sensing that he is feeling his age, Janette tells Nick to relax. His midlife crisis is at least a millennium away. Nick says someone should bottle the dancers' youthful vitality, but Janette says it's desperation. They dance as if Father Time were shooting bullets at their feet, which he is. Nick wonders if Janette is envious. She still has her youth, but they have enthusiasm. Janette says their enthusiasm will fade soon enough, as they watch each younger generation arrive to cut in on their dance, turn their possessions into artifacts, and store their pictures in dusty attics.

In a flashback, *the baroness observes her husband with a young lady and says that this one is younger than the last.* She has figured out what Nick is, but he evades the issue. He insists that she's not only beautiful, but intelligent - something which youth cannot guarantee. She challenges him to tell her that she is more

attractive than his latest mistress and that her intelligence makes her so much more appealing. If he won't make her immortal, she wants him to make her his lover. Just then, Nick is called away by a beautiful young lady whom he invited for a walk in the garden.

On the ride home, Bernice is quiet and seems dazed. Even as her vision starts to swim, she assures Nick that she is okay. They agree that death is never easy to deal with, especially when you are the one being left behind. She mentions that Norma had once been Miss Calgary Stampede, "just after the war." Nick drives off, and Bernice accidentally drops her keys, which disappear through a drainage grate. She takes a gun out of her purse and shoots off the lock.

Natalie has learned that the virus found in Norma's blood has been extinct for over two hundred years. Until now, the most recent sample had been exhumed in northern Europe from the grave of a man who had been dead for over three hundred years. Nick assures Natalie that if Norma had been bitten by a vampire, she wouldn't have been alive (unless being a zombie is Natalie's definition of being alive), and if she had been a vampire, she wouldn't be dead. Natalie suggests that there might be something else out there, but Nick dismisses the idea that something else exists which he hasn't encountered in eight hundred years and several continents.

In her cell, Agnes is quite haggard and desperate for her physician, Dr. Jurgen. Nick promises to try to get Dr. Jurgen, who does consultations at the spa.

Nick and Natalie visit Bernice's office. Highly distraught, Bernice is applying makeup in the semi-darkness and won't let Nick took at her. In a flashback, the baroness seems content for the first time. Janette enters and tells Nick that sometimes it takes a woman to understand another woman's plight. Janette turns the baroness's head and reveals the bite marks on her neck.

The baroness, now known as Dr. Sophia Jurgen, visits Agnes in her cell.

Nick tries to help Bernice, who is tired of trying and is on the verge of a complete breakdown. Nick is notified that Agnes has escaped, and Natalie agrees to stay with Bernice.

Schanke gives the guard who was on duty a hard time. The guard claims not to have seen anything and also claims not to have left. Tapping his temple, Schanke remarks, "There's a computation error here." Nick senses the presence of "another" and, through hypnotism, gets the guard to remember Dr. Jurgen's visit. Jurgen had told the guard to unlock the door and to forget.

From the car, Schanke calls a library, then reports the year "1945" to Nick, who suddenly decides that he has to check out something on his own. Nick leaves Schanke with the car and says that he'll meet him at the precinct later. Schanke can't believe how often Nick does this to him.

Bernice has locked herself in her office. Natalie checks out Dr. Jurgen's office and hides in a closet when Jurgen arrives with Agnes. Agnes is going through withdrawal and is afraid that she is "catching up." Natalie observes as Dr. Jurgen, with her back to Agnes, pretends to fill a syringe from a vial, but actually fills it with blood from her own arm. Sensing Nick's arrival, Jurgen goes to meet him. Nick enters through a door on one side of the spa's pool, as Jurgen and Agnes enter through a door on the opposite side. Jurgen tells Nick that what she does for her patients is something that she wishes Nick had thought of. It's a way to stay young without turning cold and having to shy away from the sunlight. Jurgen is about to inject Agnes, but upon hearing that it is the blood of a vampire, Agnes pulls away and sinks against a wall. Jurgen accuses Nick of having spurned Athena in his quest for Venus, but he says that she is the one who devalued her less fleeting gifts. She trusted his opinion of her, but she should have trusted her own opinion more. When Natalie enters, Jurgen rushes over and holds the syringe to Natalie's neck. Instantly, Nick is at Jurgen's side. He grabs her wrist and pulls the syringe away from Natalie, who escapes Jurgen's grasp. Nick crushes the syringe and pushes Jurgen backwards. Agnes springs up behind Nick and is about to bring a free weight down on his head when Schanke arrives and shoots her. Agnes dies and immediately ages several decades. When Jurgen sees this, she says that she's sorry for what she's done and runs off. Bernice enters and is horrified to see what has happened to Agnes.

Stonetree and the other cops give Schanke a hard time because he says he was there and saw the whole thing, but can't remember who shot the old woman. The guard that Schanke had berated taps his temple, saying, "It sounds like a computation error to me." Natalie tells Nick that he could have been more thorough and planted an alternate memory. He says he will, eventually.

Near dawn, Nick strolls with Bernice. She is elderly and now appears her true age. She laments that summer is almost gone and says that fall is only here about two weeks, then it's winter. Nick replies that winter can be a beautiful season, as well. He gives her a friendly kiss and walks her home, arm in arm.

**FATAL MISTAKE**
written by Michael Sadowski
directed by Don McCutcheon

**Guest Cast**
Cynthia Belliveau
David Stratton
with

| | | |
|---|---|---|
| Linda Goranson | Ken James | Simon Reynolds |
| Tony Perri | Jeff Wood | Sandi Ross |

**Synopsis**

Stonetree is in a convenience store when two teens, William Sewell and Eddie Shorr, come in to rob it. He draws his gun, Shorr shoots at him, and he chases them out of the store. Sewell climbs over a fence in an alley, and Shorr passes him the gun through the gate. Stonetree rounds the comer of the alley, and Sewell shoots at him through the chain-link. Stonetree returns the fire, killing Shorr. "Not now, please," Shorr whispers, then dies. Stonetree cries.

Stonetree swears he was shot at, but no gun can be found, nor any slugs. There were two teens in the store, but Stonetree never saw the second one after they bolted. Stonetree isn't sure that he wants the responsibility of this job anymore.

In the car, Nick and Schanke worry that the captain is not handling it well. Schanke feels that Stonetree has been behind a desk too long and has lost the edge. He tells Nick about a time when he had to kill someone and says that you can't go around carrying coffins on this gig.

At the precinct, Stonetree tells Nick that you can't kill someone and not have it affect you. Nick flashes back to an English tavern, centuries ago, and the beautiful barmaid that he was attracted to. LaCroix says she is a prize for the plucking and urges Nick to take her.

Nick returns to the alley and finds gunpowder on the fence. He senses someone's arrival and turns to see a figure, all in white, at the end of the alley. He calls to Alexandra, but she walks away. He rounds the comer, and she is gone. In a flashback, Nick and the barmaid, Alexandra, are kissing passionately, about to make love. At home, Nick wakes up in a blood sweat.

Nick arrives at the morgue to find Natalie performing a delicate operation. With a scalpel, she is cutting up a chicken for lunch for herself and Grace. Grace found flash bums on the elbow of Shorr's jacket, which supports the theory that Stonetree was fired upon by someone on the other side of the fence. Nick tells Natalie that he thinks he saw a ghost. Natalie doesn't really believe in ghosts. Of course, she hadn't previously believed in vampires, either.

While driving home, Nick glimpses Alexandra again. In a flashback, Nick takes Alexandra to bed, then kills her.

Sewell drinks heavily and loads his gun. "It's payback time," he declares.

In the car, Schanke remarks that all they have to do is find the other punk, get the gun, and Stonetree walks in the sun again. Nick spots Alexandra on a bus. On foot, he chases the bus, climbs onto the back of it, and walks along the roof. Schanke follows in the car. Nick swings down in front of the driver, causing the driver to slam on the brakes, which sends Nick sprawling onto the pavement. Alexandra takes this opportunity to exit the bus. Nick gets up and searches the bus as the driver lambastes him. Schanke arrives and orders everyone to get back on the bus, insisting that it is police business. Taking Nick aside, he asks what the problem is. Nick claims to have seen a suspect from an old case on the bus.

Stonetree is obsessed with finding Sewell and returns to the alley. He recalls seeing a tow truck from American Auto Wreckers parked at the curb on the night of the shooting. Stonetree drives off, and Sewell follows.

Nick and Schanke visit Shorr's mother, hoping to get a lead on where to find Sewell. She is too angry and upset about her son's death to want to help them, however. Nick flashes back to seeing Alexandra laid out for her burial and feeling ashamed that he killed her.

At the precinct, Schanke blames Nick's diet, "or lack thereof," for making him think he saw a suspect on the bus. Schanke claims that it's a scientific fact that people hallucinate when they don't get enough fat and

sugar, and he hopes that the city won't go bankrupt from the sixteen cases of whiplash that Nick caused. Nick uses Stonetree's badge number, 8623, to access his voice mail. Sewell has called, claiming to be Shorr, saying that he's having a wonderful time and can't wait for Stonetree to join him. Sewell says he is looking for Stonetree. Nick tells Dispatch to try to get Stonetree on the radio, and he tells Schanke to put out an APB.

Stonetree is at American Auto Wreckers, looking for the vehicle that was towed on the night of the shooting. The manager hears on his police scanner that the police are looking for Stonetree and calls to give them Stonetree's location.

Nick is back in the alley when the dispatcher calls with Stonetree's location. Again, he spots Alexandra. In a flashback, LaCroix discovers that there is still life in Alexandra. He bites his own wrist and lets the blood drip into a wineglass.

Nick is flying to the junkyard when Sewell knocks out the manager. Stonetree finds the van that was by the alley on the night of the shooting. The two slugs that Sewell fired are imbedded in it. As Stonetree digs out a slug with a knife, Sewell comes up from behind and holds a gun to his head.

Nick arrives at the junkyard and is confronted by Alexandra. She accuses him of raping her and leaving her for dead. In a flashback, LaCroix holds the wineglass to Alexandra's lips, and she revives. Alexandra tells Nick about LaCroix coming to her and giving her this "life after death, eternal damnation." Nick says that since she is what he is, she must understand the hunger that compelled him to feed on her. Can she control it? How many times since that night has she killed? She replies that she never counted.

Sewell takes Stonetree's knife and gun. Stonetree says that Shorr's death was Sewell's fault, not his own. He pushes Sewell down and runs as Sewell shoots at him. Nick hears the shots and is about to take off when Alexandra grabs him by the throat. Sewell catches up to Stonetree and again holds a gun to his head. Nick throws Alexandra back against a car, and she throws a car door at him. He deflects the door, and when he looks again, she is gone. She rises up behind him. As he turns, she throws a stake which pierces his chest.

Sewell has brought Stonetree to a bridge and plans to shoot him with his own gun. It will look as though Stonetree couldn't live with himself after what he did. Stonetree tells Sewell that he did what he had to do, and he would do the same again.

Nick's wound is not fatal. Alexandra tells Nick that he has been her life's work. She swore to take revenge on the man who gave her death and to return the gift. She has been searching for Nick for a long time. Nick says that he didn't make her what she is, and killing him won't change anything. She agrees that it won't change anything, but it will be easier to sleep days with his head on her mantel. She advances on him with another stake, but he grabs a pipe and shoves it through her abdomen. She falls to the ground, and he flies off.

Sewell is about to shoot Stonetree when Nick flies down from behind and knocks him away. As Sewell flips over the bridge's guardrail, he grabs the rail to prevent himself from plunging into the water. Stonetree pulls Sewell to safety, then handcuffs him.

*Schanke arrives with backup and takes Sewell away. Seeing the tear in Nick's jacket, Stonetree remarks that it looks like he had a tough night. Nick says it was an old enemy, but nothing he couldn't handle. He and Stonetree have both been chasing their ghosts.*

At the station, Stonetree doesn't want to get rusty and takes some target practice. A few days ago he thought he would never pick up his gun again. Stonetree will never forget Shorr's face, and Nick says that we all live with some kind of ghost. "Until we become a ghost ourselves, I guess," Stonetree muses. Nick says that when we go chasing our ghosts, we should do it by the rules and not let guilt affect our judgment. They agree that it's difficult.

Schanke is asleep in the car, and Nick nearly gives him a heart attack by rapping on the door. Trying to sound like a cowboy, Schanke suggests that they go out for some "BBQ," then "yippee-i-o-ti-ay" down to the local bus corral for a "one-on-one competition with some of them newfangled German diesels." Schanke says they go from zero to sixty in about a millennia, and an old cowpoke like Nick could "wrestle one of them down to the ground right quick." Schanke has no intention of letting Nick live this down. Alexandra stands in the road and watches as the car pulls off.

**1966**
written by Brad Wright
directed by Nicholas J. Gray

**Guest Cast**
Cali Timmins
George Touliatos
with

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| Christopher Kennedy | Michael Rhoades | Don Carrier | David Spooner |
| Geoffrey Towers | Joseph Cheung | Beverly Cheung | Henri Li |
| Ann Chiu | | | |

**Synopsis**

In the precinct parking lot, Natalie is accosted by a man with a sawed-off shotgun, attached to which is a rope tied into a noose. Inside, Nick speaks Chinese and helps Schanke communicate with a shopkeeper and his family. The shopkeeper killed a gangbanger who beat up his son and tried to rob his store. With three more night shifts to work, Schanke swears he will never cover for another vacationing night detective. Nick says you learn to love it when you have no choice. Schanke spills a desk drawer and is on the floor picking up papers when the gunman enters, led by Natalie with the noose around her neck. The police draw their guns, and Schanke remains unseen beneath the desk. The gunman demands the release of his brother, Jimmy Lee, a bank robber who killed a guard. Nick whispers for Schanke to wait for his shot. Nick tells the gunman that he doesn't have a hope in hell of getting out, but the gunman yells for him to stay where he is.

In a flashback to East Berlin, 1966, Nick is ordered to stay where he is. He has been caught after hours in State Archive No. 7 by Bernhard, the son of the night custodian, Herr Toffler. Nick quickly gets the upper hand and does likewise when the father pulls a knife. Nick has searched for a book, the *Abarat*, for years and knows it's there. Toffler's daughter, Lily, says that the ancient book of miracles won't do him much good unless he reads archaic Sanskrit. Nick says that he's got time to learn. According to legend, the *Abarat* contains cures for curses. Seeing an old map on the table, Nick surmises that the Tofflers are doing their own after-hours research. They are searching for catacombs which were constructed to accommodate the dead during the plague and which could provide an escape route out of East Berlin. Nick knows where the tunnels are, and Lily agrees to help him find and translate the book if he will help them escape. *Lily tells Nick that the Abarat was supposedly among the artifacts recovered from an Afghanistan dig in the early part of the century.* She brings him down to the "uncatalogued section," a sub-basement filled with crates. Nick must find the book before others find it and prevent him from taking the cure. The book is his freedom, and Lily knows what it is like to be trapped in a life you don't want. Lily continues to search while Nick, then known as Nick Thomas, takes Bernhard and Toffler to the old Bergen Church, which was destroyed during the war. The catacombs, sealed for centuries, can be accessed through a subterranean mausoleum. Outside, Nick hears LaCroix whisper his name. Bernhard wants to leave immediately, but Lily is not with them, and Nick does not yet have the *Abarat*. They agree to meet at the library the following midnight.

At the precinct, Stonetree points out that the gunman is surrounded by heavily armed officers. He says that the gunman and his brother will never make it out alive. Nick tells the gunman that they are all in this together and points out that the gunman is a hostage, too.

In a flashback, Lily tells Nick that they are hostages in their own country. He replies that we're all hostages to something. She says it's a land of broken spirits, like living dead for some of them. Nick can certainly relate to that. Referring to the party members, Lily says there is a lot of promise for those who sell their soul. Lily insists that they take a dinner break. Meanwhile, LaCroix has some information for the police. *At dinner, Toffler tells Nick that they can't get good meat, but there is an abundance of Russian vodka. They drink a toast, and Nick can barely swallow it. Seeing the canned meat that is to be their supper, Nick covers his mouth with his hand.* The meat is spread onto bread, and Nick takes a bite. He chokes, but mutters that it's delicious. He gulps some vodka and nearly chokes again. Toffler concludes that American food has spoiled his palate. Nick says that once he has the *Abarat,* he should go through the tunnels first to make sure they are passable. Lily begins to suspect that he might be working for the police. Bernhard, a mechanic, is home packing his tools. He decides not to wait for the others and is determined to find his own way. On the street, the police

grab him. While searching for the *Abarat*, Lily tells Nick that if he is with the secret police and betrays their unit, she will kill him herself.

In the precinct, an officer makes a move for his gun, and the gunman opens fire, shooting that officer in the chest and Stonetree in the arm. The gunman then pulls out a grenade and demands his brother's release. Nick promises to get Stonetree and the civilian family out.

In a flashback, Nick promises to get Lily and her family out. Down to the last few crates, Nick tells Toffler that he will get them out, even if the book is not there. Toffler goes home to get Bernhard, but sees police cars outside. Bernhard gets roughed up, but won't divulge the name of the American who is helping to plan their escape. LaCroix says the American is his, and the police say LaCroix can have him after they interrogate him. When LaCroix says the police won't be able to arrest Nick, they threaten to interrogate LaCroix. "Try," he calmly suggests, smiling.

Nick strikes a bargain with the gunman. The gunman will release everyone except Nick, Natalie, and the shopkeeper, and Nick will release his brother. Once everyone is out, Nick demands that Natalie be cut free. He is not going to release the brother. "There's only one more deal," he tells the gunman. "You cut her free, surrender, and you won't die. That's it." Saying that Nick has just made a big mistake, the gunman pulls the pin out of the grenade with his teeth.

Nick and Lily are about to open the last crate when Toffler arrives and accuses Nick of setting up his son. Nick swears that he had nothing to do with it. They hear the police breaking down the doors upstairs, and Nick says they have to trust him.

In the police station, Nick assures Natalie that nothing will happen to her. The gunman says they are all going to take a nice, little stroll in the sunshine, and Nick looks a bit nervous. The gunman claims they will all leave together, or they will all be carried out in little plastic bags.

In a flashback, Nick knocks out a policeman and tells Toffler and Lily that he will get Bernhard and meet them at the church. He breaks a lock, and they escape out the back of the library. Bernhard is in a police car, barely conscious. Nick quickly disposes of the policeman and drives off. He breaks Bernhard's handcuffs, and they abandon the car. *Nick hypnotized Bernhard into sleeping, then flies with him to the church.* Bernhard assumes that he passed out. In the tunnels, they hear police behind them. Nick knows that LaCroix is to blame, and he sends the others ahead. With glowing eyes and bared fangs, he kills the two policemen. Lily comes back for him and discovers what he is. Nick removes a post from a doorway, causing it to cave in so that no one else can follow them. The progress of Toffler and Bernhard has been blocked by a sealed door, which Nick rips off the hinges. *Once the Tofflers are free, Nick has to go back for the book. Lily promises to help him if she can and to keep his secret. They kiss. He has given them a new life, and she wants to repay him in kind.*

The gunman is determined to go out in a blaze of glory. Nick flashes back to the library, which LaCroix has set ablaze. LaCroix stands on the steps of the burning building, holding the *Abarat*. The gunman releases Natalie and is about to detonate the grenade when Nick yells for Schanke to "do it now." As the gunman tosses the grenade over the front desk, Schanke shoots him twice in the chest. In a flashback, LaCroix tosses the *Abarat* into the burning building. Nick dives to catch it, but it's too late. The book is consumed by flames, and Nick cries, "No!" Nick dives for the grenade, catches it, and crushes it in his hand, yelling, "Yes!" There is no explosion.

Stonetree's arm is in a sling, but he was lucky and got shot in the "meat." Schanke tells him that being overweight can be a life saver. Nick and Natalie look askance, so he amends it to "stocky and well-built," which isn't received any better. He tries "muscular and well-constructed." When asked how long it's been since he had to go out and bring in parking tickets, Schanke wisely departs. A report says the grenade was probably a dud.

Nick plays a message from Lily Toffler, who has just received his letter. Her father is still alive, Bernhard is an engineer for BMW, and she has been awarded tenure at the university. Her oldest son, Nicholas, is almost sixteen. She hasn't given up and still searches for copies of the *Abarat*, or the information in it. She saved him a piece of the Berlin Wall and will send it now that she knows where to reach him. She knows it's never enough to repay him, but she thanks him from all of them, forever. Gazing at a picture of himself with the Tofflers, he says, "It's enough."

**LOVE YOU TO DEATH**
story by Tony Sheer
teleplay by Naomi Janzen
directed by Michael Levine

**Guest Cast**
Andrea Roth
with

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| Jonathan Potts | Sandi Ross | Michael Millar | Mary Patterson |
| Paul Ehrmann | Goran Kale | Jeannie Daniels | Sherry Schell |

**Synopsis**

Candles are lit, and rose petals float in Stephanie Donovan's bubble bath. She is then toweled off, dressed, and made up. Later, she sits motionless on a park bench. When a child's ball rolls into her foot, she doesn't move, or even blink. She is dead, having been asphyxiated. She was a model for the Classy Intimates lingerie catalog and had been missing for four months. The detectives compare catalog shots to photos of her posed on the park bench. Seeing a shot of another model, Lucy Preston, Nick flashes back to watching a ballet dancer, Sylvaine Montraché, who looks just like Lucy, dance. He is enchanted with Sylvaine and has been attending the ballet every night. Janette tells him to go backstage, but he doesn't want to darken Sylvaine's door-step.

Natalie reports that Stephanie was bathed, dressed, coifed, and made up within half an hour of her death. The only physical damage is slight bruising under her lips, suggesting that a pillow was used to suffocate her. Stephanie had apparently spent the last four months in the lap of luxury. About an hour before her death, she had a meal of pâté, caviar, and lots of very good champagne. Schanke arrives to take Nick to a lingerie photo shoot at the Raven. "Sometimes, you really gotta love this job," he remarks. Natalie threatens to call Myra, but Schanke says she's in Tampa with her mother.

Janette couldn't resist the irony of having the Christmas catalog shot in her club. Besides, she wanted to show off the new décor. She tells Nick not to worry. She has sent "them" out to play, and they won't start straggling back until dawn. Lucy poses at the bar, and Janette remarks on the resemblance she bears. In a flashback, Nick has watched the performance seventeen or eighteen times, and LaCroix wants to know what has him so bewitched. Nick says it is Sylvaine's purity, and LaCroix wouldn't understand. She is the closest thing to an angel that Nick has ever seen. After one hundred years, Nick still won't talk about it with Janette. Nick informs the photographer, Max Henkle, that Stephanie has been found dead, then informs Lucy. They resume the photo shoot, and Max reprimands Lucy for not letting her robe hang open enough. His assistant, Charlie Murdich, reluctantly adjusts it.

*At home, Nick flashes back to visiting Sylvaine's dressing room. He snaps out of his reverie with a start, then plays a loud rock CD.* Outside the Raven, the models are leaving after the shoot, and Lucy is abducted in an alley.

The next night at the station, Schanke wants to know where the hell Nick has been. He claims to have called about ninety times and left about a hundred messages. Nick says he must have had the stereo turned up too loud. Schanke informs him that Lucy has disappeared. *Janette runs into Nick in the police station, and he pulls her into an interrogation room. She has been called down for questioning because she was one of the last people to see Lucy. Schanke enters, and Janette asks if she can go. Detective Knight has succeeded in grilling a confession out of her. She fully admits that she had nothing to do with anything. Schanke thanks her for coming down, and she says that seeing "Nicholah" in his element was her pleasure. Janette leaves, and Schanke teasingly repeats, "Nicholah," then asks if Janette is Hungarian. "Among other things," Nick responds. Henkle arrives, and Nick and Schanke question him about Stephanie. At this point, Lucy is a missing person, and her case is being handled by another department.*

Lucy wakes up in a luxuriously furnished bedroom. The doors are locked, and the windows are bricked up. Someone watches her, unseen, from behind the mirror over the dresser.

In his car, Nick flashes back again. LaCroix encourages him to visit Sylvaine, but Nick says purity is always repulsed by pure evil. LaCroix says her purity is an illusion. She is an actor playing the part of an angel. LaCroix claims that, in reality, she is a common whore.

Nick arrives home to find Janette waiting for him. She knows something is bothering him. They are both the children of LaCroix, and the threads of that connection have been vibrating lately. When asked if she hasn't been strumming them herself, she replies, "No. You know what I'd give to have that power still." She wants to know what happened with Sylvaine and tells him that it will haunt him until he talks about it. He responds that his whole life haunts him.

Natalie has found traces of a photo developing chemical on Stephanie's skin. The other models have told Schanke that before Stephanie disappeared, Henkle threatened her because she wasn't going to renew her contract with him. Nick and Schanke visit Henkle, only to find his body hanging in the darkroom. The suicide note says that he killed both Stephanie and Lucy because they tried to leave him and that Lucy's body is in Lake Ontario.

Lucy has no interest in the meal that has been provided for her, nor in the dress that has been left as a gift. She screams that she wants to go home. She throws the lid from her dinner plate and smashes the mirror, revealing Charlie on the other side. They are separated by iron bars. She realizes that this is what happened to Stephanie. Charlie says that he hadn't planned on killing Stephanie. He wanted to protect her from exploitation, as he wants to protect Lucy.

In a flashback, Nick backhands LaCroix when he refers to Sylvaine as a whore. LaCroix tells Nick to take his place in line outside her dressing room. Sometimes, she even takes the men two at a time. Nick calls him a filthy liar, but then two men emerge from the dressing room. Nick is sure that if they took anything, it was theft. He rushes in and finds Sylvaine sitting quietly, reading a letter. She smiles happily at him. In a dream, Nick sees Lucy floating up to the surface of a lake. He wakes up with a start and goes to visit Natalie at the morgue. It doesn't make sense that Henkle would have prepared Stephanie's corpse so painstakingly, then just dumped Lucy in the lake. Natalie tells him that divers have been out there all day, but haven't found anything.

Lucy puts on the dress that Charlie left as a gift for her.

Nick is finally ready to talk and goes to the Raven. Janette tells him that he is tortured by a soul that he hasn't got. Nick says he was tricked. In a flashback, Sylvaine admits that she has been watching him, too. She kisses him, and he pulls away. She kisses him again and tells him that she loves him. He warns her not to love him. He then decides that if her purity can tolerate and love his evil, it must not be purity, after all. He kisses her, then kills her. Natalie calls Nick to report that the chair that Henkle was standing on had no fingerprints on it. It couldn't have been a suicide. She has also found traces of chloroform in his sinuses.

Lucy invites Charlie to come in and dine with her. She says she knows what he wants.

Nick revisits Henkle's darkroom, then calls Schanke for Charlie Murdich's address.

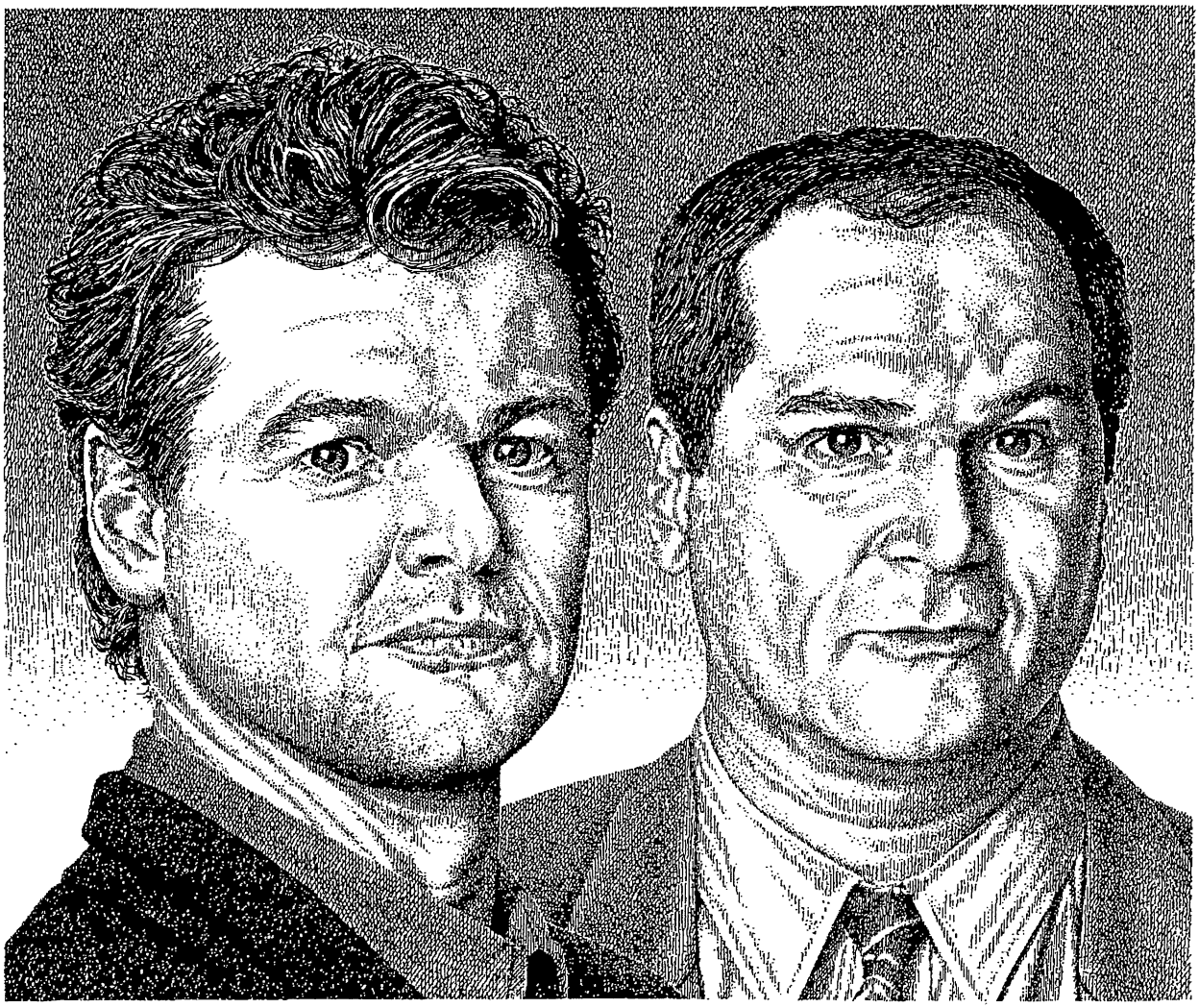
Charlie unlocks the door and enters Lucy's room. She pours him a glass of champagne, then tries to seduce him. Saying that he knows she's not like that, he tries to smother her with a pillow. She smashes him on the head with the champagne bottle, then runs out. Charlie chases her through the woods. She comes across a woodpile, grabs a pitchfork, and tries to fend him off, but he grabs it from her. When Nick arrives, Charlie lunges at him with the pitchfork. While deflecting the attack, Nick breaks off the end of the pitchfork, which leaves Charlie threatening Nick with a wooden stake. Charlie lunges at Nick again, but Nick evades him. Charlie falls forward, impaling himself on the tines of the pitchfork, which had fallen to the ground.

In a flashback, Nick has just killed Sylvaine when LaCroix enters, accompanied by the two men who were there earlier. LaCroix says that Sylvaine loved Nick, and Nick says that he hates LaCroix for betraying him. "Good," LaCroix responds. "Hate is a step in the right direction."

In Nick's apartment, Janette says that she never knew what happened, only that it was then that Nick withdrew from them and stopped killing. For three centuries, Nick had preyed only on criminals and derelicts, and LaCroix tried to make him abandon that principle. Instead, LaCroix made Nick realize that there is no distinction between guilty and innocent blood. Janette remarks that LaCroix's little joke backfired, but Nick got his revenge. Nick flashes back to battling LaCroix and driving a burning stake into him. Outside, LaCroix savagely feeds, then tosses his victim aside. Blood drips down his face as he stares up at Nick's apartment, growling. His eyes glow yellow, then red.

# EPISODE GUIDE

# SECOND SEASON



## KILLER INSTINCT

written by Naomi Janzen
directed by Michael Alan Levine

### Guest Cast

Michael Caruana ..... Jeff Morris
Michael Simpson ..... Rogers
Tony Meyler..... Constable Wilkinson
Angela Moore ..... Officer #2
Norm Spencer ..... Man
Jack Nicholsen ..... Junkie
Sandi Ross..... Grace
Jonathan Whittaker ..... Dreyfus
Christopher Marren ..... Officer #1
David Blacker ..... Officer #3
Stavroula Logothettis ..... Woman
Angela Asher ..... Prostitute

### Synopsis

A hooded figure observes a drug deal. When the customer walks off, the figure, wearing surgical gloves, strangles and murders the dealer. At home, Nick throws open the lid of his sun bed and urgently snaps off the power. He can't take one more second of the rays. He comes downstairs and listens to a message from Natalie urging him to keep up the sun bed routine, stay away from the blood, and eat real food. He grabs a bottle of blood from the fridge and drinks. The drug dealer's murder had been observed from the air. LaCroix lands next to the body. Nick senses the presence of another vampire nearby and seems disturbed as he gazes out his window.

Although it's his day off, Schanke shows up at the crime scene and pays off another officer with Jays tickets for having notified him. He and Nick have recently transferred to the 96th precinct, and Schanke is trying to impress their new boss, Captain Cohen, but she sees right through him. When Nick shows up, as well, Schanke reminds him that it's supposed to be his turn to look good. Natalie and Cohen inform the detectives that this murder is similar to others that have occurred. Two Internal Affairs officers, Rogers and Wilkinson, arrive, which means that they think the killer is a cop. Nick flashes back to Paris, 1228, where LaCroix is instructing him in the use of his newly acquired powers. Nick is searching for LaCroix in a subterranean labyrinth of tunnels, but can't find him. LaCroix tells him to stop using his eyes.

Nick visits Janette at the Raven. She examines his watch, which is inscribed: "To Nick, A man who has all the time in the world, from Natalie." He asks if she knows whose presence he has been sensing. She does not know, but she warns Nick that he is becoming too human and will end up getting hurt if he takes his present life too seriously. She reminds him that vampires outlive humans, and eventually, they all must move on.

At home in bed, Nick hears LaCroix telling him to wake up to what he is and saying that Nick has been asleep far too long. Schanke calls to tell Nick that all the murders have occurred "within spitting distance of the 96th," which would indicate that the killer is someone in their precinct. Nick can't find his watch, and Schanke says that it must be old age setting in.

In an alley, the killer observes another drug deal, while LaCroix watches from a rooftop. Driving by, Nick hears screams and rushes to investigate. At the precinct, Schanke brings cappuccino to Cohen, and the other officers give him a hard time for "brown-nosing." Cohen receives an anonymous tip and informs Rogers and Wilkinson. In the alley, Nick shoves aside a trash bin and discovers the body of a woman. Seconds later, Rogers and Wilkinson arrive and discover Nick's watch in the dead woman's hand. Nick is arrested for murder.

While Nick is being questioned, Schanke defends him to the other cops and insists that there must be some mistake.

Natalie visits Nick in his cell and informs him that she has obtained a tissue sample from under the last victim's fingernails. She knows that she can't send Nick's blood to the lab for a DNA test, but pretends to obtain a sample. Nick tells her that another vampire is setting him up, then flashes back to LaCroix telling him to revel in his newfound power and the gift of immortality that he has given him. LaCroix says that he has made Nick his protégé, but Nick counters that LaCroix has made him his slave. Nick tells Natalie that someone is trying to force him to move on, but he is not ready. She assures him that if she has anything to do with it, he will not have to.

The police begin investigating Nick. While combing his apartment, they play with the remote control blinds and manhandle the precious artifacts. Schanke becomes very protective of Nick and his possessions and defends Nick to the other police officers. However, even Schanke can offer no plausible explanation for Nick's sun bed, or the blood found in his refrigerator.

Natalie tells Grace that they need another sample for the double-blind DNA test. Together, they ambush a lab technician, Jeff Morris, and obtain a sample. Natalie sends Grace out of the room, then switches labels so that Jeff's blood sample will actually be used instead of Nick's.

Schanke visits Nick in jail and is concerned about reports that Nick hasn't been eating. Nick assures him that Natalie has smuggled "some stuff" in. When Schanke asks about the blood in the fridge, Nick says that he uses cow's blood to thicken his oil paints. He claims that it's an old European technique. As Schanke leaves, he yells to the other officers, "It's paint thickener!" Janette also visits Nick in jail and warns him that the investigation into his life is endangering the entire vampire community. She advises Nick that it's time for him to move on. After Janette leaves, Nick is informed that the DNA test results have come back. It's a positive match on Nick.

Nick is to be moved to a maximum security facility. He covers his face as he is taken out into the daylight and put into a van. Sunlight streams through the slats on the windows in the back doors of the van. Nick breaks his handcuffs and tumbles out of the back of the moving vehicle. His body smokes in the sunlight as he runs to hide in a trash bin until nightfall. Then, it's time to hunt down whoever set him up.

When Natalie learns of the test results, she confesses to Schanke that she switched the samples. She claims that she did it because if the seriousness of Nick's sun allergy were known, it could be the end of his career. As it turns out, Jeff's brother died of a drug overdose, so it would make sense that he is the one eliminating drug dealers. Schanke is reluctant to help for fear of getting himself into trouble, but he finally agrees, and Natalie gives him Jeff's address. Cohen is not convinced that Schanke doesn't know where Nick is, so when she sees him and Natalie coming out of an interview room, she has Rogers and Wilkinson follow him.

On a rooftop, Nick flashes back to searching for LaCroix in the tunnels. LaCroix urges him to "follow the vibration," which is the force that joins them. In the present, Nick "follows the vibration" to Jeff's home and bursts in with eyes glowing and fangs bared. He is surprised to encounter a mortal and asks what kind of trick this is. Schanke bursts in seconds later, and as Nick takes a moment to compose himself before facing Schanke, Jeff slips out the back.

Internal Affairs has followed Schanke, and the front of the building is now covered by police, including Cohen. Schanke tells Nick that Jeff is the killer, and they decide to slip out the back, as well. Schanke takes off after Jeff, while Nick goes to track down whoever set him up.

While conducting a building-to-building search, Cohen finds Schanke apprehending Jeff. Jeff confesses to the murders, and Cohen is finally impressed by Schanke's work.

Nick arrives in a ceramics warehouse and is shocked to encounter LaCroix, whom he believed he killed two years earlier. Nick flashes back to the battle in his apartment, where he drove a flaming stake into LaCroix, and LaCroix disappeared. LaCroix scoffs at the idea that Nick could have killed him, saying that he is "much too old and powerful for that." LaCroix has decided to give Nick a second chance and has used Jeff to frame him. He is trying to force Nick to move on by shattering his present life. Nick refuses to be forced out, and they battle. Nick finally drives LaCroix away by holding up two pieces of wood as a cross, even though it causes Nick's hand to smoke and burn.

From a rooftop, Nick watches as Jeff is taken away, and Schanke tells Cohen that he hasn't seen Nick all night. LaCroix comes to Nick again and asks where the lasting value is. "Blink, and they'll all be ghosts. Blink, and they'll all be gone."

At the precinct, Natalie has trouble explaining how the blood samples got mislabeled, and Cohen suggests that Jeff might have done it to cover his tracks. It's obvious that she knows that Natalie and Schanke helped Nick, but is letting them off the hook. She tells Nick that he's lucky to have such good friends and tells him to appreciate them because they're what make life worth living. Those are Nick's thoughts, exactly.

Back at his apartment, Nick plays the piano, then senses Janette's arrival. She says that the connection between them has strengthened lately, and that can mean only one thing. Nick confirms it: "LaCroix has returned."

## A FATE WORSE THAN DEATH

written by Gillian Horvath
directed by Don McCutcheon

### Guest Cast

Natalie Radford
with

Kevin Jubinville ..... Mason
Philip Williams ..... Artie Goodwin
Christian Laurin ..... Daviau
David Danzon ..... French Soldier
Andrea Menzies ..... Julie
Ross Petty ..... Draper
Earl Pastko ..... Miklos
Gloria Slade ..... Anna
Jean-Marc Amyot ..... French Beadle
Alexa Gilmour ..... Louise

### Synopsis

Julie Beemer, a prostitute, is shot to death in a hotel room. The body is discovered by her would-be customer, Barry Draper. Draper tells Nick and Schanke that he gave a man in the bar $300 for Julie's services, but knows nothing more.

Schanke's wife, Myra, has put him on a health food kick because her cousin had a heart attack at age 50. Schanke is constantly munching "rabbit food" and is not very happy about it.

After finding a Raven matchbook in Julie's purse, Nick and Schanke visit Janette and learn that she knew Julie. She tells them that she offers her club as a refuge to the prostitutes, but "the men who think that they own them" are not welcome. Janette feels a connection to the prostitutes because they are "ladies of the night," like herself. Janette flashes back to being a prostitute in Paris, approximately 1,000 years ago. The brothel keeper, Daviau, is abusive, particularly towards a friend of Janette's, a fellow prostitute who has gotten pregnant. Since her friend can no longer work, Janette tries to earn enough for both of them. She is very nurturing to her friend and envies her pregnancy. Because of his history of abuse, Janette is convinced that Julie's pimp, Mason, must be the killer. Janette points out another of Mason's girls, Celeste Morgan. The detectives question Celeste, but she doesn't sound very convincing when she assures them that Mason didn't kill Julie.

Nick questions Celeste at the police station, but she is uncooperative. Nick understands that Mason made Celeste what she is, and now he controls her. When she leaves, Nick and Schanke follow her. Nick abandons Schanke in the car and follows Celeste from the air as she returns to Mason. Nick listens from outside, and when Mason backhands Celeste, Nick bursts in and brings them both down to the police station. Nick tries to convince Celeste to start a new life, but she refuses because she thinks that she's living the good life. She compares herself to her sister, who works in a donut shop and who will never see a fur coat or a glass of champagne. Mason has an alibi, and there is no evidence against him, so he is released.

Celeste arrives at the Raven at closing time, followed by Mason. Janette offers her a place to stay, but at a word from Mason, Celeste declines. Janette tells her that when you're drowning, you can still see the light above you until you stop swimming. "Or you learn to breathe underwater, and you don't remember how to breathe the air," Celeste replies. "I don't belong up there." Celeste leaves with Mason. Janette is furious, but can do nothing to prevent it as they walk out into the daylight. Janette snarls and blinks at the rays of sunshine that stream through the open door.

At dusk, Janette goes to Nick's apartment and demands to know why Mason was set free. Nick tries to explain, but Janette says that it's because a whore's murder doesn't count. She tells Nick, "You, of all people, should know what her life is like. Trapped in a world of darkness, with no way out, no escape from the hold of the master over her." In a flashback, Janette is accosted in the halls of the brothel by two men who are trying to obtain her services without paying. She runs out and is pursued by one of the men. She begs passersby for help, but is ignored. She is caught, struggles with her attacker, escapes his grasp, and runs away. When she turns back to took, LaCroix has killed the man. Janette tells Nick, "Back then, a woman belonged to her father, and then to her husband. To be passed on to a servant if she failed to produce an heir, to be sold to the brothel keeper if she was in the way of another marriage." She tells him that nothing has changed in a thousand years, and these women are still property. When Nick tells Janette that his hands are tied regarding Mason, she replies that hers are not.

At the precinct, Schanke tells Nick that he's wasting his time trying to save Celeste. Nick visits the morgue and seeks Natalie's advice, and she wonders what the point of no return is. She agrees that Celeste is in a tough spot, but it's not as if Nick hasn't seen worse. She tells him that Celeste can come back, but only if she wants to. Amused, Natalie tweaks Nick's chin and tells him that "this good Samaritan thing" kind of suits him. Schanke arrives and informs Nick that he has confirmed Mason's alibi. Mason is definitely not the killer.

Nick looks for Janette at the Raven and is told by Miklos that she went out. Nick flies to Mason's place of business and finds Janette standing over his dead body with her fangs bared.

It is determined that Mason was killed by two bullets, probably from the same gun that killed Julie Beemer. This lets Janette off the hook, since Nick knows that she wouldn't have used bullets. Schanke, who has reverted to donuts, introduces Goodman from Vice. Goodman believes that the murders of Julie and Mason could be an attempt at a hostile takeover of Mason's business. Natalie notices the time and says, "Ah, Nick, isn't your shift ending?" Schanke remarks, "Aw, come on! If you're putting in for overtime, do it without me because Myra's going to have me skinned alive if I don't get home before dawn." Nick starts to get nervous about the approaching sunrise and replies, "Yeah. I know the feeling." Nick has to hypnotize Goodman to convince him that it isn't necessary to take Janette to the station for questioning. He also tells Goodman to have his people find out where Celeste Morgan is. Natalie pulls Nick aside and pleads, "You've got to teach me how you do that sometime. Please?"

Janette is sorry that she wasn't the one to drain Mason's miserable life. She tells Nick that Mason may not have been guilty of Julie's murder, but that doesn't mean that he was "innocent." She says that someone had to free Celeste, but Nick insists that this didn't free her. She will just belong to someone else now. Janette flashes back to her first conversation with LaCroix, who admits that he has been following her. Daviau had told LaCroix that Janette is of noble blood, and when LaCroix asks Janette if it's true, she answers that she is whatever he wants her to be. He tells her that he wants her to be so much more that mere nobility. LaCroix offers Janette a way out of her present life. He offers her a life where, without her permission, no mere mortal will ever dare touch her again. She accepts his offer, and he brings her across.

While questioning another of Mason's girls on the street, Nick and Schanke are offered the services of two girls for $300. Recalling that this is the amount Draper paid, they question Draper again and get him to admit that there were supposed to have been two girls in the hotel room. They now believe that Celeste must have been a witness to Julie's murder. Goodman has found Celeste at the Victory Hotel and tells her that if she helps put away the killer, they will help her start a new life. She refuses his offer for a fresh start, takes a gun out of her purse, and kills him. She then runs to Janette at the Raven, claiming that the killer is after her. She begs for Janette's help in starting a new life.

Nick and Schanke find Goodman's body and realize that Celeste is the killer. Nick departs for the Raven to inform Janette.

Janette agrees to give Celeste a truly fresh start. In a flashback, Janette's first act as a vampire is to take revenge on Daviau by killing him. As Janette is about to bring Celeste across, Nick bursts in and tells her that Celeste killed Julie and Mason in an attempt to take over the business. She tried to frame Mason for Julie's murder, and when that didn't worked, she killed him, too. Celeste shoots Janette and Nick, which has no effect. Janette is on the verge of killing Celeste, but instead, she hypnotizes her into forgetting that she has seen Janette and Nick as vampires. Janette turns Celeste over to Nick to let mortal justice deal with her.

Natalie removes the bullets from Janette, and Nick turns over the bullets he had taken. Natalie will pretend that she found them in the wall over the bar. Janette tells Nick that she saw herself in Celeste. She would have killed to set Celeste free, and she would do no less for Nick. He replies that she must never do that. She tells him that she hopes it really is possible to start over, if that's what he truly wants. Nick and Janette both know what it's like when your life is ruled by someone else, and Nick says that people who live in captivity must escape, or die trying.

**STRANGER THAN FICTION**
written by Phil Bedard & Larry LaLonde
directed by Clay Borris

**Guest Cast**
Larissa Lapchinski as "Emily Weiss"
with

| | |
|---|---|
| Andrew Miller ..... Andrew | Laura Press ..... Gloria Chapman |
| Sandi Ross ..... Grace Balthazar | Ronn Sarosiak ..... Fan Tansey |
| Hayley Tyson ..... V.J. Jessica | Normand Bissonette ..... "Christian" |
| Brian Kaulback ..... Det. McCabe | |

**Synopsis**

In New Orleans, 1899, a woman named Sophie laments that she is bound by duty to marry Gaston, but is in love with Christian. As Christian kisses her neck from behind, he bares his fangs and almost bites her, but regains control, kisses her hand, and leaves. A voice narrates: "He fled into the silent street, guided only by the hunger that overwhelmed him with shame. She must never know the truth - that even now he searched for his first kill of the night and the meal of blood to satisfy his terrible desire to feed." The voice is that of author Emily Weiss. As a guest on a TV show, she is reading from her latest vampire novel, *The Denied.* While reading, she had envisioned herself as Sophie. The publisher's representative, Gloria Chapman, her assistant, Andrew Murovsky, and the show's host are dissatisfied with the interview. Unlike her novels, Emily is very reserved and "bland." Backstage, Andrew escorts Emily through a mob of fans and leaves her in her dressing room. LaCroix lurks nearby. Suddenly, the dressing room lights go out, Emily is grabbed from behind, and her neck is bitten. She screams, and her attacker runs off.

Cohen assigns Nick and Schanke to protect Emily, although Schanke suspects that the attack was a publicity stunt. Once she is alone behind closed doors, Cohen reads *The Denied.*

After examining Emily, Natalie tells Nick that if the attacker was a vampire, he got scared off before doing any real damage. Nick tells her that Emily was staring at him in the precinct, to which Natalie replies, "You know, Nick, women sometimes do take a second look at you." But he has read Emily's books and feels that she has a sixth sense about vampires and may know the truth about him. Grace catches Natalie reading *TheDenied* and admits that she's reading it, too.

At the Raven, Janette is delighted to learn of the attempt on Emily's life, since she feels that Emily's books strike too close to the truth. Nick suspects LaCroix and is looking for him.

At the safe house, Schanke scoffs at Emily's book, asking, "What's the big deal about vampires?' Emily explains that although there is killing, there is also pleasure, sensuality, lust, and ecstasy - of course, vampires are just fairy tales and do not really exist. She does keep their hours, however. She loves the silence, sweet scent, and freedom of the night. Nick says that her books have power and passion. "But you don't see any of that passion in me," she replies. He answers that not seeing it doesn't necessarily mean it's not there.

At home, Nick reads the book and envisions the scene as Christian (Nick) tells Sophie (Emily) that she must marry Gaston. LaSalle (LaCroix) is the vampire who made Christian and urges him to take Sophie for himself. Christian insists that he's not a murderer, but LaSalle uses Christian's panther-headed cane to illustrate that killing to survive does not make one a murderer, merely a killer. Christian resists, but is told that if he does not kill Sophie, LaSalle will.

The next night, Emily smiles as she recalls Nick's words that not seeing her passion doesn't necessarily mean it's not there. Downstairs, Schanke is deeply absorbed in the book. While observing the house from his car, Detective McCabe is suddenly attacked. His neck is bitten, and he falls forward onto the steering wheel. The car horn blares, alerting Schanke.

Gloria is furious that the "safe house" wasn't safe. Emily feels responsible and is distracted by the ambulance taking McCabe away. She tells Nick that she was thinking about something that happened long ago. LaCroix listens as Nick suggests that Emily would be safer at his apartment.

Although Janette believes that Emily should be killed, Nick trusts her and convinces her to stay with Emily for a few hours, claiming that "only our kind can protect her from our kind."

At the morgue, Nick nearly gives Natalie a heart attack by coming up behind her while she is engrossed in the book. Christian (Nick) reveals what he is, but Sophie (Natalie) still loves him.

At Nick's apartment, Janette asks if Emily is falling in love with Nick. Emily answers that he seems like a good man, and Janette agrees that he does seem like that. Emily offers Janette a drink and, eyeing Emily's neck, Janette replies that she is debating that.

Although Nick claims to be simply concerned about Emily's safety, Natalie tells him that if he has feelings for Emily, he should act on them. He replies that it would be too dangerous.

Janette almost bites Emily, but recalls Nick saying that he trusts her. She senses LaCroix's arrival at the skylight. He calls her a "good girl" and says that she is not the one will take Emily.

While investigating McCabe's attack, Schanke enthuses to Nick about the book. He thinks that the "whole blood sucking thing" is very sexual and is impressed that vampires can hypnotize their victims. "Imagine just looking at a woman, and she's under your spell!" he gushes. Nick says that would be cheating. Sensing LaCroix's presence, Nick sends Schanke away, asking him to have Forensics check out a small piece of red, faceted glass that he found in a storm drain. LaCroix denies making the attempts on Emily's life. He is leaving that up to Nick.

When Emily puts a kettle on the stove, Janette becomes uneasy and keeps a safe distance from the flame. When Nick returns, she tells him never to do that to her again, then leaves. Emily reveals that the ambulance tonight reminded her of a childhood friend, Frankie Curtin, who killed himself because of his unrequited love for her. She felt responsible and buried her emotions, leaving her writing as the only outlet for her passion and desire for love. They kiss, then Nick pulls away. Emily doesn't want to be afraid anymore. They kiss again, passionately, but Nick pulls away again. Emily says that they have time, kisses him on the cheek, and goes up to bed.

In a bookstore, Emily autographs books for a long line of fans, while Schanke reads. He envisions himself as LaSalle, who has killed Gaston, thereby freeing Sophie (Emily) for Christian (Nick). If Christian won't do his duty, LaSalle will destroy both him and Sophie. In the bookstore, LaCroix reminds Nick of what he must do, then laughs as Nick rushes to stop a disturbance caused by an overzealous fan. The fan has sent Emily 2,928 letters and wants a reply. He is not the attacker, however. After he was removed from the bookstore, a fax was sent from there to the police station, stating, "I am still near her. I shall always watch over her. You cannot stop me."

Later, Emily performs a reading for a large group. Insisting that it's the only way they can be together, Sophie (Emily) convinces Christian (Nick) to bring her across. Emily reads with passion, and the audience responds enthusiastically. Nick spots LaCroix in the crowd, then notices a panther-headed cane in an umbrella stand. The panther is missing one red, faceted glass eye. Gloria can't believe the change in Emily, and Emily whispers to Nick, "You are my vampire."

In Emily's dressing room after the reading, Andrew holds the cane and says that Emily is really Sophie, he is really Christian, and they must be together forever. Natalie reports finding two distinct blood types on McCabe's bandages. Vampires have no blood unless they've just fed, in which case, it contains digestive enzymes. These samples were pure, indicating a human attacker. Nick sees that the cane is missing, then bursts into the dressing room to find that Andrew has taken Emily up the fire escape to the roof. As they struggle on a ledge, Andrew tells Emily that they must die together to have eternal life. He yells to Nick, "You can't stop me, LaSalle." Seeing that Andrew thinks he's a vampire, Nick warns him to be careful what he wishes for. Nick changes to the vampire state and commands Andrew to release Emily, revealing that he is what Andrew pretends to be. Andrew runs, but LaCroix catches him, feeds on him, then throws his body from the roof. Emily wants to be with Nick and begs him to take her. LaCroix urges Nick to give in to what he is. "Never," Nick vows, then hypnotizes Emily into forgetting his love and that she's seen them this way. He tells her to live her passion and never to write about vampires again. When she sees Andrew's body on the pavement below, she despairs that what happened with Frankie has happened again. She pulls away from Nick and vows never to write about vampires again.

In his apartment, Nick is upset because he almost destroyed Emily, but Natalie insists that what he felt for her was a positive thing and that the sacrifice he made by not taking her for himself was a very human gesture. Quoting the last line of *The Denied,* she tells him, "Love can destroy and yet create. Nothing before love will ever be the same after it." Natalie claims that what Nick felt has brought him closer to what he wants to be, then adds, "Ain't love a bitch!"

**BAD BLOOD**
written by James Johnston
directed by Allan Kroeker

**Guest Cast**
Cedric Smith as "Liam O'Neal"
with

Kimberly Huie ..... Bridget Hellman
Earl Pastko ..... Miklos
Todd William Schroeder ..... Karl
Ken Ketter ..... Barber/The Ripper
Cliff Saunders ..... Irish Man
Sandi Ross ..... Grace Balthazar
John Swindells ..... Father Hurley
Krista Bridges ..... Sharon
Theodora Farray ..... Raven Waitress
John E. Campbell ..... Young O'Neal Boy
Bryan Renfro ..... Jogger

**Synopsis**

A man and woman stroll through a park at night, then stop to kiss. They are frightened by a sound coming from among the trees and rush back to the car. The man lets the woman into the passenger side, then is attacked as he walks around towards the driver's side. From inside the car, the woman screams as the man's body is torn to pieces and blood splatters the car.

Chief Inspector O'Neal from Dublin C.I.D. joins the investigative team. He is after a serial killer, and the killing in the park fits the pattern. There were four such murders in Dublin in 1979, four in Iceland in 1983, and seven in Maine in 1987. A rookie detective, Bridget Hellman, petitions Cohen to be let in on the case, and Cohen relents. Nick offers to have the department issue O'Neal a gun, but O'Neal doubts that it would do any good in this particular case.

A jogger has been killed in the same manner as the first victim. While investigating, O'Neal remarks that there is very little blood left in the body, and he thinks that Nick might have some idea where it went. Nick takes off to visit Janette at the Raven. He asks if she knows who the killer is, and she says that he's been known by many names - among them, Jack the Ripper.

O'Neal remarks to Natalie and Schanke that Nick left the crime scene rather abruptly. Schanke tells him that Nick does that - get used to it. O'Neal says that he was sorry to hear about Nick's sun allergy and starts asking questions about Nick's private life. As they are heading back in the car, Natalie tries to steer the conversation in a different direction, then almost gets into a head-on collision when O'Neal asks her if she believes in vampires.

Janette reveals that Jack the Ripper is much more than a vampire. LaCroix knew that and feared it when he brought him across. Nick flashes back to London, 1888. LaCroix is ill, having been poisoned by bad blood. He fed on a surgeon-barber in the East End and wants Nick to go to the alley behind the man's shop to be certain that he's dead, while Janette gets fresh blood to cleanse him. The barber was evil and had laughed when LaCroix fed on him, but couldn't "finish him." LaCroix wants to be certain that he doesn't "come over." Nick refuses to help and says that he's leaving for America in the morning. LaCroix tells Janette to pray that the barber does not live.

In his hotel room, O'Neal parts the curtains and finds himself looking into the bright sunlight. He screams in pain and grabs his neck, where there are two small, round scars. In a flashback to his youth, O'Neal's mother has been killed, and he has been bitten in the neck. He is brought to a priest, who sprinkles holy water on the wound.

Natalie visits Nick and informs him that O'Neal has been asking questions about him. Nick tells her that he knows who the killer is, and she isn't going to believe it. In a flashback, Nick finds the barber in the alley, but doesn't kill him. Nick walks away, and the barber opens his eyes.

At the morgue, Hellman finds it difficult to look at the mutilated bodies. O'Neal tells her that she'll get over the physical reaction, but the day that it stops bothering her emotionally is the day that she's been a cop too long. As a token of their newfound friendship, he gives her a silver Celtic cross on a chain. He puts it around her neck and asks that she wear it day and night while he is there, claiming that the Irish are a superstitious lot. She is embarrassed when Nick and Schanke catch her giving O'Neal a "thank you" kiss on the cheek, and she tucks the cross inside her shirt. In the car, Schanke teases Hellman about O'Neal, and Nick gives her

permission to shoot Schanke if he's bothering her. Hellman explains that she was only kissing O'Neal to thank him for the gift. She shows the cross to Nick, and he nearly crashes into oncoming traffic, causing Schanke to complain that everyone seems to have forgotten how to drive.

Back at the precinct, O'Neal goes through Nick's desk and finds a matchbook from the Raven. O'Neal visits the Raven and wants information about Nick, but Miklos simply takes his drink order. O'Neal tries to get a waitress to talk about Nick, but she claims not to know him. He grabs her and holds a Celtic cross inches from her face. She has no adverse reaction to the cross, but calls Miklos over to help her get away from O'Neal. When Miklos comes over, O'Neal holds the cross against Miklos's forehead, but it does not burn him. O'Neal apologizes, but Miklos grabs him by the arm and kicks him out of the club. The waitress asks Janette what that was all about, and Janette replies that he must have been a Jehovah's Witness. Janette is about to make a phone call, and LaCroix tells her to "make sure he gets here just before sunrise."

Nick gets Janette's message at the police station and arrives at the Raven just before sunrise. LaCroix has lured him there because he is trying to help him. LaCroix and Janette explain that O'Neal can sense their presence because he was nearly one of them. He was half-drained, but unlike the barber, he did not taste enough vampire blood to come fully across. Instead, he became a hunter. LaCroix plans for O'Neal to meet the barber and has planted soybean residue at the murder scenes in order to lure him to the Queen's Key Mill, the barber's lair. But it is Schanke and Hellman that follow up the lead. The mill is huge, and it's going to take them all day to search it.

Later in the day, O'Neal, who can tolerate far more sunlight than the vampires, arrives at the precinct, and Natalie pulls him aside. Natalie reveals that she knows enough about what's going on to tell him that they'd better get the hell down to the mill before the sun sets. She also tells him that Nick is on his side, but he is unconvinced.

Nick calls the station and learns that Schanke and Hellman have gone to the mill. He is worried, and LaCroix tells him that he had his chance long ago, and it's much too late now. When Nick senses the sun setting, he races out of the Raven.

Schanke and Hellman have split up to search. When Hellman encounters a set of doors secured by a chain and a padlock, she reports to Schanke on the walkie-talkie that she's at a dead end, and it's getting dark. They are both spooked by the old mill and agree to pack it in and meet at the car. Hellman hears a noise and looks at the doors again to discover that the padlock is now open. She goes through the doors and is examining a large wooden crate when the barber comes up from behind her, baring his fangs and growling. She runs out, bars the doors, and is panic-stricken when she reports to Schanke on the walkie-talkie. The barber breaks down the doors, and she shoots him, which has no effect. She runs away, calling for Schanke. Schanke tries to follow her voice, but trips in the darkness and is knocked unconscious when he falls. Hellman runs outside, right into the killer. As Nick flies to the mill, the killer bites Hellman's neck. Natalie and O'Neal have arrived, and Natalie runs forward yelling, "No!" The killer then seems to take an interest in Natalie. O'Neal brings Natalie's car around, and when the killer drops Hellman, O'Neal crashes the car into the killer and into the building, where it bursts into flames. O'Neal is trapped in the car, but Nick comes through the flames, rips the car door off, and rescues him as the killer is consumed by fire. O'Neal thanks Nick, promises his secrecy, and admits that Nick is not like the rest. O'Neal cradles Hellman's body, feeling responsible. Perhaps if he had told her why, she would have worn the cross on the outside, where it could have protected her.

Back at the precinct, O'Neal says his good byes to Cohen, Schanke, and Natalie. Natalie says that Nick will be sorry that he missed him. Nick should be in soon, but O'Neal has a few things to do before he catches the red-eye home. Natalie tells O'Neal that she would really like to study him, and he replies that he'll never be able to concentrate on the in-flight movie now.

At the Raven, Janette chastises Nick for saving O'Neal's life, but Nick is grateful that O'Neal finished something that he could have prevented. O'Neal stopped the killing that began because of Nick. Janette predicts that Nick will regret his decision. She believes that O'Neal will eventually forget how Nick helped him and return to hunt them down.

O'Neal sits on a bench near Hellman's grave. Hellman, now a vampire, comes up from behind and greets him. He says that he's been expecting her, then turns and shoots a wooden stake through her heart with a crossbow.

## FORWARD INTO THE PAST

written by Michael Levine and John Scheinfeld
directed by Don McCutcheon

### Guest Cast

Stephanie Morgenstern as "Young Katherine Barrington"
with

Corinne Conley .....older Katherine Barrington
Donald Davis ..... older Jeremy Stanton
Carolyn Hay ..... Ava
Paul O'Sullivan .....Paul Blondell
Venetia Marie ..... young Madelyn Pinchot
Matt Cooke .....young Jeremy Stanton
R. D. Reid ..... Aristotle
John Freisen ..... Detective Norton
Vernon Chapman ..... George
Fran Elliott .....older Madelyn Pinchot

### Synopsis

Madelyn Pinchot is tortured and killed by a man who demands to know where Katherine is. When Nick investigates, he recognizes the victim. In a flashback to the 1950's, Madelyn cries out and pounds on a garage door as exhaust fumes pour out from underneath it, but she can't open it. Katherine Barrington is unconscious in the car inside. Nick runs out of the house, and his eyes glow as he uses his vampire strength to lift the garage door. Madelyn is terrified and backs away. Seeing Nick staring at the murder victim, Schanke asks if he knew her, but Nick denies it.

Madelyn is a "Jane Doe," but Nick admits to Natalie that he knew her. Nick, then known as Nicholas Hammond, became friends with Gordon and Katherine Barrington in London in the 1950's. Then they moved to Toronto, where Nick visited Katherine after being notified of Gordon's death. Madelyn was Katherine's private secretary and confidante, almost like a sister. Shortly after Nick's arrival, Katherine and Madelyn disappeared without a trace, with help from "an expert." Schanke arrives at the morgue and is annoyed with Nick. "God forbid you should let me know where you're going," he says. "People might actually start to think that we're partners."

The victim matches the description of a psychic named Madame Natasha Perry, who has been reported missing. Nick and Schanke visit her apartment and are invited in before they even knock. The apartment has been trashed, but Madame Natasha's pupil, Ava Franklin, reports that nothing is missing. When she shakes Nick's hand, she gets a vision and knows that Madame Natasha (Madelyn) has been found dead. Ava reports that before Madame Natasha disappeared, she was visited by an old man. In a flashback to just after Gordon's funeral, Gordon's business partner, Jeremy Stanton, pesters Katherine about business matters in her time of grief. Ava tries to use her psychic powers to help catch the killer, but all she gets are visions of music, dancing, and a spinning ball. Nick finds a recent picture of Katherine among Madame Natasha's belongings.

Nick suspects powerful businessman Jeremy Stanton of the murder, but he won't tell Schanke why. In a flashback, Katherine doesn't want to be involved with Barrington-Stanton Industries, but she doesn't feel that Gordon would want her to sell her interest. Besides, she enjoys keeping Stanton "in check." Nick admires her automobile, an Auburn, which was a birthday present from Gordon. Katherine believes that Stanton killed her husband and that she'll be next.

At the police station, Nick flashes back to visiting the precinct as a civilian in the 1950's. He expresses Katherine's concerns to Detective Norton, who dismisses them and says that Gordon simply had a car accident. Norton refuses to suspect Stanton, who is "a pillar of the community."

The killer observes Madame Natasha's apartment from the street and fingers a wire garrote.

At the Raven, Janette invites Nick to indulge in one of her finest vintages - meaning, of course, a bottle of human blood. Nick declines, and Janette groans, "Always so politically correct." Nick asks for her help in getting in touch with "Aristotle," and Janette assumes that he has decided to move on. He gives her a friendly peck on the cheek and says, "Not yet, you'd miss me too much.' Janette agrees to help him. He thanks her, kisses her firmly on the mouth, then leaves. She is momentarily speechless, then whispers, "You're welcome."

In a flashback, Katherine is attacked and rendered unconscious as she gets into her car in the garage. The attacker starts the car, then sabotages the garage door. Madelyn sees the exhaust fumes pouring out from under the door, but can't open it. Nick hears her cries and runs out of the house to help. His eyes glow as he uses his vampire strength to lift the garage door. Terrified, Madelyn backs away. Nick carries Katherine into

the fresh air, and Madelyn tells her that Nick "changed." In his apartment, Nick relates the story while Natalie serves dinner. Natalie eats, but Nick pushes his plate away. He tells her that he made Madelyn forget, but he told Katherine the truth. "I'm not sure why. Some friendships are deeper than others, huh? You trust your soul to them," he explains, fondly touching Nat's head as she smiles up at him. Stanton tried to kill Katherine and make it look like a suicide. It was only a matter of time before he would try again. In a flashback, Nick tells Katherine that he has had to leave one life behind and start another many times. Since she owns fifty-one percent of the company, she could run the company by proxy, and Stanton would never know where she was. Nick tells Natalie that the expert who helped Katherine and Madelyn disappear is one of the best in the world. It was just dumb luck that led Stanton to a chance encounter with Madelyn. Schanke calls and reports that Ava is dead.

While investigating Ava's death, Schanke hopes that Nick doesn't still suspect Stanton. Schanke has checked him out, and he is "squeaky clean." Schanke realizes that Nick is holding information back from him, and as Nick leaves, Schanke calls after him, "Nick, come on! We're partners, remember?" Schanke gets not reply and mutters, "Apparently not."

Nick visits Stanton, who says that Nick looks vaguely familiar. Stanton says that he saw Madame Natasha on the street and thought she bore an uncanny resemblance to someone he thought passed away years before. Since she was murdered the next day, Nick wonders if there is some connection. Stanton becomes indignant, and Nick sarcastically apologizes, saying that he knows this is a stressful time for Stanton. Nick has read about a big merger that recently fell through. One vote - Katherine Barrington's - stood between Stanton and half a billion dollars.

At home, Nick studies an enlargement of the photo of Katherine that he found at Madame Natasha's apartment. Janette calls to say that Aristotle will see him.

Nick visits Aristotle in a computer-filled basement. Assuming that Nick wants to move on, Aristotle first suggests Hong Kong, then changes his mind because the Chinese are taking it back. He then suggests Alaska because it has six months of night. Of course, the six months of day that follow could be problematic. Nick says that he's looking for a friend whom Aristotle helped years ago, but Aristotle says that Nick knows the rules. Nick flashes back to visiting Aristotle years before. He was in the same basement, although it wasn't modernized and computerized. Assuming that Nick wants to move on, Aristotle warns him to stay away from the States, as he might be mistaken for a Communist. When he learns that Nick wants him to help two mortals disappear, Aristotle protests that the Enforcers will incinerate him. But Aristotle owes Nick because of "that time at the battle of Hastings" and "that Inquisition matter," so he relents. Back in the present, Aristotle says that he would never tell anyone where Nick is, and he refuses to tell Nick where anyone else is. In a flashback, Katherine and Madelyn prepare to disappear, and Katherine is devastated because she has to leave the Auburn behind.

The man who killed Madelyn and Ava reports to Stanton that he has found Katherine.

Nick studies the photo of Katherine and notices the shadow of an Auburn's hood ornament.

Katherine and her husband, George, are at a dance. A mirrored ball spins from the ceiling.

There are only two 1936 Auburns registered in Ontario. One is owned by a museum; the other is owned by a woman. The killer follows Nick from the police station, but Nick turns the tables on him and locks him in the trunk of the Caddy. After calling Schanke and telling him to pick up the suspect, Nick flies to Katherine's home, where an Auburn is parked in the driveway. No one is home, but Nick finds an advertisement for a ballroom dance.

Stanton arrives as the dance is ending. While George gets their coats, Stanton approaches Katherine on the deserted dance floor. As he is about to shoot her, Nick flies in and grabs the gun.

At his apartment, Nick and Katherine go through old photos. After all these years, she thought it would be safe to return. With Stanton in jail, Katherine decides to sell the company. She pulls a torn half of a photo (showing Nick) from the album, saying, "I don't suppose ..." Nick pulls his half (showing Katherine and Gordon) from his breast pocket. They happily reunite the two halves of the photo. Nick holds her arm and kisses her affectionately on the cheek.

♪♪("Suite from FORWARD INTO THE PAST" is on the *Forever Knight Soundtrack.*)

**CAPITAL OFFENSE**
written by Michael Sadowski
directed by Timothy Bond

**Guest Cast**
Lisa Langlois as "Laura" and "Marise"
with

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| Robert King | Danny Carruthers | Lenore Zann | Amber |
| Rebecca Bell | Sgt. Lillian | Lise Lebel | Mother Superior |
| Victor Erdos | Car Rental Clerk | | |

**Synopsis**

After receiving an anonymous tip that a convicted killer, Laura Garfield, will be arriving in Toronto, Nick and Schanke apprehend her in a parking garage. She was convicted of hacking her husband, David, to death with an ax, then she escaped during a transfer to a Texas death row. She insists that she is going to be put to death for a crime she didn't commit. Laura's case is famous - she was even interviewed in prison by Barbara Walters. The trial aired on The Gavel Channel, and Schanke's wife, Myra, has the whole thing on tape. When Schanke wonders aloud why she would have it on tape, Nick tells him not to worry, but advises him to sleep with one eye open.

Laura claims that Danny Carruthers killed her husband for drug money and framed her for the murder. She says that he's still in Houston, but Nick and Schanke wonder if he was the one who tipped them off, knowing that Laura would be looking for him once she escaped. Laura tells them that Carruthers has a friend in Toronto, Billy Briese, who provided his alibi for the night of the murder. Laura gives them a photograph showing her husband, Briese, and Carruthers. She insists that she is innocent and is desperate for someone to trust her. She says that they don't know how lonely it is - always running, with no one to turn to.

In a flashback to France, Nick is being hunted by men with dogs, and he takes refuge in the cellar of a convent. The sun has risen, and his face and hands are burned. A young novitiate finds him hiding.

In his car, Nick listens to "The Nightcrawler" on the radio. LaCroix urges his listeners to trust him and to confess their sins to him.

In the morgue, Nick and Natalie debate the death penalty. Nick is against it, which Natalie finds ironic for a vampire, but Nick is not so sure that death is even a penalty. For some reason, Nick trusts Laura. Natalie tells him that that's a very human feeling and can get him into big trouble, but she tells him to run with it.

Although Laura has already had her day in court, Nick convinces Cohen to let him look into her case. Schanke wanted to use the free time between cases to go up to the lake with Myra, and he is not very pleased when Cohen insists that he "fish" with his partner instead. They only have twenty-four hours, though, because U.S. marshals will be coming for Laura the next night.

Schanke accuses Nick of ruining the romance in his life. According to Schanke, Myra responds heatedly to the call of the wild, and fishing triggers the spawning instinct in her.

Nick tells Laura that they are looking into her case, and if they find any new evidence, they will try to get the case reopened.

Schanke tells Nick that Laura is yanking his chain and has him pegged for a "wuss." At a look from Nick, he amends it to "a sensitive guy, a dedicated truth-seeker." He's sure that Laura is taking advantage of Nick's "warm, fuzzy nature," but Nick believes that she's telling the truth.

In a flashback, the young nun, Marise, wants to help Nick. She even lies when the Mother Superior comes to ask if Marise has seen a "dangerous fugitive." In the short time that Marise talked to the Mother Superior, Nick's eyes glowed, and his bums healed. Nick tells Marise that he was not injured at all - it was just a trick of the light that made her think so. Marise says that she will bring Nick food and help him escape after dark.

Nick and Schanke go to Briese's apartment and find that he was murdered with an ax while he slept. Natalie reports that the electric blanket on his bed kept his body temperature up, making the time of death difficult to determine. He's been dead anywhere from two to twenty-four hours.

In the car, Schanke shuts off "The Nightcrawler" and asks why Nick listens to that creep. Nick admits that it's an acquired taste. Nick is sure that Carruthers, not Laura, killed Briese.

In a flashback, Nick is awakened in the convent's cellar by LaCroix, who is also seeking shelter from the sunlight. Nick wants nothing to do with him and insists that their association is over. LaCroix's killing spree the previous night is the reason for the hunting party. LaCroix promises not to harm any of the nuns, however, claming that he has no taste for holiness in any of its forms and that it plays havoc with his digestion. "Oh, Nicholas," he sighs, "don't you trust me?"

In an attempt to locate Carruthers, Nick and Schanke compare Briese's telephone records with the numbers in his address books, one from his apartment and one from the apartment of his fiancée, Amber. They are looking for any number that was dialed repeatedly in the last few weeks.

At home, Nick plays Beethoven's "Moonlight Sonata" on his piano and flashes back to waking up as Marise enters with some food. LaCroix is nowhere to be seen, and Marise says that she hasn't seen anyone else. Marise shows him a wooden music box that her mother gave her. She opens it, and it plays the "Moonlight Sonata." It's against her vows to have possessions, but she couldn't bring herself to part with it. She offers Nick the few coins that are inside, but he refuses. He agrees to keep her secret, as she has kept his. Marise is helping Nick because she feels that there is a goodness in him, although it seems that it's been hidden for a long time.

Nick, Laura, and a police sergeant are en route to the airport to return Laura to the States, while Schanke checks out a list of Briese's frequently dialed phone numbers. One of the numbers is for the Selby Hotel, and Schanke confirms that Carruthers is staying there. Schanke informs Nick that he's holding Carruthers at the hotel, and Nick detours from his assignment to meet him there. The sergeant, who openly dislikes Laura, protests that Nick is violating procedure. Outside the hotel, Nick is telling Laura and the sergeant to wait in the car when the dispatcher's voice tells him to stand by for Captain Cohen. Nick turns the radio off, and Laura smiles gratefully at him.

In a flashback, Nick admires Marise's music box while waiting for her to return. LaCroix enters, carrying her lifeless body. Marise trusted Nick, and LaCroix says that trust is a very human venture, flawed and doomed. Claiming that it's "best to reserve your trust for your own kind," LaCroix removes the coins from the music box, then tosses it into the blazing fireplace.

Before going into the hotel, Nick tells the sergeant not to touch the radio.

Natalie reports to Cohen that Forensics has found Laura's fingerprints at the scene of Briese's murder.

Carruthers denies killing David or Briese, and claims that he didn't even know that Briese was dead. He came to Toronto to warn Briese, knowing that Laura would be gunning for them. He also admits that he is the one who tipped off the police that Laura would be coming to Toronto.

Outside, the sergeant is reaching for the radio when Laura strangles her, then takes her gun.

Since Nick has not responded to the radio, Cohen puts out an APB on 81-Kilo.

Laura enters the hotel room with the gun pointed at Carruthers. Schanke immediately pulls his gun on Laura. Nick draws his gun on Laura, also, and tries to talk her out of killing Carruthers. Trying to placate Laura, Carruthers tells the detectives that he helped her kill David. Laura shoots and wounds Carruthers, then turns the gun on the detectives, and they shoot her. As Laura dies, she thanks Nick for everything, saying that she couldn't have done it without him.

At home, Nick is despondent. He has lived 800 years and wonders what the hell he's learned. He feels guilty that he could have gotten Schanke killed. Natalie says that it was a leap of faith that didn't work out, but Nick feels that LaCroix was right and that he would be better off trusting no one. Natalie tells Nick that he can't force the transformation back to being human and that he needs to just "let it happen." He wants to know what guarantee he has that it will happen. Nick gets a bottle of blood from the fridge, and Natalie pleads, "Nick, please don't." He tells her to turn away if she can't watch. Natalie reminds him that she is doing all that she can do to help him, and what he is doing ... "Is a betrayal, I know," Nick finishes for her. He hesitates, then recorks the bottle and hands it to her. She thanks him and tells him that it can happen, adding, "Trust me."

Nick recalls the image of Marise's music box burning in the fireplace and recalls the words of "The Nightcrawler": "You will always have something that I value, part of you that I will always welcome. Trust me."

**HUNTED**
written by Roy Sallows
directed by Allan Kroeker

**Guest Cast**
Gwynyth Walsh as "The Hunter"
with
Robert Collins ..... The Biker
Nicky Gaudagni ..... Elizabeth Trethewey
Brian Tree ..... Walter Trethewey
David Bedard ..... Yates

**Synopsis**

William Bartholomew Yates hurries through The Courtyard. He repeatedly stops, hides, looks around suspiciously, pulls his knife, and checks his watch, which shows two digital displays. The top display remains constant at "30:00," while the bottom display counts down the seconds. As he rummages through a trash can, the watch reaches zero and beeps. Pulling his knife, he looks around nervously. He spots a gun lying nearby, picks it up, and fires once. He is then shot and killed. The killer steps over his body, removes a suitcase from the trash can, and walks away.

At the precinct, Schanke is on the phone explaining to an unhappy Myra that he doesn't have time to take off and watch the whales mate at the Gulf of St. Lawrence. He informs Nick that no one in The Courtyard saw or heard anything, as usual. There have been six such killings in the last month, each with an identical watch. Schanke refers to the killer as the "Garbage Man."

At the morgue, Schanke explains the nickname - the killer "takes out the trash." Natalie doesn't like the pattern. The first two victims were old and homeless, the third was a laborer, the fourth was a bike courier, the fifth was a small-time street punk, and Yates was a drugged-up, skinhead, knife fighter. Each was more dangerous than the last. It's a game and a thrill for the killer. In a flashback, LaCroix brings Nick and Janette to the woods, saying that it will be much more challenging and exciting to hunt a hunter than to feed on the easy prey in the village.

Nick and Schanke hit the streets to investigate, and Nick follows a biker into an alley. As the biker is about to look inside a barrel, he is shot at by an unseen shooter. Nick rushes over and takes the bullets instead. In a panic, the biker spins around, and he fires several shots into Nick, as well. As Nick grabs the gun and knocks the biker out, the shooter walks away with a suitcase. The biker's watch counts down to zero and beeps. The biker can't believe that Nick is alive, and when Schanke arrives, the biker tells him that he shot Nick. "Do you think we're stupid, my friend?" Schanke asks, tapping his bulletproof vest. In a flashback, the three vampires approach a hunter at his campfire. The hunter kills for food, not satisfaction, and is uneasy with LaCroix's talk about basking in the kill and relishing the control over life and death. He leaves, claiming that his wife will fret if he is overdue. The vampires give him a bit of a head start, then pursue him.

With a history of violent crimes and a manslaughter conviction, the killer fits into the pattern of a more dangerous victim. "God, how sick do you have to be to get your thrills like this?" Natalie wonders. Nick flashes back to the exhilaration of the chase. Realizing that their prey is a hunter like themselves and understands their thinking, Nick does the unexpected and returns to the camp. Nick is deep in thought, and Natalie questions him, but he won't talk about it.

The biker tells the detectives that a small tape recorder was left on his table in a bar, with a note that read: "Play me." An electronically altered voice told him that two million dollars in cash was waiting for him and that someone would be hunting him. There was a watch wrapped around the recorder, and it was counting down. He had as much time as was left on the watch to collect the cash. The killer has brains and money, which Cohen comments is a rare combination.

When Schanke goes out to his car, he is shot with a tranquilizer dart. When Nick goes to his car, he finds a tape recorder and a watch. He has thirty minutes to rescue Schanke from the old Harris Generating Station, or a bomb will explode. He must come alone, unarmed, and on foot. While Nick hunts for Schanke, the killer will be hunting Nick. Cash is the usual prize, but what would cash mean to one of Nick's kind? The killer got a good look at Nick earlier and knows what he is. The sun is rising, so Nick dashes down a storm drain. In a flashback, the hunter leads LaCroix and Janette back to the campfire and is about to shoot them with a bow and arrow when Nick, who was waiting for him, attacks him from behind. Nick tells him, "As a hunter,

you know why I do this. We are not that different, you and I." Then he bites the man's neck. Nick makes his way across town underground, avoiding the shafts of sunlight coming through the grates.

Schanke is tied to a chair. A woman enters and removes his blindfold. He asks her to cut him free so that he can protect her from the psycho who's running around. She laughs, and he realizes that she is the killer. She tells him that it's all about sport and asks what the one thing is that humans have fought for throughout history. "I don't know. Food?" he guesses. She answers that it is power. Killing is the ultimate control, rivaling the gods. She prepares for Nick by stuffing hollow-pointed bullets with garlic and readying a crossbow with plenty of wooden arrows. She reveals that the bomb taped to the underside of Schanke's chair is lethal for about twenty feet.

Nick emerges from the tunnels with 16 minutes, 4 seconds remaining on the watch. He stands against a wall which offers some shade from the sun. The killer rounds a comer and congratulates him on getting so far. She shoots, and the bullet leaves a streak of red across his cheek. He advances on her, but the sunlight immediately drives him back into the shadows. She feels that Nick, a creature designed to hunt and kill, is the perfect adversary. He almost succeeds in hypnotizing her, but she snaps herself out of it. She laughs as he runs off with 13 minutes, 27 seconds left. Inside, Schanke makes a promise to take Myra on a vacation if he gets out of this.

Smoke pours from Nick's body as he rips off the door to the power station and runs inside. He has 9 minutes, 33 seconds left and is weak from being out in the daytime. In a flashback, the vampires finish off the hunter, and Nick feels guilty because he couldn't stop himself. LaCroix and Janette fly off, but Nick hides and watches as the hunter's wife finds her husband's body and cries hysterically. In the vast power station, the killer stalks Nick as he searches for Schanke with 4 minutes, 58 seconds remaining. The killer has left a tape recorder running, expounding on how similar she and Nick are. They both have a greatness in them that no one can appreciate, and they both prey on the weak and stupid. From a catwalk, she sends a bottle of holy water crashing to the floor at Nick's feet, then drops a couple of Molotov cocktails, surrounding him with fire. She drops a third one as he climbs the stairs towards her, He reaches the catwalk with 2 minutes, 50 seconds left. His progress is blocked by a cross, and he backs away from her on the catwalk . She shoots him, and he denies that they are kindred spirits. She is surprised to encounter a vampire with a conscience. He flashes back to the hunter's wife crying over her husband's body. He has exactly 2 minutes left. Insisting that she must win, she shoots him three more times, and he tumbles off the catwalk. She looks for him, but he has disappeared. She returns to the room where Schanke is tied up, dons night-vision goggles, and turns off the power. Her gun is trained on Schanke in the darkness. Suddenly, Nick comes crashing in from the outside through a set of blackened windows, blinding Schanke and the killer with the sunlight. The killer fires aimlessly in Nick's direction as he tries to shelter himself from the light. Nick runs behind Schanke and is untying him when the killer fires an arrow, which Nick grabs in midair, inches from his chest, and snaps like a twig. Nick frees Schanke with 9 seconds left, He rips off the watch and throws it to the ground as he and Schanke run out. The killer grabs her gun and starts after them, but trips and falls. From her vantage point on the floor, she can see the bomb under the chair, as well as the watch counting down: 3...2...I...0. "Oh, sh ..." she begins, then the bomb explodes.

At the morgue, Natalie removes the last of the garlic, relieving Nick of the feeling that a thousand scorpions have stung him all at once. She is amazed at how fast his burns healed and asks if he decided that today would be a good day to spontaneously combust, since he'd gone out into the sunlight. He explains that the killer understood her prey, so he had to do something unexpected. Schanke arrives and complains that after spending the morning sitting on a tactical nuclear weapon, Myra gave him a hard time for not calling and was again insisting on seeing the whales mate. At least when he was sitting on the bomb, he had time to think. Natalie tells him that it's pretty peaceful in the morgue. She's sure the others wouldn't mind if he found a nice place to lie down. Schanke tells Nick that Natalie has a twisted sense of humor. Nick agrees that it's a little dark, but then, he likes dark. He kisses Natalie on the cheek, and she smiles after him as he leaves with Schanke. Schanke tells him that if he likes dark, he would enjoy candlelight bowling.

♪♪("Suite from THE HUNTED" is on the *Forever Knight Soundtrack.*)

## FAITHFUL FOLLOWERS

written by Naomi Janzen
directed by Jon Cassar

### Guest Cast

Karl Pruner as "Matthew"
with

Linda Prystawski ..... Holly Barber
Jody Racicot ..... David Barton
Anne Wessels ..... Helen Ruskin-Slater
Susan Bryson ..... Egyptian Servant Girl
Christine Reeves ..... Alyce Hunter
Christina Cox ..... Joan of Arc
Andrea Roth ..... Lucy/Sylvaine
Robert Bockstael ..... Thomas the Vampire
Gerry Mendicino ..... Councillor Cardelli
Paul Wildbaum ..... Tattoo Artist
John Stoneham Jr. ..... Vincent Cardelli
Helene Rousse ..... 13th Century Mile
Cynthia Belliveau ..... Alexandra

### Synopsis

Water from a mop bucket is poured onto a basement floor, a circuit breaker is flipped, and Vincent Cardelli is electrocuted while repairing some wiring in the Luminology center. The cult won't talk to outsiders, and Councilman Cardelli, who signs the police's paychecks, is pressuring Cohen to find his son's killer. Nick has gone undercover and hasn't been heard from in weeks.

Matthew Davidson, the head of Luminology, explains to his group that the sun is a symbol, used as a focal point for meditation. He calls the Luminologists "scientists of the heart." Matthew talks about not being able to forgive one's self for past mistakes, and Nick flashes back to Egypt, earlier this century. A fellow vampire, Thomas, wants Nick's help in finding a cure for vampirism.

Natalie finds it weird that Nick hasn't checked in, but Schanke insists that "weird is B.A.U. (Business As Usual) for Nick." He probably just can't get away without blowing his cover.

One of the Luminologists, David Barton, is despondent and on the verge of suicide because his parents disapprove of him. Matthew comforts him and says that the group is his family now, then takes the gun. The group, especially a member named Holly, is impressed. Later, they watch as David lies trancelike on a couch with a silver disk on his forehead. Matthew instructs him to imagine the energy and power of the sun's light filling his body and says, "The light is our cure. The light is knowledge." In a flashback, Thomas shows Nick hieroglyphics indicating that the ancient Egyptians had a cure for vampirism. He wants Nick to convince an acquaintance, Helen Ruskin-Slater of Oxford, one of the finest hieroglyphics translators in the world, to assist them. She is currently less than a day's journey away. Matthew suggests that Nick take the couch next.

At the precinct, Cardelli berates Cohen and Schanke for not having solved the case yet.

Nick lies on the couch with a disk on his forehead to help him focus on letting the sun's energy enter and cleanse him. When told to visualize the sun's healing rays, he flashes on various incidents when, as a vampire, he hid from the deadly rays. The other members leave, as is the custom for someone's first cleansing. Matthew talks about the light flowing into Nick, eradicating evil, and Nick flashes on episodes of killing, violence, and fire. Highly agitated, he bolts upright, snapping out of the trance. With his back to Matthew, his eyes glow red, and he bares his fangs.

Schanke sneaks into the kitchen of the Luminology center and tries to talk to Nick, who is unresponsive and is stirring a pot of soup, trancelike. Schanke gets very worried. Meanwhile, Matthew tells David to let the others know that they won't be accepting any new members until Vincent's death is resolved. He also tells him to find out everything he can about Nicholas "Corrigan." Nick tells Schanke that he's staying with the Luminologists and not to come back.

Schanke worries that Nick has succumbed to the cult and tells Natalie that he was like a zombie. "Close," she mutters. Natalie then visits the Raven, where a rose tattoo is being applied to Janette's shoulder. The artist is annoyed when told to come back tomorrow. The tattoo will be gone, and he'll have to do it all over. Janette assures Natalie that she needn't worry about Nick.

Matthew is pleased with Nick's first cleansing, although Nick says that he doesn't remember much of it. Matthew says that's a common side effect. He has the session on videotape, however. Knowing that Matthew has plans to expand the facility, Nick offers to help financially. Matthew says that they'll talk about it later. In

a flashback, Nick brings Helen Ruskin-Slater to Thomas. Thomas escorts Helen to a tent and asks Nick to bring a cup of tea for their guest.

Nick wheels the mop bucket into the kitchen of the Luminology center and converses with Holly, who is making sandwiches. Matthew has made such a difference in her life. Two months ago, she was "nuts" because of the pressures of her marriage, her parents, and her kids. When asked where her two little girls are now, she happily replies, "I don't know," then giggles.

Schanke tells Natalie that Vincent had a trust fund worth thousands, and Matthew was the beneficiary. Natalie reports that traces of tri-tetranovazine, a very powerful psychotropic drug, were found in Vincent's body. Schanke is not surprised, since Vincent had a history of emotional problems, as do several of the other Luminologists. Schanke has also learned that all of the people in the cult are "filthy rich." Natalie and Schanke wonder if Nick has gone "over to the other side" and given Matthew any money. In Matthew's office, Nick hands him a very generous check.

Cohen is upset when Schanke reports his concerns about Nick, and she asks how well Schanke knows his partner. Schanke stammers for a bit, then finally has to admit that he and Nick are not close at all, which is why he has to check Nick's bank account. Cohen agrees to run a check on the accounts of both Nicholas Knight and his pseudonym, Nicholas Corrigan.

Pretending to be on the verge of a nervous breakdown, Natalie goes to the Luminologists. David is reluctant to let her in because of Matthew's order, but Holly takes Natalie under her wing.

Cohen gives Schanke the bank records and says that it's his call whether or not they go in after Nick tomorrow. He reads, and suddenly, his eyes widen. He whispers, "You son of a ..."

Nick passes Holly and Natalie in the hall and shows no sign of recognition. In a flashback, Nick enters the tent to find that Thomas has just killed Helen and won a bet. Thomas had wagered LaCroix that he could get Nick to deliver Helen to him, simply by telling him what he wanted to hear. LaCroix says that Nick's quest is hopeless and will only cause Nick and others misery.

Matthew watches on closed-circuit TV as Holly extols the virtues of Matthew and Luminology to Natalie. He tells David, who has a couple of the disks on his arm, to "take care of it," and David takes out a gun. When Holly goes to find Matthew, Natalie calls Schanke. Matthew listens as she discusses Nick. On another monitor, Matthew observes Nick walking down a hall.

Matthew walks in on Nick, whom he now knows to be a detective, going through the videotapes. Meanwhile, David pulls a gun on Natalie, and Holly hits him from behind with a pipe, knocking him out. Holly takes the gun and claims that, like Vincent, David is poison and is trying to tear Matthew down. In the office, Matthew insists that they had nothing to do with Vincent's death. Nick tells him that administering drugs without consent, via the disks, is illegal enough. Holly listens from outside the office door, then enters and points the gun at Matthew.

Schanke arrives, and Natalie, who is attending to the injured David, informs him that Holly is running around with a loaded .38 and is not very happy right now. In the office, Holly says she didn't believe it when Vincent told her about Matthew. Matthew urges her not to listen to anyone else. Schanke enters with his gun drawn as Holly tells Matthew that everyone believed in him, trusted him, and gave him all their money. She says that she loved him. Nick steps between Holly and Matthew, and Holly admits killing Vincent to protect Matthew. Nick tells her that it wasn't her fault. Matthew saw that she would do anything to find hope and direction. Nick flashes back to Thomas killing Helen and says that's when we're weak enough to be deceived. Holly breaks down in tears. Schanke takes the gun, and Nick embraces her while Schanke handcuffs Matthew.

In Nick's apartment, Natalie takes Nick's blood pressure, and they assure Schanke that there will be no residual effects from the disks. When asked about the $1.2 million in his bank account, Nick claims that it was a courtesy from a friendly bank manager, so that Matthew wouldn't think he was a bad investment. Nick then explains that he simply had the funds transferred from his savings to his checking account, and Schanke scoffs, "Yeah, right." When Schanke leaves, Natalie remarks that it's a good thing he didn't get a look at the blood pressure gauge. They discuss the case, and Nick tells her that although the drug is odorless to humans, he was able to detect it immediately. Natalie can't understand how people get sucked in by cults. No one ever seems to learn. Nick says that you can learn a very simple truth from them - that once you have given them everything, you are nothing. He sadly examines an artifact from the Egyptian dig. Natalie tells him that he did good work as a detective, and no one can take that away from him.

**UNDUE PROCESS**
written by Michael Sadowski
directed by Alan Kroeker

**Guest Cast**
Lynne Thomson as "Dr. Emma Reston"
Allan Royal as "Ronald Gault"
with

Theresa Tova ..... Ms. Sheppard
Simon Richards ..... Boss
Karen Kenedy ..... Woman #1
Marianne Moroney ..... Vivian
Lloyd Adams ..... Young Man
J. R. Zimmerman ..... Prison Guard
Keith Kemps ..... Hobbs
Angela Gei ..... Woman #2
Tracy Hway ..... Policewoman

**Synopsis**

Natalie is helping to man the phone banks of a missing child hot line, The other workers admire her strength, since it is Natalie's godchild, Cynthia Lambert Luce, that has been kidnapped. In addition to the "Missing Child" posters, there are "Wanted" posters of the suspect, Ronald Gault. Natalie abandons the phone call that she's taking when Nick and Schanke arrive looking very solemn. Nick says that they've found Cynthia and tells Natalie to get her coat. She realizes what Nick has avoided saying, and she collapses in tears in his arms.

Natalie identifies Cynthia's body where it was found in the woods. Cohen arrives and tells the detectives that, in addition to the police, Gault is being hunted by vigilante groups. Because Natalie is too close to the case, another medical examiner, Dr. Emma Reston, is brought in. Nick hopes to find Gault before the vigilante groups do, but Schanke wouldn't be surprised to find him twisting in the wind. "If you ask me," Schanke says, "the old rope dance is too good for him. Something slow and excruciating would be more my choice." Nick flashes back to being hanged by a group of angry men. Once the others have gone, he frees himself from the noose. While investigating near the spot where Cynthia was found, Nick detects traces of blood, causing Schanke to wonder if Nick is part bloodhound.

Gault staggers drunkenly down a street and uses a bit of alcohol from his bottle to cleanse a cut on his head. Two women recognize him from a "Wanted" poster and incite a group of passersby to chase him down while one man calls the police on his cellular phone. Nick tells Schanke to take the car while he cuts Gault off on foot. It's four blocks away, and Schanke wonders how Nick will get there. Nick flies to the scene and apprehends Gault just as the angry mob is about to overtake him. The mob surrounds Nick and Gault, backing off only when Schanke arrives and fires a shot into the air. Nick flashes back again to his hanging.

At the police station, Gault wants to make a statement, but Cohen knows that any statement given under the influence would be inadmissible. Cohen and Schanke are disappointed to learn that Gault's public defender will be Ms. Sheppard, whom Schanke refers to as "the original leftist bleeding-heart liberal murderers-are-people-too." Schanke and Cohen run down a list of criminals that Sheppard has gotten released, then Cohen asks Dr. Reston to attend to the cut on Gault's head. Natalie watches as Reston administers a local anesthetic, then sews up the cut.

Sheppard insists that Gault be released, since neither the girl who was with Cynthia when she was taken, nor the neighbor who saw a man prowling around could identify Gault in a lineup. Cohen wants to hold him because the blood tests haven't come back from Forensics yet. Also, he fits the composite description provided by the girl and has priors for molestation. In a flashback, Nick visits one of the men who hanged him. "You're dead!" the man exclaims. "Yes," Nick calmly replies, "I am. Perhaps you can tell me why." The man claims that Nick killed a woman, and says that everyone knows he did it. "The Boss" said he did it, and his word is good enough. Since he was never given the chance to defend himself, Nick now wants vengeance, and he kills the man.

Dr. Reston's lab reports state that the blood tests were inconclusive due to Gault's common blood type. The DNA test results are not in yet. Sheppard insists that not only must Gault be released, but the police must provide protection for him due to the public's mob mentality. Natalie calls her a "smug bitch" and slaps her face. Cohen tells Natalie to go home, and Nick takes her out of the station.

At home, Natalie bums Cynthia's "Missing Child" posters. She can't understand how men like Gault can hurt children and not seem to feel a thing. Even for Nick, evil like that is difficult to comprehend. Natalie insists that Gault must pay.

Cohen assigns Nick and Schanke to keep Gault in protective custody in a motel until the results of the DNA test come in. Schanke protests vehemently, and Cohen warns the detectives that Gault can't come back in any worse condition than he is already in.

While Schanke dozes in the living room of the motel suite, Nick wakes up Gault, who is sleeping in the bedroom. Nick turns on a tape recorder and uses his powers of persuasion to convince Gault to tell the truth. Gault admits killing Cynthia and claims that it's the children who pick him, not the other way around. He believes that the children want him to do it. In a flashback, Nick visits a tavern owner, who is shocked to see that Nick is still alive. The tavern owner throws a knife, hoping to finish Nick off. Nick grabs the knife in midair, inches from his chest, then kills the man. In the motel, Nick destroys Gault's taped confession.

At the morgue, Natalie runs the blood tests again and discovers that Reston botched the job.

At the motel, Schanke comments that the sleeping Gault doesn't look very good and wonders if he should call 911. In a flashback, LaCroix walks in as Nick is killing the tavern owner. He reminds Nick that he is never far away. It was LaCroix who killed the woman and told everyone that Nick did it. LaCroix is delighted that Nick has betrayed his high-minded ideals and is guilty of the same crime as the men who tried to kill him without just cause. "Well done," LaCroix says sarcastically, then walks away laughing.

Nick discovers that Gault's heart has stopped, and he tries to revive him. Schanke hesitates, then finally calls for paramedics. It's too late, however. Gault is dead.

At home, Natalie accesses the Crimeline Network on her computer and keys in Dr. Reston's name.

Ms. Sheppard is furious that her client is dead. Cohen still wants it proven whether or not Gault killed Cynthia.

At home, Natalie accesses Gault's records on her computer.

The DNA test results come in and confirm that Gault killed Cynthia, and the detectives discover that Gault was treated in prison for a heart condition.

Natalie returns to the morgue to run some additional tests.

Nick goes to Natalie's apartment and sees Gault's records on her computer screen. The screen indicates that the records were last accessed by Dr. Emma Reston.

In the morgue, Natalie flashes back to Dr. Reston administering the anesthetic to Gault in the precinct. Dr. Reston arrives and admits that she gave Gault something to induce a heart attack, then fixed the test results in hopes that he would be released and out of town by the time he died. She is sure that Gault would have been set free and would have committed the same crime again, adding that "they always do." Realizing that Reston has done this before, Natalie recalls a similar case seven years ago in Calgary - Reston's jurisdiction. Reston reveals that the man in Calgary raped her when she was a child and came back for her when he was freed. Later, she was able to take her revenge. She believes that it was justice to kill Gault and the man in Calgary. Natalie can't be a part of it, and when Nick arrives, she tells him about Reston. She then apologizes to Reston. Reston tells Natalie that she is not sorry for what she has done, and she never will be.

Cohen tells Schanke that she's never seen a case like this and that whatever Reston gets charged with will set a precedent. At first, Schanke feels that Reston deserves a medal, then he admits that he doesn't know what to think. He wonders how Cynthia's family and Natalie are going to go on. Cohen says that Natalie will live because she has to. What else can she do?

Natalie places flowers on Cynthia's grave and whispers, "I love you." Crying, she returns to Nick's car, and they embrace without saying a word. She gazes forlornly out of the car window, and they drive off.

♪♪("Suite from UNDUE PROCESS" is on the *Forever Knight Soundtrack.*)

## FATHER'S DAY

written by Gillian Horvath
directed by Bruce Pittman

### Guest Cast

Peter Boretski as"Don Thomas Constantine"
with

| | |
|---|---|
| Peter Outerbridge ..... young Thomas Constantine | Maurice Godin ..... David Constantine |
| Nicole Oliver ..... Karin Constantine | Vito Rezza ..... Johnny Lamar |
| Robert Latimer ..... Customs Officer | Tony Craig ..... Sgt. Carter |
| Matt Birman ..... Carey | Randy Butcher ..... Jim |

### Synopsis

Don Thomas Constantine, the head of a powerful crime family, has decided that it's time to hand over the reins to his great-grandson, David. David, however, wants nothing to do with the family business. David's friend, Johnny L., alerts David that today is the day and convinces him to leave immediately and send for his wife and son later. Don Constantine learns that David has run off and proclaims that he must be disciplined in order to protect the family.

Cohen assigns Schanke an extra shift because he's been late for a total of six hours over the last three months. Nick agrees to cover for him, with "no strings attached," to allow Schanke to spend the Father's Day weekend with his family at their cottage. Cohen relates a message to Schanke from Johnny Lamar. Johnny will bring David Constantine in, and in exchange for protection, David will provide evidence against his family.

En route to meet with Johnny and David, Schanke works on a questionnaire for his daughter Jenny's school project: "What is a Father?" So far, he's come up with "altruistic." At the rendezvous, they find that Johnny has been killed, and David is missing. Schanke comments that the Constantines are not the type of family you just leave. "Not alive, anyway," Natalie adds. In a flashback, a younger Thomas Constantine receives a trunk and uses his influence to circumvent the Customs inspection. In his office, he opens the trunk, and a weary Nick emerges. Constantine provides Nick with a bottle of blood, and Nick gives him a gold pocket watch as payment for his assistance in starting a new life. Nick gives no answer when asked if he will be followed. He had to leave Paris in a hurry, and Constantine will help to establish Nick in Los Angeles.

The detectives visit David's wife, Karin. She doesn't believe that Don Constantine would hurt David, and she tells them that David is in New York on business. As they are leaving, Nick senses something, but tells Schanke that it's nothing. Outside the precinct, Nick tells Schanke that he has to check something out alone. Schanke doesn't want to face Cohen alone, but he reluctantly agrees after being reminded that he owes Nick a favor for covering for him on Sunday.

Alone in his car, Nick listens to "The Nightcrawler" on the radio. Since Father's Day is approaching, LaCroix asks his listeners, "What is a father?" LaCroix claims that a father is not altruistic, but that every parent wants something in return, such as love or loyalty. Nothing is free. Nick returns to David's house and finds him hiding in the backyard. David doesn't want to ruin his great-grandfather. He just wants to be able to walk away. He grew up with killing, but doesn't want to be a killer. In a flashback, LaCroix confronts Nick on the streets of Paris and is furious to discover that Nick has been to the apothecary for medicinal herbs and Chinese elixirs, in hopes of curing his vampirism. Incensed, LaCroix backhands Nick, punches him in the chest, and shoves him up against a wall. He grabs Nick's lapels and lifts him off the ground, furious that Nick wants to go back after LaCroix has given him life, power, and his eternal protection. LaCroix's eyes blaze as he declares that Nick is his creature, made in his image. "Then I am a monster," Nick replies. Whether or not there is a cure, Nick intends to leave LaCroix, even if it means that LaCroix will kill him. David Constantine tells Nick that he came back to check on his family and that he doesn't want his son to grow up the way he did.

Cohen is furious when she teams that Nick found David, but didn't bring him in. Nick insists that David just wants to walk away, and besides, he hasn't been charged with any crimes. Schanke asks if Nick still has his gun and badge, and Nick asks if Schanke is still working on the questionnaire. Nick declares, "A father is someone who would sacrifice everything to give his child a better life than he had." Impressed, Schanke hurries to copy it down before he forgets it.

Nick reveals to Natalie that David is at his apartment. He wants to help David get away from his family, and he knows how hard that can be. "Even when they're trying to kill you, they're still your family," he

tells her. "Youch!" she exclaims. "That sounds like an epitaph." She asks if it was really that hard for Nick to leave. "Parts of it," he answers, nodding sadly. In a flashback, Nick tells Janette he must leave Paris to escape LaCroix. She tells him that Don Constantine in America will be able to help him, but she refuses to accompany him.

Nick talks to Karin again, but she still refuses to believe that Constantine would hurt her husband. At Nick's apartment, David awaits his wife's arrival, but two of his great-grandfather's henchman arrive instead. They burst in and riddle Nick and the apartment with bullets, while David takes cover behind a chair. With David watching, Nick's eyes blaze as he roughs up the henchman and throws them back out through the stairway. Later, David uses duct tape to patch the holes in the shades which are allowing sunlight to stream through. Nick admits that he knew David's great-grandfather years before. Nick claims that Constantine's fortune was built on deals that couldn't face the light of day. He says that men with secrets will always pay men like Constantine to help them hide. Nick knows what it's like not wanting to be what you are.

Nick brings David to hide out at the Raven. In a flashback, Janette tells LaCroix that Nick is gone and to forget about him. LaCroix won't accept that, however, and Janette finally admits that she sent him to Constantine. At the Raven, Nick tells Janette to stay out of it this time.

Nick visits Don Constantine, who recognizes him from years before. Constantine has lost two sons and two grandsons, and David is all that he has left. He views David as his version of immortality - something that Nick wouldn't understand, since Nick will be young forever.

The elderly Constantine visits LaCroix at the radio station, causing LaCroix to remark, "Time's a bitch, isn't it?" In a flashback, LaCroix and Janette visit Constantine in America. Constantine initially denies helping Nick, but admits it when confronted with the fact that he is in possession of the watch that LaCroix gave to Nick. LaCroix just wants to keep his family together and would be eternally grateful for Constantine's help. Constantine now wants the favor returned.

Nick confronts Karin because she told Constantine where David was. She thought his men would bring him back, not try to kill him. She must now decide whether or not to go with David.

Nick returns to the precinct to find LaCroix waiting for him at Schanke's desk. In a flashback, LaCroix confronts Nick in Los Angeles. As he returns the pocket watch to Nick, LaCroix tells him that he will always be able to find him. In the police station, LaCroix reads from Schanke's questionnaire: "A father provides love, discipline, guidance, protection, and support." Nick remarks that Schanke left out "freedom," and LaCroix responds, "So would I." LaCroix threatens to find and kill David unless Nick returns him to his family. Nick asks LaCroix to do for David what he would never do for him - let him go.

LaCroix visits Constantine, who says that without David, everything he built will die when he dies. Constantine reminds LaCroix of the debt he owes.

Nick and David wait anxiously at a van, still unsure of Karin's decision. Moments later, Karin arrives with their son, Adam, to join David in his escape. Seconds later, Constantine and LaCroix arrive. David tells his great-grandfather that he will run the family if he has to, or his great-grandfather can shoot him, but his son will not be raised like this. But Constantine has had a change of heart. He agrees to let David go, and they embrace. LaCroix explains to Nick that Constantine was worried about having someone to run the business after he died. "Personally," LaCroix remarks, "I don't think he's ever looked fitter. He could live for another hundred years." At a questioning look from Nick, LaCroix casually explains, "I owed him a favor."

On Monday, Schanke arrives late for work and thanks Nick for filling in for him. Nick tells him that be didn't miss anything, and Schanke realizes that his questionnaire is missing.

"The Nightcrawler" quotes from the Ghost's speech in Shakespeare's *Hamlet:* I am thy father's spirit, doomed for a certain term to walk the night ..." Nick arrives at the radio station, wishes LaCroix "Happy Father's Day," and returns the gold pocket watch. He tells LaCroix, "I'm not coming back to you, I just wanted to say 'thank you.'" As Nick leaves, LaCroix predicts that he will come back. "I can wait," he says, opening the watch and revealing the inscription: "Forever." "I have all the time in the world."

**CAN'T RUN CAN'T HIDE**
written by Ron Taylor
directed by Jon Cassar

**Guest Cast**
Clark Johnson as "Casey Brooks/Lt. Drake"
with

Von Flores ..... Tran
Gordon Michael Woolvett ..... Kyle the Grocery Boy
Gabriel Hogan ..... Young Soldier
Richard Campbell ..... Damon
Kimberlyn Ungshang ..... Asian Child
Richard McMillan ..... Abraham Lindley
Bernadette Li ..... Vietnamese Mother
Nicole Greenspan ..... Beverly
William Corno ..... Vampire

**Synopsis**

A young man delivers groceries to Abraham Lindley, who is very nervous, armed, and has an elaborate security system. Lindley has asked for the delivery boy's help in contacting Casey Brooks, and he's very agitated because Brooks has denied knowing him. As the young man drives away, Lindley looks alarmedly up into a tree and screams. Later, it is found that Lindley was killed with his own knife.

While investigating, Nick gets lost in thought as he examines an Asian symbol on a wall in Lindley's house. He flashes back to November, 1971. While driving a Red Cross jeep in Vietnam, Nick encounters the same symbol carved into a log. As Schanke drags him away from the symbol, Nick mutters, "Binh Loc." Nick finds a note with "Department of Correctional Services - Casey Brooks" and a phone number written on it.

The detectives learn from the delivery boy that all Lindley ever talked about was Casey Brooks, but Brooks claims never to have heard of Lindley. Cohen tells Nick and Schanke that Brooks is a highly respected probation officer. Among his other good deeds, he runs night seminars for young offenders. Schanke doesn't trust anyone that sounds that good.

In a flashback, Nick inoculates Vietnamese children. The mother of one of the children tells him that the symbol he saw means "clean," but nobody knows who put it there.

At a gymnasium, Brooks is apparently late, and one of the young offenders is about to leave when Brooks suddenly rappels down from the ceiling on a rope. He is making the point that they don't always see trouble coming. They must learn to anticipate it and to get out of the way. He was also seeing which of them would take the bait and be tempted to leave if they thought that he was late. The detectives tell Brooks about Lindley's death and hand him a photo of the murder victim. The photo disturbs Brooks, but he claims that it's because he's not used to seeing that much blood. He claims not to know Lindley and hands the photo back, giving the detectives a good set of his fingerprints to compare with those found on the murder weapon. Later, he flashes back to the violent destruction and burning of a Vietnamese village.

Natalie determines that Lindley was looking up when he was killed, prompting Schanke to remark that you can rappel out of a tree. Natalie points out Lindley's tattoo, which matches the Asian symbol on his wall. In a flashback, Nick, then known as Nick Parker, is driving back from the village of Binh Loc when he is stopped and questioned by a military patrol lead by Lieutenant Travis Drake, now known as Casey Brooks. The patrol is know as the "cleanup crew" because if there are any Viet Cong in the village, they will clean them out. Nick is very anxious to get back the report on Brooks's fingerprints.

At his home, Brooks is quickly packing. He flashes back to his unit invading Binh Loc. The soldiers, including himself, treat the people brutally and demand to know where the V.C. is.

Nick reveals to Natalie that he has met Brooks before and knows what he's capable of. The results of the fingerprint comparison are delayed because the computer is down, but Nick fears that if they wait another hour, Brooks will be across the border.

Schanke asks why Nick is so sure that Brooks is the killer. "Experience," Nick replies, then flashes back to Vietnam. Just as the sun is rising, Nick reaches an underground shelter and wakes up the other vampires, angrily demanding to know who has been feeding on the children.

He should have known - LaCroix.

Brooks continues to pack and flashes back again. The raid gets out of hand, and his unit slaughters eighteen unarmed civilians. While Schanke worries that they are about to arrest an innocent man, Nick flashes

back to LaCroix justifying his actions by saying that he takes a few drops from many, rather than a large swallow from one. The debate becomes irrelevant, however, as the sounds of the massacre drift down into the vampires' lair. Brooks yells futilely for his men to hold their fire, but they are completely out of control. Brooks shoots a running man in the back. The man falls face down into a river, and Brooks looks like he can't believe what he has just done.

Nick and Schanke arrive just as Brooks is leaving. Brooks knocks Schanke down, but Nick catches him outside. Nick rips Brooks's sleeve, revealing the same tattoo that Lindley had.

At the police station, Nick and Schanke confront Brooks with the fact that his passport, birth certificate, driver's license, pilot's license, gun permit, and credit history are all fake, but the photograph of his unit in Vietnam, taken from his home, is real. Brooks was court-martialed because of the massacre, and all his men testified against him. Of the twelve men in Brooks's unit, only seven made it out of Vietnam alive, and they all have died violently since then. Brooks insists that he did not kill them, but admits that it was those murders that made him decide to "disappear" in 1983. He has tried to make up for what happened ever since then. When Lindley tried to contact him, he denied knowing him, in hopes that Lindley would disappear and take the killer with him. Natalie reports that Brooks's fingerprints were not on the murder weapon. Nick concludes that if Brooks is not the killer, he might be the next victim.

In a flashback, Nick and LaCroix examine the ruins of Binh Loc. Nick is outraged at the crime, and LaCroix asks what he will do to bring the criminals to justice. At the Raven, Janette is working on her taxes when Nick visits, providing a welcome relief. Her accountant says that taxes are inevitable, like death, but what does he know? Nick asks if LaCroix ever mentioned any vampires that he might have made while he was in Vietnam, but she says, "No."

Nick visits LaCroix at the radio station. LaCroix admits that it was Nick's righteousness that inspired him to return to the village and search for survivors. He detected a heartbeat in the man lying in the river and realized that he had the power to make justice possible. Nick reminds LaCroix that Brooks was court-martialed and that he has changed his whole life and now works with kids. "Oh, well, that makes things all better, then!" LaCroix exclaims sarcastically. "Play basketball twice a week with disenfranchised youth, and all is forgiven!" LaCroix accuses Nick of rationalizing that if Brooks can be forgiven for his sins, it follows that Nick can be forgiven for his. He calls Nick's logic perfectly convenient and self-serving. Nick says it's not about him, but LaCroix says it's always about him and his eternal struggle to manage his guilt. LaCroix adds, "You used to be so much more fun, Nicholas." LaCroix tells Nick to let justice run its course.

Schanke reports to Nick that even though they caught Brooks with forged documentation, his friends downtown got him released. Nick thinks that he knows where to find him. Knowing that Brooks has a pilot's license, Nick surprises him at the airport and wants to put him into protective custody. Brooks refuses, so Nick gives him something for protection - a cross, which Nick had carried wrapped in a cloth. A vampire arrives, and Brooks recognizes him as the man he shot in die back at Binh Loc. The vampire has killed all the other soldiers who were at Binh Loc, and Brooks is his final task. Brooks finally recognizes Nick from Vietnam, also. The vampire threatens to destroy Nick if he interferes. Using the cloth to protect his hand, Nick grabs the cross and thrusts it towards the other vampire. The vampire grabs the cross, also, and smoke rises from their hands until they both release it. They fight each other until Brooks fires his gun into the air and demands to know, after twenty-three years, whether or not the man is V.C. He admits he is, then laughs and dares Brooks to shoot him again. Brooks apologizes, then shoots himself. Now that his work is done, the vampire opens the hangar doors and kneels in the sunlight. He smokes, then bursts into flames. Nick pulls a drainage grate from the floor and escapes underground.

Forensics can't make heads or tails of the ashes, but Schanke says that according to Natalie, Brooks might have burned some personal papers or letters before committing suicide. Nick asks Schanke not to refer to him as Travis Drake in the report. He believes that by the end, he was Casey Brooks.

**NEAR DEATH**
written by Phil Bedard & Larry LaLonde
directed by Nicholas J. Gray

**Guest Cast**
Julie Stewart as "Dr. Dianna Linsman"
with

Colin Fox ..... Dr. Alex Nystrom
Paul-Emile Frappier ..... Dr. Joel Becker
Paul R. Rutledge ..... Dr. Julian Welner
Amanda Tapping ..... Dr. Naomi Ross
Dyanne DiMarco ..... The Guide

**Synopsis**

Dr. Julian Welner runs through a meadow, pursued by someone or something. He falls and screams as his pursuer overtakes him. Welner's body is found alongside a road, with no apparent cause of death. As Natalie puts it, "He just dropped dead."

Myra's approaching birthday has Schanke pondering life and death. He asks what death is and wonders, "How can you experience death if there's no more of you to experience it?" Nick replies, "I don't know. I've never died before." Cohen tells the detectives that Welner had been reported missing by his employer, Dr. Alex Nystrom of the McCallum Neurological Institute.

Natalie's autopsy reveals that Welner had prostate cancer, but that isn't what killed him. His brain simply stopped functioning. His death is being treated as a homicide, since his shoes had no trace of soil on them, which indicates that he died indoors, and somebody moved his body.

Nick and Schanke take Natalie with them to the McCallum Neurological Institute. As Nick puts it, they could use a translator. Welner was part of a team studying consciousness states, along with Drs. Naomi Ross, Joel Beckett, and Dianna Linsman. While Ross and Beckett show Schanke and Natalie a corticotomography apparatus which measures consciousness levels, Linsman tells Nick that she believes that a person's consciousness lives on after death. She says that people who come back after being clinically dead are always transformed. Nick flashes back to 1228. If Nick will give his life to LaCroix, LaCroix will give him ten thousand lifetimes in return. Linsman is sure that there's a zone between life and death. She's been ... with people who've been there.

In the car, Nick recalls Linsman's words about a zone between life and death and flashes back. A freestanding doorway among some dunes opens, revealing a cloaked figure standing in a bright light. The figure tells Nick, "You must choose." Suddenly, Nick is back with LaCroix and Janette, drinking from LaCroix's wrist and becoming a vampire. The cause of Welner's death is still unknown, and Natalie suggests that perhaps his team was doing some kind of research that got out of hand. As Schanke puts it, he might have been a "human guinea pig."

At the Raven, Nick asks Janette what it was like for her when LaCroix brought her over. Amid flashbacks of LaCroix bringing her across, Janette describes the very intense experience. She was in a place where life and death become one, moving towards a light, when she heard LaCroix calling her back. When asked if she felt that she had a choice whether to live or die, she answers that she didn't view death as a choice. She reminds Nick, "Neither did you."

Linsman walks among the dunes. Suddenly, Welner's hand comes out of the ground and grabs her. She screams. At the Institute, her eyes flutter open, and her teammates remove the corticotomography apparatus from around her temples. She reports that the experience was more disturbing this time and that she saw Julian. "Oh, God," she whimpers. "Did we kill him?" As Beckett assures her that they had nothing to do with that, Nick listens from the hallway. Ross feels that they had Linsman under for too long and that it's getting dangerous. Nick visits Linsman in her office. She tells him that the corticotomography apparatus does more than measure synaptic transmissions. It controls them by acting as a synaptic field damper. The damper induces "flat lining," allowing them to study near death experiences, which they believe to have significant therapeutic potential. Linsman has seen three patients whose terminal diseases went into remission after the patients had near death experiences. She believes that people can confront whatever haunts them in the near death state and banish it before they die. When the person is revived, they are profoundly changed and know that the demon or disease which was banished in death can be banished in life. Welner was attempting to cure his cancer, but was

unable to return from the near death state. Linsman admits that the team moved his body because they feared that their research would be shut down. She admits that she has had a near death experience and suggests that if Nick were to try it, he would realize the importance of their work. Nick isn't sure what he will do. Ross admits the truth to Nystrom, who furiously announces that their careers are over.

Natalie disagrees with the research team's opinion of near death experiences and tells Nick that they should be shut down. She believes in an afterlife, but doesn't believe that you can knock, walk in, and visit anytime you like. Nick says that there's something he's never told her about the night LaCroix brought him over. In a flashback, Nick's body is dying, while his soul meets the cloaked figure among the dunes. She tells him that he will be lost if he chooses to return to the evil that awaits him. He hears LaCroix's voice urging him to turn away from the light. LaCroix has offered Nick a thousand lifetimes, and all the guide can offer is "a choice." Nick returns and drinks hungrily from LaCroix's wrist, then pulls Janette down to him and kisses her. Nick tells Natalie that the seduction of being a vampire was too great and that he wanted it. Nick wants the chance at another near death experience so that he can choose differently this time.

Nystrom berates Linsman about what her team has done. They were hired to study consciousness, not to play God. When he tells her that her work is over, she pulls a long, steel pin from a piece of lab equipment and stabs him in the neck with it, killing him. Just then, Nick calls, wanting to take her up on her offer. She agrees to bring the equipment to his apartment.

A security guard has found Nystrom's body, and Schanke believes that one of the members of the research team did it. Natalie asks where Nick is, and Schanke says that he called in sick.

Nick lies on his couch, and Linsman places the damper around his temples.

Natalie notices that the damper is missing from the lab and panics. Sensing that Nick might be in some kind of trouble, Schanke demands to know what is going on. As they rush to Nick's apartment, Natalie explains that Nick plans to test out the machine.

The machine's displays start going crazy, and Linsman gets very nervous, saying, "That isn't right. That's not human." Nick convulses several times and flashes back to various episodes in his life as a vampire. The machine goes blank, and Nick is suddenly very still. Crossing the dunes, Nick finds a cloaked figure standing by an examining table like the one in the morgue. The guide, who mirrors the condition of Nick's soul, now appears in the form of LaCroix, whose evil is the greater part of what Nick is. Nick's dead body lies on the table, covered with worms.

Schanke can't believe the chance that Nick that is taking with his life. He, too, is curious about what happens when we die, but he doesn't go on reconnaissance missions to find out.

The guide tells Nick that the figure on the table is his soul, deformed by the evil that he has embraced. Nick angrily denies that that's what is he now. In his quest to become human, he has tried to atone for his sins. Nick faces a vast graveyard of the souls of the innocents that he has murdered, and the guide tells him that the legacy of his evil has not been purged. Meanwhile, Linsman explains to Nick's dead form that she didn't want to kill anyone. She was trying to prevent suffering and death. Standing at the doorway, Nick realizes that if he steps into the light, his soul will be judged, and he will be damned. Schanke and Natalie burst in and find Nick dead. The guide asks Nick what he values above all else after eight hundred years of torment. Nick answers, "Humanity," which he defines as a state of being, a state of grace. The guide suggests that that may be the way to the forgiveness he seeks. Nick's debt to humanity has not yet been paid, and there is much left undone. Nick knows that he must go back, although the guide says that it may be too late. Only the humanity that he desecrated can save him now. Linsman explains that the damper acts by blocking neural transmissions, so Natalie tells Schanke to grab some rat poison from under Nick's sink, explaining that strychnine in small doses acts as a neural stimulant. Natalie injects Nick with the rat poison and tells him not to dare leave her now. Nick convulses. Schanke pounds Nick's chest several times, and he revives.

When Schanke asks Nick why he let himself be hooked up to the machine, Nick says that he was just trying to be thorough in the investigation. He then tells Schanke that there's nothing to see on the other side. Schanke takes Linsman away. Nick tells Natalie that he's learned that he has to live with the choice he made eight hundred years ago and that forgiveness is not something you ask for - it's something you earn. He takes her hand and adds, "Here, among the living."

**CRAZY LOVE**
written by William Schmidt
directed by Don McCutcheon

**Guest Cast**
Deborah Wakeham as "Dr. Shawna Welsh"
with

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| Peter Blais | Barlow | Danielle Brett | Amalia |
| Joyce Gordon | Nurse Simmons | Moynan King | Robyn Flood |
| Patrushka Sarakula | Michelle Parker | Alyson Green | Erin Devon |
| Michelle Moffatt | Whitney | Richard Gira | Security Guard |

**Synopsis**

A psychotic convicted killer, Peter Barlow, is securely bound in chains while being interviewed by a psychiatrist, Dr. Shawna Welsh. He has been sent to the Laurier Mental Health Clinic for a psychiatric evaluation pending his appeal. He tells her that killing is the purest form of lovemaking and that he would like to make love to her. Later, Welsh dictates her recommendation to the court and states that Barlow is competent to stand trial. She describes him as a monster and says that he must never be allowed freedom. Back in his cell, Barlow removes a package from under his mattress and eagerly rips it open. It contains a change of clothes, an ID badge, and a key. After escaping from his cell, Barlow poses as a gardener on the grounds of the clinic. A patient, Whitney David, is sitting on a bench, reading Welsh's book, *The Road from Despair.* She smiles shyly at Barlow, unaware of the gardening shears that he is hiding behind his back.

Natalie says that this killing has "Barlow" written all over it. Whitney was stabbed to death and shows signs of sexual assault, just like Barlow's first two victims.

Welsh tells Nick that Barlow is the most dangerous mind she's ever met. He glories in killing. Any woman who is unlucky enough to be noticed by him is a potential victim. He does it not so much for the sexual pleasure, but as a means of totally possessing his victims. In a flashback, Nick has a romantic tryst with a mortal woman, Amalia. He tenderly begins kissing her neck and shoulders, which bear the scars of their previous encounters.

A waitress, Erin Devon, is closing up a diner alone. The phone rings, but she is in the back and doesn't hear it. Nurse Simmons leaves an urgent message on the answering machine for Erin to call her or Dr. Welsh right away. Barlow arrives at the diner, Erin screams, and he kills her.

Nick revisits Welsh, who is in tears. She knows that she's supposed to remain emotionally detached, but the murders of Whitney and Erin are too much. Nick is seeking insight into Barlow, and Welsh talks about the need that everyone has to connect intimately with another person. For most people, however, it doesn't end in murder. In a flashback, Amalia tells Nick that he is her world and begs him to drink from her again. Amid their kisses, he protests that she grows weaker and nearer to death each time. She tells him to take all of her blood, but he refuses. She then tells him to take only what he needs. He can't resist, and he drinks from her again. Welsh tells Nick that killing to possess is Barlow's curse, his addiction. "Then you understand?" Nick asks, surprised. She says it must be awful to have that desire and that emptiness that never gets filled. They speak of the aching hunger for physical contact, the lust, and the knowledge that nothing can satisfy it. The only thing it can lead to is murder. Back in his car, Nick keeps flashing back to Amalia while Welsh's words run through his mind. He is obviously fighting some internal battle and losing the struggle. Finally, in desperation, he calls the Raven. He has to talk to Janette.

Nick waits at the harbor with glowing eyes and bared fangs. When Janette arrives, he says that he wasn't sure that she would come. "We all have our needs," she replies. "And it's been so long." Nick holds her tightly and drinks greedily from her neck. In a flashback, Nick drinks from Amalia, and LaCroix observes from afar. When Nick's hunger has been satisfied, Janette tells him that she likes it when he needs her. Nevertheless, he apologizes for using her. He feels guilty and tells her that he has to fight so hard to control it. Clearly troubled, he gazes skyward and insists, "I have to control it." In a flashback, Nick holds Amalia as she sleeps. He laments that one night she will not recover, and he will lose her. He knows that they must not see each other again. At the harbor, Janette tells Nick that he never has to control it with her. She offers herself again, but he pulls away. She invites him to sleep the day with her, but he declines.

In the morgue, Natalie confirms that Erin was sexually assaulted, but she has found that Whitney was not. Nick and Natalie wonder if Barlow really did kill Whitney.

In her office, Welsh comforts a patient, Robyn, and assures her that she will be well. Robyn leaves, and Nick enters. Welsh, the head of the clinic, was not directly treating Whitney or Erin, and Nick wants to talk to their doctor, Elliott Silman. Silman is on vacation, but Welsh answers Nick's question about why he scheduled Whitney for release, then changed his mind. It seems that Whitney had a relapse, and it was a joint decision between Welsh and Silman that she wasn't ready to be released. They discuss Barlow, and Welsh tells Nick that she's sure he'll kill again. In a flashback, Nick is leaving Amalia's home and is surprised by LaCroix. Nick is tormented by the need to possess Amalia, but doesn't want to destroy her. LaCroix says that it's a vampire's nature to kill again and again. Nick laments that it never ends. LaCroix agrees, but finds it delightful. "Oh, don't be such a fool, Nicholas," advises LaCroix. "Drink up! Be merry!"

Nick and Schanke review the clinic's surveillance tapes and see that Barlow attempted to accost a female patient in the corridor when he was being escorted from his interview with Dr. Welsh. The nurse identifies the woman as Michelle Parker, who was discharged yesterday.

En route to Michelle's apartment, Schanke leaves a message on her answering machine explaining the situation and telling her to stay calm, don't panic, and don't answer the door. When she hears the message, she panics. As she is about to run out, Barlow bursts in and grabs her. As Nick and Schanke draw near Michelle's home, Nick's superhuman hearing picks up her terrified cries. Michelle escapes Barlow's grasp and locks herself in the bedroom.

At the apartment building, Nick tells Schanke to take the front, while he goes around back. Nick takes off, and Schanke sarcastically mimics, "I'll go around back." He grumbles, "Maybe for once, I will go around back!" Nick flies up and enters through Michelle's bedroom window. He opens the bedroom door from the inside and grabs Barlow. Schanke arrives and huffs in exasperation to see that, once again, Nick has already apprehended the suspect.

At the precinct, Nick questions Barlow about Whitney's murder and bluffs by saying that she was tied to a tree. "That was a spectacular touch, wasn't it?" Barlow remarks. The detectives conclude that somebody else killed Whitney and tried to make it look like Barlow did it. Perhaps it was the same person who helped him escape.

At the clinic, Welsh explains to Robyn that she just isn't well enough to leave. She must remain for a couple more weeks. "That's what you said last time," Robyn dejectedly protests, adding, "and before." Irritated, Welsh says, "Okay, fine. I'll take you home. You can go. Fine."

Nick and Schanke return to the clinic and examine Dr. Silman's records. They find his recommendation for Whitney's release, but nothing to indicate that he changed his mind. Nick examines the clinic's admission records and finds that Dr. Welsh has countermanded several release recommendations. The most recent release decision was for Robyn Flood. They go to her room, but she is gone. In a flashback, Amalia doesn't want to live without Nick. She begs him to drink from her one last time and let her die in his arms. They kiss passionately, then he kills her. Recalling Welsh's words that "it's all about possession," Nick knows that Robyn is in trouble.

Nick gets the description and plate number of Welsh's car, then flies off in search of her. Welsh drives Robyn to a park and takes her for a walk. She tells Robyn that she can't let her go because she loves her. Nick picks up on Welsh's voice and lands by her car in the park. When Welsh pulls out a syringe, Robyn screams and runs away. Nick rushes over and tells Welsh that she can and will let Robyn go. Welsh jabs the syringe into her own arm, and Nick catches her as she collapses. She says that Nick knows the murdering mind well. In a flashback, LaCroix arrives just after Nick has killed Amalia. He knows that even though Nick has gorged himself, the thirst is renewing itself already. LaCroix revels in the eternal hunger followed by the eternal pleasure. He says that there will be many more and that Nick will possess them all. Welsh dies in Nick's arms.

Nick tells Natalie that Welsh helped Barlow escape in order to kill Whitney and make it took like Barlow did it. Nick says that he understood Welsh's loneliness and her need to fill the void. Natalie remarks that those needs are in the past for Nick. Nick asks Schanke to take the car back to the precinct, since he will be busy. He then flies off and meets Janette again at the harbor.

**BABY BABY**
written by Morrie Ruvinsky
directed by Geraint Wyn Davies

**Guest Cast**
Denise Virieux as "Serena"
with
Page Fletcher ..... Trilling
Nicu Branzea ..... Emile
Maxim Roy ..... Louise
Richard Blackburn ..... Sgt. Mandrake
Pierre Peloquin ..... Armand

**Synopsis**

A steel worker, Stan Ericson, falls to his death at a job site. Due to Ericson's personality conflict with a coworker, Calvin Trilling, some of the other workers believe that he was pushed. Nick finds a cross on a broken chain in Ericson's hand. Among the crowd of coworkers is a woman who slips away when she sees Nick. While Schanke tells Nick that Trilling's alibi is his girlfriend, Nick senses the presence of another vampire and takes off after her. When Schanke realizes that he is alone, he moans, "Why does he keep on doin' this to me?" Nick catches up to the female vampire, Serena, and asks why she ran. "Because I knew it was you," she replies.

At the precinct, Nick asks Trilling, who has a history of violent crimes, about the cross. Trilling admits that it's his, but says that he lost it on the job site. Trilling insists that he was with his girlfriend, Serena, at the time of Ericson's death. Natalie has taken tissue samples from under Ericson's fingernails and is waiting for the results of Trilling's DNA test to see if it's a match.

It's obvious that Nick knows Serena, and Natalie asks who she is. "A mistake," he answers. "She's a mistake." In a flashback to a Paris tavern, Serena puts her hand on the stomach of her pregnant friend and is delighted to feel the baby kick. Serena is dressed in a very manly fashion, and her friend's husband says that she'll never find a husband like that. She points out that that's the idea. Nick walks in, and Serena tells the bartender that whatever he wants is on her.

As Serena and Trilling are leaving the police station after questioning, Nick stops Serena and wants to talk to her. She tries to walk off, but he grabs her by the arm. "Let me go!" she shouts, and Trilling yells at Nick to back off. With everyone in the precinct staring, Serena tells Nick never to touch her again, then leaves.

In a flashback, Serena sits with Nick in the tavern and reveals that she has done some checking up on him. She knows that he is not a conventional man, and she calls him a man of the night, a free spirit, a traveler. She has heard that marriage and the commitment of a family are out of the question for Nick and says that he is the perfect man for her. They kiss.

At the Raven, Janette tells Nick that Serena knew what she was getting into. He disagrees and says that what happened was his fault. In a flashback, Serena wants eternity and says that Nick can give it to her. Janette accuses Nick of being jealous of Trilling. Nick says that Serena must be with him for a reason, and Janette replies that since Trilling is still alive, it isn't sex.

Schanke tells Natalie that he knows exactly what Nick is going through. He relates the tale of Julie Dirschowitz. It seems that in the sixth grade, Schanke had a gigantic crush on Julie and used to slip love poems into her locker through the ventilation slots. When Julie found out who wrote the poems, she told the principal, and he read them all over the P.A. system. When Natalie asks Schanke if he thinks that Nick loved Serena, Schanke answers that it was like a neon sign emblazoned across his forehead. "Of course he loved her. Probably still does." Natalie is distracted by this thought, but tries to look nonchalant. She hits a key on Nick's keyboard, and his computer beeps to life, revealing that Trilling was part of a medical study in prison. The study was looking for chromosomal aberrations in repeat offenders. It turns out that Trilling carries an extra Y chromosome, which only happens in one in a million cases. Since a chromosome workup is much faster than a DNA test, Natalie can have the answer they need in twenty-four hours.

Nick spies on Serena and Trilling at the job site. They kiss, and Trilling complains that he is frustrated and tired of waiting. She says that he must wait another twenty-four hours. In a flashback, Nick and Serena are kissing passionately. He warns her that she should go, but she wants him to give her immortality. She tells him to take her, and he bites her neck.

LaCroix visits Nick, at Nick's request. Because of his knowledge and age, Nick needs his help. LaCroix is really enjoying this. Nick asks if it's possible for Serena to mate with a mortal, and LaCroix answers that it depends on what she's after. In a flashback, Serena awakens, and Nick tells her that he's given her the immortality that she asked for. She sleepily agrees, "Yes ... a baby." She relates a horrible dream that she had, saying, "Your teeth ... your eyes." She touches the bite marks on her neck, and the horrible realization strikes that it wasn't a dream. Nick protests that she knew. After all, she said she wanted eternity. LaCroix laughs at Nick for having been tripped by a metaphor and Serena's wish for immortality. He meanders around Nick's apartment as he talks, pausing briefly as he touches the spot on the elevator door where Nick impaled him with a burning stake two years earlier. He suggests that perhaps Serena's "baby lust" did not die with her mortal spirit and tells Nick that there are legends of special mortal men who can impregnate a female vampire, but it has to be done at the peak of the full moon on the thirty-first of the month, "or some such nonsense." Today just happens to be the thirty-first and a full moon. The baby would be mortal, and the man would die. Of course, LaCroix doesn't believe any of it.

Natalie confirms the XYY match and tells Nick and Schanke that Trilling is their guy.

When Nick and Schanke show up at the job site to arrest him, Trilling smashes Schanke in the face with his thermos and takes off. Nick catches him and informs him that he's going to save his miserable soul. Serena watches as Nick and Schanke take Trilling away.

Serena visits Nick, and they stand in front of his fireplace under the same dragon mantel that he had in Paris. He can't undo it or give back what he took from her, so she asks him not to take anymore. He defends his arrest of Trilling and says that she was going to kill him. "That's sweet," she retorts. "You murder me, then you lecture me on ethics." She reveals that if she were to become pregnant, she would also become mortal. He reminds her that it's just a legend, but she thinks that it's worth sacrificing a violent, murdering scum like Trilling to find out if it's true. He says that that's not for her to decide, but she replies that he, of all people, has no right to stop her.

Serena hypnotizes the guard and breaks Trilling out of jail. Nick calls the Royal Observatory and learns that they've got forty-five minutes until the peak of the full moon.

Nick visits the radio station, and LaCroix finds it ironic that Nick's victim might achieve the mortality that he has sought for so long - and in a way that he has no hope of repeating. He urges Nick to allow Serena to rectify his mistake, thereby relieving some of his guilt. In a flashback, Serena tells Nick that she wanted independence, not an endless life of darkness. She picked Nick because she knew that he preferred to be alone and would have let her raise their child by herself. She begs him to take it back and undo what he did. LaCroix tells Nick that, according to legend, it has to happen "higher than high, at the peak of the fire, by the light of a perfectly full moon."

Nick and Schanke are in telephone contact as Schanke checks out Serena's apartment, and Nick flies to the construction site looking for her. Schanke observes that Serena's apartment feels like a crypt and that she, too, chills her red wine. Nick expected to find her at the spot from which Ericson had fallen, but when she isn't there, he mutters, "Higher than high," and asks if that means anything to Schanke. Schanke says it sounds like an old Hendrix lyric, then spots a photo of the CN Tower. He asks, "How would the world's tallest freestanding tower do?"

With five minutes left, Serena tells Trilling to kiss her and hold her tightly, then flies with him to the top of the CN Tower. He asks how they got up there, but she says that it doesn't matter. Nick arrives and tells Serena to let Trilling go. She demands to know how Nick could deny her mortality again. She begs Nick to give her this chance to have her life back. He turns his back and allows her to make love to Trilling. When it's over, he turns back around and asks Serena if she's all right. She is in tears and now knows that it was only a legend. She says that she's sorry, but Nick says that it's his fault, not hers. He offers to take care of Trilling's body, but she doesn't want his help. She doesn't want anything from him ever again, and she flies off. Back on the ground, Nick tells Schanke that if Serena and Trilling were ever up there, they're gone now.

Serena's car has been found by the tower, but she and Trilling have disappeared. At home Nick thinks about Serena and plays the song that was playing when they met: "Me and My Baby."

♪♪("BABY, BABY - CN Tower Finale" is on the *Forever Knight Soundtrack.*)

**PARTNERS OF THE MONTH**
written by Shelly Goldstein
directed by Alan Simmonds

**Guest Cast**
Deborah Rennard as "Julia Winwood"
Victoria Adilman as "Victoria Levy"
with

Stewart Bick .....James Coulter Raymond O'Neill .....Paul Levy
Nigel Williams .....Harry

**Synopsis**

Victoria Levy dresses up in a sexy black teddy and impatiently waits for her husband, Jonathan, to join her in the bedroom. He is working on the computer in the den, revising his will. Victoria comes in to hurry him along, and he says that he'll be there in a few minutes. She asks if he'd need a few more minutes if "she" was there, then walks off. Some time later, Jonathan is slumped over his desk with blood dripping from his temple. A gun lies on the floor by the desk.

When Nick and Schanke investigate, they find a computer-generated suicide note. It isn't signed, which leads Schanke to suspect that it was murder. Also, in most suicides, the muzzle of the gun is pressed against the skin and leaves a gunpowder "star burst" pattern which is not present on Levy. Victoria and Jonathan Levy had separate bedrooms, which the wife says was because Jonathan kept late hours and didn't want to disturb her. Schanke suspects that their marriage was in trouble. Victoria claims to have been sleeping when she heard the gunshot. She says that she ran in, saw Jonathan, and picked up the gun, which would explain why her fingerprints are on it.

Schanke is sure of Victoria's guilt, and Nick suspects that something else is bothering him. Schanke says that sex is the cornerstone of a sound marriage, and since the Levys slept in separate bedrooms, they couldn't have been happy. He says that it's impossible to generate any heat from the living room couch. Yawning, he adds that it's pretty damned difficult to get any sleep, either.

Schanke turns in a report, expounds on its completeness, and says that the cops who wrote it are definitely worthy of "Partners of the Month." Annoyed, Cohen tells him, "You didn't get the plaque this month. Get over it." She asks for Nick's opinion (on the case), and he jokingly replies, "I'm fine without the plaque." When she asks if there are any suspects, Nick answers, "Not really" at the same time that Schanke answers, "The wife." Cohen tells them to stay in sync on this one.

At the morgue, Schanke continues to complain about not getting the award. Nick says it's only a plaque on a wall, to which Schanke replies, "I got a wall. I want a plaque. Okay?" Schanke still insists that the wife is the murderer and goes off on a tangent about how bringing home the wrong kind of cream cheese will cause a wife to flip. "Cherchez la femme!" he declares.

In a flashback, Nick arrives home and finds Janette packing. They have been together for ninety-seven years, and she needs a change.

Schanke arrives at Nick's apartment bringing pizza, beer, and luggage. He has left Myra and wants to stay with Nick. As Schanke unloads his duck lamp and other belongings from the elevator, Nick reels from this unexpected turn of events and doesn't know what to say. Schanke is giddy with his newfound freedom, and Nick reluctantly agrees to let him stay. In a flashback, Nick is hurt and upset that Janette is leaving, and she tells him that maybe one day their eyes will meet, and they'll fall in love all over again. "What makes you think that I would take you back?" he asks. She kisses him, and he can't help but return the kiss. "That," she answers.

The next evening, Nick finds that Schanke has prepared a big bacon-and-eggs breakfast. Schanke is perky and talkative; Nick is barely conscious. Nick surreptitiously pours bottled blood into his coffee cup, and Schanke is hurt that Nick won't eat anything. Between Nick and Myra, Schanke is feeling very under-appreciated. Natalie calls, and when Nick tells her that Schanke has moved in, she exclaims, "Get out of town!" "I might just have to," he responds dryly. She reports that the bullet's angle of entry indicates that Levy did not kill himself.

Nick and Schanke return to the Levys' home, which is filled with mourners. A menorah in the entranceway makes Nick uneasy, and he won't go past it. He tells Schanke to go ahead while he tries to locate

Levy's lawyer, Jay Coulter. When Nick finds Coulter, they talk outside. Nick asks if Levy was involved with another woman, and Coulter calls that an understatement. Inside, Schanke notices Victoria shooting poisonous looks at Jonathan's personal assistant, Julia Winwood. He tries to talk to Julia, but she is rude and dismissive. Coulter tells Nick that Levy's current will splits his estate half-and-half between Victoria and Julia. Nick and Coulter agree that there are always problems when it comes to dividing property. In a flashback, Nick and Janette quarrel over possession of a portrait of Janette. She says that Leonardo would want her to keep it, but he points out that she had it painted for him and that it was a gift. She grudgingly relinquishes the portrait. Coulter tells Nick that Levy called him on the night that he died and wanted to meet with him the next day to change his will. He had finally figured out what he wanted. Coulter says that Victoria should consider herself lucky that the will wasn't changed before Jonathan died.

Schanke is annoyed that Nick found out about Julia Winwood being the other woman. That was going to be his news. Nick actually found out more than Schanke did because he found out about the will. They bicker all the way back to the station. Schanke feels that Nick is always topping him and making him look bad. Nick is always there first, and no one knows exactly how he does it. Schanke reiterates to Cohen that he believes that Victoria killed Jonathan. Nick disagrees. Schanke is angry that his partner doesn't trust his instincts and won't back him up.

Nick and Schanke visit Julia, and she tells them that Jonathan was going to divorce Victoria and marry her. Next, they visit Victoria. She knew about her husband's affair with Julia, but is shocked when Schanke tells her that he intended to change his will to leave everything to Julia.

Back home, Nick and Schanke continue arguing. Nick says that Schanke had no right to say that to Victoria, since it was pure speculation. They don't really know how Jonathan intended to change his will. Schanke declares that he and Nick are through. He will request an immediate reassignment in the morning. Schanke grabs his belongings and storms out. In a flashback, Nick is desolate because of Janette's departure. LaCroix tells him that if he doesn't change and grow, he will wither and die inside. "And wouldn't that be eternal hell?" LaCroix asks. He advises Nick to let her go and says that there is plenty more love left in the world.

Schanke is drinking heavily at the Raven, and Janette calls Nick to come and get him. Before he can leave, Nick gets another call. Coulter reports that a very large transfer of funds was made from Jonathan's Swiss account to another in the Caymans. The transfer was done after Levy died, and as far as he knows, Victoria does not have access to the account.

At the Raven, Schanke and his duck lamp are perched at the bar. The lamp was a gift from Myra upon his graduation from the academy. It means, "Remember to ... when the bullets start flying." A very tipsy Schanke says that he can really see Nick and Janette together. He guesses that it was in college, and Janette corrects him that it was closer to the Renaissance. Schanke and Janette commiserate about their regrets over lost loves. It's not so much a dialogue as it is two intermingled trains of thought. Schanke muses about Myra, while Janette ruminates over Nick. Schanke finally realizes how much he loves and misses his wife. He is ready to beg forgiveness and wants to give her anything that he's got. Something clicks, and Schanke says that Levy probably felt the same way. Before rushing out, he asks Janette to tell Nick that he solved this one all by himself. When Nick learns where Schanke has gone, he tells Janette that if Julia has already killed one man for money, she won't let a cop stand in her way.

Julia is loading a briefcase with cash when Schanke knocks on her door. She answers the door with a gun behind her back, but Schanke sees it in a mirror. He goes for his gun, but she stops him and disarms him. Nick flies to Julia's apartment and observes through a window, then recalls Schanke's words that he's always grabbing all the glory. Instead of bursting in, Nick sabotages the elevator that Schanke and Julia are riding in. The elevator stops with a jolt, and Schanke uses the opportunity to disarm Julia. When they emerge, Schanke tells Nick that he's late.

Nick and Schanke have won the "Partners of the Month" award, and Schanke makes a longwinded acceptance speech, boring the entire precinct. Cohen finally checks her watch and interjects, "So in closing..." Schanke wraps it up and gets a feeble and scattered round of applause. While proudly admiring the plaque, Schanke notices, to his dismay, that it has been awarded to the investigative team of Nicholas Knight and Donald "Shanke."

At the Raven, Nick returns the portrait to Janette. "Eternal friends?" he asks. "Maybe more," she answers, and they kiss deeply.

**THE FIRE INSIDE**
written by Marc Scott Zicree
directed by Allan Kroeker

**Guest Cast**
Derek Aasland as "Danny"
with

Tyrone Benskin ..... Jonah
Todd Stewart ..... Tom Phillips
Tracey Hway ..... Angie Pappas
Ira Glasner ..... Billy
Allyson McMackon ..... Margaret Phillips
Geordie Johnson ..... Voice of the Dragon
John Bourgeois ..... Jake
Glenn Bang ..... Dr. Zang
Thoywell Hemmings ..... Fountain
Serena Pruyn ..... Beverly
Randy Butcher ..... Dragon

**Synopsis**

As a homeless man rummages through a garbage can, a man wearing a ski mask approaches and calls him trash. The masked man tosses a coin on the ground in front of the homeless man, and when he reaches to retrieve it, the masked man torches him with a flame-thrower. The homeless man screams and thrashes about as he is engulfed in flames.

At the scene, Schanke notes that it would be pretty hard for someone to toddle around town with a flame-thrower and not be noticed. A tunnel entrance nearby leads Nick to suspect that the killer used the extensive system of sewers, ventilation shafts, and service tunnels. Nick and Schanke request maps of the system, since they will have to search it for the killer.

In a flashback, Nick meets Janette and LaCroix at an abandoned cabin after a night of hunting. He no longer hunts with them, but continues to travel with them because he finds safety in numbers. They lift the trapdoor in the floor and find that the basement is already occupied by two escaped slaves, a father and son.

Schanke doesn't like going into the bowels of the earth to search for a homicidal maniac, but at least it gets him out of the PTA career thing at his daughter's school. Nick advises Schanke to stay in his element and give the kids a tour of the precinct. While searching the tunnels, they find some laundry hanging. Homeless people live down there.

In the morgue, Natalie has a hard time dealing with the burned body. She finally lifts one hand out of the body bag, then panics and shoves it back inside. Shaking terribly, she quickly zips the bag closed again and walks away.

The tunnel maps are sadly inadequate. Schanke explains that the tunnels are always changing. "They get bricked up, rerouted. They build 'em over." Reluctantly, he reveals that his father was a sewer worker. Nick asks what's wrong with that, and Schanke says that he used to be taunted with the name "Rat Boy." He sniffs and says that the smell brings back a lot of memories. On a lower level, the killer finds a homeless woman and torches her with the flame-thrower. Flames shoot up through a shaft and through a grate that Nick and Schanke had just walked over.

Schanke calls Dispatch, reports the murder, and tells them to send more police down. The shaft is too narrow, so Nick and Schanke are going to have to find another way down. As they search the tunnels, Nick detects that they are being followed, and he and Schanke split up. Nick takes a detour, then drops down on the person following them. It's a teenage boy. The boy runs away from Nick and right into Schanke. He is belligerent and doesn't trust them.

In a flashback, the father, Jonah, explains that they ran away because his son, Fountain, was going to be sold to a different owner. They plan to meet a man from the underground railroad at sunset. Knowing that the slaves will be followed, Janette says that they present a danger to the vampires, but Nick feels a kinship to them. The vampires, too, have been outcasts and have been hunted as animals. LaCroix says that the humans are expendable and refers to them as "lunch."

Nick and Schanke convince the boy, Danny Weathers, that they're trying to help the tunnel residents, and Danny agrees to act as their guide.

Natalie tells Cohen that she can't do the postmortem. An intern, Dr. Zang, is doing it.

Nick, Schanke, and Danny find the second victim, and when Schanke tries to radio in, they find that they are too far underground for radio contact with the world above. Danny identifies the victim as Margaret

Phillips, who has a husband and child. Schanke and Danny return to the level above to notify Maggie's family, while Nick continues to search for the killer. When Schanke tries again to radio for backup, the killer responds by radio, posing as a police officer, and says that backup is on the way. Schanke and Danny find the Phillips's "home" empty, so Danny taps out a code on a pipe to signify that it's safe to come out. Tom Phillips emerges holding a small baby.

Meanwhile, Nick meets up with the killer, who calls himself "Dragon." In a flashback, three men arrive at the cabin searching for the escaped slaves. Through hypnotism, Nick convinces the head of the search party that the slaves are not there. In the tunnels, Dragon tells Nick that he is an exterminator and is cleaning out the tunnels. He lets Nick in on the secret of the job: "You gotta get the nest." Nick pulls a gun, but Dragon shoots a flame at him and takes off. Nick's coat sleeve catches on fire, and he quickly discards his coat.

Natalie tells Cohen that, as a child, she saw some people burn to death in a car accident. She still sometimes hears the screams.

After sending Mr. Phillips out of the tunnels, Schanke and Danny meet back up with Nick. Nick asks Danny about a "nest" of people, and Danny says that there's a place on the lowest level called "the camp." About twenty people live there. In a flashback, the sun has set, and the search party returns, bearing torches. They captured the man from the underground railroad and found out where Jonah and Fountain were hiding. The search party sets fire to the cabin.

In the tunnels, Schanke asks Danny to call ahead by tapping on the pipes to warn the others of the danger. Danny is surprised that Nick and Schanke are genuinely concerned about the tunnel residents. Nick tells him that, unlike some, they don't believe that people are disposable. In a flashback, LaCroix and Janette fly up through the roof of the cabin and make their escape.

Cohen tells Natalie that we all have our worst fear, and she knows that it can incapacitate and haunt us. She started out in law enforcement as a federal agent. One day, while breaking up a drug ring, there was a terrible firefight, and three agents were killed, including her partner. The bullet that killed him was never found, but evidence suggested that it was "friendly fire" - her fire. When she returned to duty, she was terribly afraid. She says that fear is an enemy that must not be ignored. If Natalie accepts her fear, rather than runs from it, it will make her stronger. Natalie returns to the morgue and offers to help Dr. Zang, who is having trouble getting a dental cast.

When they have almost reached the camp, Nick and Schanke tell Danny to find a safe place, then go on without him. In a flashback, Nick tells Jonah and Fountain that the only way out is to face their fears. He throws a cape over Fountain and kicks the front door down. With glowing eyes and bared fangs, Nick runs out, carrying Fountain, with Jonah following close behind. Nick gets shot by a member of the search party, then kills him as the rest of the men run away in terror. Jonah and Fountain thank him, then make their way to freedom.

Nick and Schanke find the camp deserted. Danny's message must have gotten through. Dragon enters from the far side, and Schanke moves around to flank him. Dragon calls, "Come out, come out, wherever you are" and is frustrated when no one answers. While searching, he hears whimpering coming from a makeshift tent. He tosses a coin in front of the tent, and the old woman inside reaches out for it. He is about to torch her when Schanke distracts him. He shoots a flame as Schanke ducks out of sight. Dragon shoots flames aimlessly until a noise from Schanke betrays his location. Dragon is about to torch Schanke when Nick distracts him and draws his fire. Nick dives for cover, then reemerges with his gun drawn. He is hesitant to fire, however, because if he were to hit one of the flame-thrower's tanks, the whole place would go up. Dragon gets Nick to drop his gun by threatening to torch the old woman. Dragon shoots towards Nick again, but Nick uses his superhuman speed to maneuver around and disable him. The residents come out of hiding, and Schanke tells Nick that after facing this, Jenny's class doesn't took so bad.

Schanke hosts a tour of the precinct for Jenny's class. Unfortunately, Jenny is home with the mumps. Cohen praises Schanke to the class, telling them that Schanke is a hero and saved a lot of lives. Later, Schanke will be taking Danny to his first ball game.

At Nick's apartment, Natalie doubts that she'll ever get over her fear, but she's proud of herself for dealing with it. Nick paraphrases Friedrich Nietzsche: "If it doesn't kill you, it'll make you stronger." Natalie gazes into the blazing fireplace and adds, "Sort of like the fire."

## AMATEUR NIGHT

written by John Scheinfeld and Michael Levine
directed by Don McCutcheon

### Guest Cast

Laurie Paton as "Alix Logan"
with

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| Wayne Best | Director | Richard Chevolleau | High-Tech Sneakers |
| Andy Marshall | Keys | Shaun Austin-Olsen | Police Captain |
| Dennis O'Connor | Czajkowski | Arthur Eng | G-Roc |
| Ian Alden | Drug Dealer | Michelyn Ernelle | Shanice's Mother |

### Synopsis

A heavily tinted car drives by a playground, and someone inside the car opens fire. Gang members return the gunfire, and the car drives off. When it's all over, a gang member has been wounded and a six-year old girl who was jumping rope, Shanice Cornell, has been killed.

Cohen calls Nick, who has already read about the incident in the newspaper. Cohen wants the shooter caught before this escalates into a gang war. Nick says that it's too bad that Schanke isn't available, since some of the gangs know him. Natalie arrives at Nick's apartment, having just finished Shanice's autopsy. Clearly upset, she says that Shanice was the third child under twelve to die in a drive-by in the last six months. She then asks if Nick thinks that Schanke will be okay.

A drug deal is going down on a city street. Schanke observes from a short distance away. A beautiful policewoman breaks up the deal, and a firefight breaks out. Schanke watches for a minute, then walks into the street shouting, "Cut, cut, cut, cut, cut, cut, cut!" He protests that there's too much gunplay, the policewoman is using the wrong kind of gun, and the dialogue isn't authentic. The director, Trevor, tells him that he was hired to consult, not to disrupt the movie, and if he yells, "Cut!" one more time, he'll be thrown off the set. The star, Alix Logan, announces that if the movie isn't going to be done right, she won't be in it. Then, she gets an idea.

Schanke begs Nick to allow Alix to ride with them for a night. She wants a taste of real police work. Schanke is technically on vacation while he moonlights, but he knows that Nick is working the drive-by. Nick protests that Alix isn't trained in police work and is an amateur. In a flashback, Nick wants to join the Chicago police force. Although he has citations for bravery back in Edinburgh, the police captain considers Nick an amateur and insists that all his recruits go through the academy. Using hypnotism, Nick convinces the captain to change his mind, in view of the fact that he's passed all of his proficiency tests. Schanke knows the gangs better than he does, and since he could use Schanke's help, Nick finally agrees let Alix ride along.

In the car, while Nick, Schanke, and Alix wait for a rendezvous with gang members, Alix wants to "get inside" Nick's head. In a flashback, Nick's new partner, Czajkowski, continually refers to Nick as a rookie and doubts that he knows much about police work. Czajkowski tells Nick that a policeman's most valuable weapons are his eyes. Every car that passes is a story; its driver is a story within a story; every pedestrian has a secret. The trick is to know when the stories and secrets could give you a problem. A gang arrives, and its leader, G-Roc, assures Schanke that they had nothing to do with the shooting. He claims that his gang doesn't use guns, but Schanke doesn't buy it. The conversation is being observed as G-Roc says that the shooting was a B-Dog thing. Just then, a van speeds by, and its occupants open fire. The gang pulls out guns and returns the fire as Nick, Schanke, and Alix, who had gotten out of the car against instructions, scramble back inside the car. They pursue the van, but lose it when another car gets in the way.

Back at the precinct, Cohen furiously says that she should pull Nick's and Schanke's badges for allowing Alix to ride along with them. Much to Schanke's dismay, Nick says that he could really use his help on this case, and Cohen cancels the rest of his vacation. In a flashback, Nick and his partner walk their beat. They see a busboy emptying garbage cans, and Nick sees nothing wrong with the picture. Czajkowski points out that he seems to be lingering over the unpleasant task, and they deduce that he is acting as a lookout, perhaps for a robbery. Czajkowski goes to call for backup, and an accomplice arrives. Nick yells, "Police!" and a gunfight erupts. Nick gets shot several times, then shoots the accomplice. When Czajkowski returns, Nick turns his head, taking his eyes off the busboy. Czajkowski gets shot, and Nick flies over and disarms the busboy.

Alix visits Nick, whom she calls a man of action. He tells her that she should take Schanke, whom he calls a "real cop," more seriously. In a flashback, LaCroix is amused that Nick is so upset over having almost

gotten his partner killed. Nick now knows that he should have had more training, but LaCroix insists that vampires don't have to play by the rules. Alix tells Nick that the mayor is a friend and a big fan of hers and that Nick will be ordered to extend her every courtesy.

At the precinct, Schanke learns from a gang informant, Keys, that Shanice's death was a mistake and that a renegade did it. Alix arrives and hears Keys say that none of the protectors called for the shooting and that the B-Dogs are on a code red. Schanke pays him off, but before he leaves, Keys tells Schanke that if they knew who the shooter was, the matter would have been taken care of by now. Schanke tells Alix that he and Keys have developed a certain level of trust over the years, and he likes the guy. He explains that protectors defend a gang's territory and that a code red is a command within the gang to take care of a problem in the ranks. Cohen calls Schanke into her office, and Alix follows Keys. She's not very discreet, and he confronts her in an alley. They are observed as Keys tells Alix that if she meets him back there at 6:00, he'll deliver the shooter. She thanks him and leaves. Shaking his head, Keys chuckles and mutters, "Dumb."

When Alix gives Schanke her good news, Cohen is furious that she's gotten involved. In the alley, Schanke tells Alix that Keys was yanking her chain. If he didn't ask her to bring money, he wasn't going to give her anything. Then Alix spots Keys's body. He has been murdered.

Half a dozen shells where found, but only two shots hit Keys. As in Shanice's death, the killer was not a good shot. Cohen tells Schanke that this isn't his fault. Alix led the killer to Keys, and she knows it. Alix is very upset and guilt-ridden, and Schanke tells her that she has no idea what it's like to be a cop. He has an officer escort her back to her hotel with orders to make sure that she doesn't leave her room. She needs protection, since the killer probably saw her with Keys.

At the precinct, Schanke tells Nick that he feels responsible. Ever since his family took a vacation to Hollywood when he was a child, he wanted to be part of that world, and he saw Alix as his chance. Cohen informs them that Alix has disappeared from the hotel.

Alix cries in her studio dressing room, then hears a noise as the killer breaks into the studio.

Schanke calls the assistant director, Carl, who suggests that they look for Alix at the studio.

Alix investigates the noise and is confronted by the killer, a young B-Dog wannabe. He thinks that Alix is a cop and that Keys turned him in. When he pulls a gun, she slowly backs up towards a control board, then momentarily blinds him with a lightning effect. As the killer chases her through the studio, she switches on a red flashing light outside the studio door. Nick and Schanke arrive and know that Alix is in trouble, since the light should only be flashing when film is rolling. Schanke shoots the lock off. The killer catches Alix, and she screams as he grabs her around the neck and holds the gun to her ribs. Schanke arrives and orders him to freeze. Seeing how unstable the youth is, Schanke holsters his weapon and tries to talk to him. It turns out that the B-Dogs told him that he wasn't ready, so he decided to prove himself to them. When Schanke torments him about Shanice's death, he turns the gun from Alix to Schanke, then back to Alix. Schanke continues to impress upon him the gravity of what he's done, and he releases Alix and shakily points the gun at Schanke's head, shouting "I didn't mean to!" The killer finally breaks down in tears, and Schanke disarms him. Nick congratulates Schanke and takes the killer away. "I thought you said happy endings only happen in the movies," Alix remarks to Schanke. He reminds her that Shanice Cornell's family wouldn't consider this a happy ending.

In a flashback, Nick learns that Czajkowski will be fine. The captain has recommended Nick for a citation, since Czajkowski would be dead if not for him. Nick has decided that the captain was right, and he wants to go through the academy. There's a lot he has to learn.

A drug deal is going down on a city street. Alix draws her gun and orders the perpetrators to freeze and put their hands on their heads. Officer O'Grady arrives to frisk them and cuff them. O'Grady (Schanke) pats one of them down, then looks confusedly at the camera and asks, " Uh ... what's my line?" Everyone on the set groans, and the director cries in frustration, "Cut, cut, cut!"

♪♪("Suite from AMATEUR NIGHT" is on the *Forever Knight Soundtrack.*)

**THE FIX**
written by Michael Sadowski
directed by Nicholas J. Gray

**Guest Cast**
David Eisner as "Fred Berman"
Howard Jerome as "Jimmy Vinetti"
with

| | |
|---|---|
| Ian D. Clark ..... Dr.Spense | Paul Sanders ..... Brian Sykes |
| Anne Marie Scheffler ..... Hot Dog Vendor | Kim Schraner ..... Pretty Girl |
| Eric Bryson ..... Vince | |

**Synopsis**

Sitting in his car at the harbor, Brian Sykes draws a mustache and an eye patch on his own face in a photo of his Detective League bowling team. Schanke is also in the picture. Sykes writes "ADIOS MUCHACHOS!" on the back of the photo, takes out a gun, and kills himself. Meanwhile, at the morgue, Natalie has filled two bags with Nick's blood and injects something into one of the bags. Nick remarks that it's the first time he's given blood, then wishes her good luck as she takes the bags out into the sunlight. One bag gets hot, and Natalie drops it. It breaks open, and the blood sizzles on the concrete. Nothing happens to the other bag, and Natalie smiles.

Schanke is distressed because Sykes was a friend of his. He insists that Sykes was a good cop, but Fred Berman from Internal Affairs, who was first on the scene of the suicide, says that he was dirty. He claims that Jimmy Vinetti had been lining Sykes's pockets for years. Nick wants to dig deeper, but Schanke says that if what Berman said is true, he doesn't want to know about it.

Natalie has found a genetic alteration (extra nucleotides) in Nick's RNA. She has also found that a synthetic hormone, Lytovuterine-B, shuts the "virus" down. The hormone was developed to enhance beef production, but it was rejected in the test phase because it proved to be lethal. She thinks that Nick could tolerate low doses of it, however. In a flashback, Nick visits the laboratory of a man known as the "Resurrection Doctor," a name he earned back in England because of some failed experiments in resuscitation. The doctor is going to try to cure Nick, and Nick warns him that it must be done with the utmost secrecy. The doctor warns Nick that it could be quite costly. Nick is prepared to pay. Natalie says it's Nick's call, and he replies, "Let's do it."

Natalie injects Nick with one cc of Lytovuterine-B. At first, he feels nothing, then he doubles over in pain and drops to the floor. Even as he writhes in pain, he takes Natalie's hand and tells her that it's okay. Suddenly, the pain vanishes. He whispers, "Nat ... Nat, it's gone. Oh God, it's gone. Thank God." He tells her that the vampire is gone, then runs out into the daylight. Natalie is speechless, then laughs with delight. Nick hugs her and kisses her gratefully.

Berman has had everything from Sykes's desk impounded.

Nick and Natalie drive around with the top down and their sunglasses on. Nick is giddy, and his only concern is that Natalie has more of the drug in her bag. They visit the Raven, and Nick offers Janette the cure. She declines, telling him never to assume that she's like him. She's been down this road with him before and says that it's just another dead end. Back in the car, Nick wants Natalie to give him some of the drug in case the first injection wears off. She reminds him that they have no idea what it's doing to him. "Just enough to get me through," he pleads, and she says that he sounds like a junkie. He points out that the whole experiment will go down the tubes if he spontaneously combusts in the middle of Bay St., so she gives him a vial containing 10 cc's, along with several syringes. He is to use it only if something dire happens and to call her first.

Near the spot where Sykes killed himself, Schanke finds a lens cap in some bushes.

In a flashback, Janette says that the doctor is a charlatan. She reminds Nick of the danger if "the others" were to find out what he's doing. At the Raven, Janette sighs, "Nicholah, you fool."

Nick gives himself another injection, then joins Schanke at the harbor. When shown the lens cap, Nick again suggests that they look into the reasons behind Sykes's suicide. Squinting at Nick in the sunlight, it occurs to Schanke that something is different. He asks if Nick got a haircut. In the car, Nick says that he doesn't know whether the drug has suppressed the symptoms, or eliminated his "condition" altogether. Schanke feels that Natalie deserves the Nobel prize.

They visit a restaurant of which Jimmy Vinetti is a co-owner and where he dines daily. While questioning him about Sykes, Nick grows increasingly interested in Vinetti's food. Finally, he helps himself to Vinetti's pasta, wine, and bread. Schanke and Vinetti are stunned. Vinetti denies that Sykes was on his payroll. With pasta hanging from his mouth, Nick then asks about Berman. Saying that these questions are over the line, Vinetti leaves, but invites Nick to finish his lunch.

Outside, Nick gets a hot dog from a street vendor and laughs when he is asked to pay for it. Schanke pays and explains that his partner has lost his mind. Talking around a mouth full of food, Nick says it's odd that Berman was first on the scene, but Schanke reminds him that Berman was tailing Sykes as part of his investigation. Pulling the lens cap out of his pocket, Nick speculates that Berman watched Sykes kill himself and did nothing to stop it. Sykes and Berman worked Bunco together years ago, and Nick believes that they were both on Vinetti's payroll. Schanke says that Nick sounds paranoid. When a beautiful woman walks by them, Nick envisions himself biting her neck. He then tells Schanke that "something's not quite right" and that he feels tired. Schanke says that he looks weird and sunburned. When Nick lowers his sunglasses to look at his reflection in a car window, he sees that his eyes are glowing. He tells Schanke that he has to go.

Nick arrives home weak, stumbling, and in pain. In addition to his glowing eyes, he now has fangs. He desperately drinks from a bottle of blood. When he has regained a little control, he gives himself another injection, then shakes violently and falls to the floor. Despite the pain, he laughs. LaCroix arrives and ridicules Nick, saying, "If this is the cure, give me the disease."

Schanke tells Natalie that Nick is definitely not himself. Besides eating his way across town, he's pushing a conspiracy theory involving Berman. Natalie realizes that the Lytovuterine is making Nick delusional. She says that she made a mistake, and she may need Schanke's help.

Nick assumes that Janette betrayed him, but LaCroix says that a father senses his children's pain as keenly as he senses their rejection. Nick opens the blinds, stands in the sunlight, and declares that he is cured. LaCroix counters that he has merely substituted one dependence for another. Like Janette, he warns Nick of the danger if others were to find out. LaCroix steps into the light, as well, and as smoke rises from his body, he says that Nick will always belong to him.

At the morgue, Natalie discontinues the treatment and locks up the drug. She tells Nick that he is becoming resistant to it and would need ever increasing amounts. He grabs her roughly and says that he wants to stay cured. She tells him that it's not a cure, it's a "fix," and it won't work much longer. Nick angrily accuses her of being like "them" and trying to control him. She says that the drug is affecting his brain and that he sounds crazy. Schanke arrives and tells Nick that he shouldn't pursue his theory about Berman. Nick accuses Schanke of turning on him, too. Nick tells both Natalie and Schanke that he will do what he has to do without their help.

At the precinct, Nick tells Berman that he dropped something, then tosses him the lens cap. Berman makes no reply, and Nick walks off.

In a flashback, the doctor drains Nick of his contaminated blood. Nick is weak and begs him to stop, but the doctor secures Nick to the table and thrusts a cross at him. Vinetti leaves a message for Nick to meet him at Lakeside Industrial Park in an hour if he wants to know the truth.

After discovering that Nick has broken into the locker and taken the Lytovuterine, Natalie and Schanke go to his apartment. Nick is gone, and they listen to the message from Vinetti.

When Vinetti arrives at the industrial park, Berman is with him and shoots Nick. Nick lies bleeding on the pavement, and Vinetti tells his driver to "dump this trash."

As Schanke and Natalie get into Schanke's car outside Nick's apartment, a car drives by and riddles Schanke's car with bullets. They are unhurt, and they realize that Nick is on to something.

The driver dumps Nick into the Caddy's trunk. In a flashback, Janette and LaCroix kill the doctor and rescue Nick. The driver brings Nick's car to the edge of the water and opens the trunk. In the vampire state, Nick attacks him, gets shot several times, then knocks him out. Berman drives Vinetti's car over to pick up the driver, but drives off upon seeing Nick. Nick flies in front of Vinetti's car, and when Berman tries to run him down, he flies out of the way. Berman crashes into some trees. Seconds later, Schanke, Natalie, and two squad cars arrive. Nick's eyes have returned to normal, but he reveals his fangs to Natalie. She smiles weakly and nods sadly.

At home, Nick reads an article about Berman's arrest, then gets a bottle of blood from the fridge. At the precinct, Schanke gazes forlornly at the team photo, sniffles, and wipes away a tear.

**CURIOUSER & CURIOUSER**
written by Phil Bedard & Larry LaLonde
directed by Jon Cassar

**Guest Cast**
Judith Scott as "Carol Lewis"
with
Dyanne DiMarco ..... Alicia Carpenter Steve Cumyn ..... Larry
Carla Renee ..... Monica (female mortal)

**Synopsis**

Nick is having a tough week. There have been three homicides, two unsolved cases, and he's been spending too much time alone with Schanke. He visits Janette at the Raven, seeking shelter from the storm. She is happy to oblige, and they begin to kiss. Two masked gunmen enter and begin robbing the patrons. Nick tries to hypnotize one of gunmen into putting down his weapon, but the gunman shoots at Nick. Nick dodges the bullet and tackles the man. A woman who was standing behind Nick gets shot in the abdomen. She pleads for help and doesn't want to die. Nick holds her hand, and she passes away. Nick blames himself and is inconsolable.

At home, Nick drinks blood from a wineglass and flashes back to killing a woman long ago. A knock at the door snaps him out of his reverie, and he sets down his glass of white wine. In a very businesslike manner, Schanke informs him of a homicide. Nick grabs his jacket from the coat tree and turns to join Schanke, not noticing the child's jacket hanging behind his own. They investigate the murder of "The Nightcrawler," who was stabbed in the heart at the radio station.

Nick visits the Raven and calls for Janette, but the club is deserted. He flashes back to the woman who died there. Next, he goes to the morgue and calls for Natalie, but no one is there. He pulls back the sheet from LaCroix's body on the examining table and flashes back. Nick has just killed, and LaCroix tells him that his first week of feeding has gone very well. Nick feels guilty, and LaCroix advises him to shed himself of the last embers of his mortal conscience. If he can kill the righteousness, he will never question his nature. If he allows the guilt to grow and fester, there will be consequences. In the morgue, Nick shakes LaCroix's body and tells him to come back.

In the precinct, Schanke very efficiently reports to Captain Natalie Lambert that "The Nightcrawler" was killed with a knife and that Carpenter at the sound lab is going over the radio station's log tapes. "Good work, Schanke, as usual," she commends him. When Schanke walks away, Nick puts his hand on Natalie's shoulder and whispers, "Nat, I have to talk to you." She quickly shakes him off and whispers, "Not here, Nicholas. Call me at home." Nick is going to have to talk to Internal Affairs about the shooting at the Raven, and Schanke says they're going to make him squirm about the last time this happened. "The last time?" Nick wonders.

Nick and Schanke visit the Raven, since "The Nightcrawler" used to hang out there. They split up, and Nick thinks that he spots Janette at the bar, then realizes that it's Cohen. She tells "Nicholah" that she's missed him, but the name LaCroix doesn't ring a bell. He mesmerizes her and learns that she has known him since the day she opened the club. When asked why there are no vampires present, she replies that there's no such thing. She wonders if he's having a relapse. Nick walks out, and Cohen advises Schanke to let him go, or he might push Nick over the edge.

Nick arrives home and opens the fridge, which is covered with alphabet magnets, and finds it stocked with bottles of milk and juice, as well as jars of baby food. Janette comes downstairs after quieting a baby and asks where Nick has been all night. He replies that he was "out." She is frustrated because Nick's salary is not enough, the rent is two months past due, there are unpaid bills, and the baby doesn't even have his own room. She begs Nick to talk to her. He tells her that a woman was shot and killed because he put her in the line of fire. There is going to be an investigation. She says they'll get through it. They did last time. He tells her that their master, LaCroix, is dead, and she worries that he is having delusions about being a vampire again. She tells him that the same thing happened to him two years ago when a woman was caught in the line of fire and killed at a stakeout. Nick doesn't know what's happening to him and walks out.

Schanke pointedly looks at his watch when Nick arrives at the sound lab. The topic of the radio show had been "guilt and our collective sins." On the tape, a caller identifies himself as LaCroix's assassin, but

LaCroix just laughs it off. Carpenter detects a background noise and tries to isolate it, hoping to get a fix on the caller's location. Nick says the noise is a buoy and hears another sound, but it is very faint.

Nick reports to Lewis from Internal Affairs. His file states that he does not work well with others, is not a team player, operates counter to procedure, frequently disregards orders, and has a cavalier attitude towards his own safety and the safety of others. She feels that Nick is out of control and that all the guilt and the pain that he's caused others is boiling just beneath the surface.

Nick arrives at Natalie's apartment hoping to talk and finds her in an elegant gown, wondering where the hell he has been. Apparently, Nick has been cheating on his wife, Janette, and having an affair with his boss, Natalie. Nick says nothing makes sense. Everything is real, but how can it all be real? Natalie says that Nick has cracked up before, and it's happening again.

Nick arrives home again, and through the TV, LaCroix quotes from Lewis Carroll's Alice's *Adventures in Wonderland,* then tells Nick that Lewis from Internal Affairs was right about his guilt. LaCroix says he warned Nick. In a mirror, LaCroix's image stands next to Nick's reflection. LaCroix doesn't like being dead and finds it quite annoying. But he will have his revenge. His killer will pay, and Nick will lead LaCroix to him. LaCroix vanishes, and Nick calls for him to come back because he needs his help. The yell wakes up the baby, and Janette comes storming out of the bedroom, demanding to know where he has been. He walks out on her for the second time in one night, saying that he has to work this through before he really does lose his mind.

At the sound lab, Carpenter identifies stadium crowd noises in the background of the call. Schanke places the killer near the SkyDome or the warehouse district - Nick's neck of the woods. Nick thinks he hears something else, but Schanke and Carpenter don't hear the crying baby.

Nick returns to the Raven and asks Cohen to tell him about his previous breakdown. She replies that he was "mad as a hatter." He was delusional and believed himself to be a vampire.

At the precinct, Nick learns of Lewis's decision. He has been suspended without pay.

At home, Nick apologizes to Janette. He tells her of his suspension, and she asks if his "performance" didn't satisfy the captain. Janette says that Nick lost faith in his family. He became lonely, unhappy, and incapable of love. Rather than deal with it, he turned away from his family and from himself. She says it's not the shootings that are driving him crazy, but the guilt of losing his humanity. Janette takes the baby upstairs, and Nick flashes on a hand hiding a knife in the fireplace. He goes to the fireplace, retrieves the knife, and flashes back to killing LaCroix in the radio station. Through the TV, LaCroix reiterates that he will have his revenge.

Nick returns to the Raven and finds it deserted except for LaCroix, who still has the knife protruding from his chest. LaCroix assures Nick that this is all quite real, and Nick protests that he couldn't have killed LaCroix with a knife. "Of course not," LaCroix confirms, pulling the knife out of his chest and tossing it to Nick. LaCroix warned Nick years ago what would happen if he allowed his guilt to fester. For vampires, guilt is a disease. This strange world is Nick's guilt incarnate. Everything he feels guilty about, everything he has denied others is being manifested. He is married to Janette, having a torrid affair with Natalie, being bossed around by Schanke, and confessing all to Cohen. Since Nick can't let go of his guilt, LaCroix will do it for him. Claiming that it hurts himself far more than it hurts Nick, LaCroix kicks, hits, and tosses Nick around the club. Reminding Nick that his greatest guilt is the hatred of what he is and the fact that he is still alive, LaCroix spears Nick with a wooden stake, sending him crashing out into the bright sunlight.

Nick awakens with a start in his living room. There is a wineglass of blood on the table, and Schanke is pounding at the door. I.A.'s report is coming down, and the captain wants Nick in the precinct as soon as possible. Nick is disoriented, and Schanke asks if he is all right. Nick answers that it all depends on the name of the captain. Wondering if Nick has fallen on his head, Schanke replies that it's "Cohen." Nick goes with Schanke, saying that it's time to face the music.

Internal Affairs has determined that Nick acted in a manner consistent with department guidelines with respect to the public safety and should be exonerated of any wrongdoing. As Nick and Schanke walk away, officer Lewis brings Cohen a report of a homicide at a radio station.

♪♪("CURIOUSER AND CURIOUSER - Nick and Janette" is on the *Forever Knight Soundtrack.*)

**BEYOND THE LAW**
written by James Johnston
directed by Michael Alan Levine

**Guest Cast**
David Calderisi as "Ambassador Oleg Petrashenko"
with

Naom Jenkins .....Juri Karimov/Damir Petrashenko
Deborah Theaker ..... Daphne Malloch
Lisa Ryder .....Angela Mosler
Gail Travers ..... Tamara Brunansky
Kate Greenhouse .....Paula Kiems
Pierre Lenoir ..... Jacques Tremblay
Stewart Arnett ..... Sen. Tom Gardner
Judy Sinclair ..... Mrs. Javitz
Katie Griffin ..... Jill

**Synopsis**

A man giving a woman an erotic back massage suddenly turns violent and strangles her to death. Her necklace breaks, and the pearls scatter across the room.

When the police investigate the site where the woman's body was dumped, Nick finds a pearl nearby that might match the bruises around the woman's neck. There is an nightclub ink stamp on the woman's hand, but it is too smudged to read. Daphne, from Forensics, believes that the tire tracks on the scene indicate that a stretch limo was used. She has an obvious crush on Schanke and calls him "Donnie." Schanke worries what Myra would do if she learned of this.

The victim has been identified as Tamara Brunansky, a bank teller who was reported missing the day before. A loose pearl and a clasp have been found in her apartment, although there are no prints on them. The massage oil on her shoulders and back indicate that she knew her killer. Natalie says it's every woman's worst nightmare - to let your guard down and allow yourself to be vulnerable, only to get violated. In a flashback, Nick is an off-duty cop working security at a political convention in the 1960's. He is impressed by a charismatic presidential candidate, Senator Gardner, and is invited by one of the campaign workers, Angela, to join the team. Schanke is hesitant when Cohen tells him to take the second pearl to Forensics. "Say 'Hi' to Daphne for me," Nick says knowingly. Natalie follows up with the imitation of a big smooch.

Nick visits Tamara's apartment building and uses hypnotism to help a neighbor remember the details of a car that was there on the night of the murder - big, black, with a red license plate.

In Forensics, Daphne tells Schanke that the fact that he is married makes him that much more appealing. She determines that the clasp is from Kazakhstan.

Nick and Schanke visit the Kazakhstani consulate, where they are at first stonewalled by the ambassador's attaché, Juri Karimov, then assured by Ambassador Petrashenko that Tamara Brunansky is not connected to anyone in the consulate. In a flashback, Senator Gardner reiterates Angela's invitation for Nick to join the team. Gardner then pulls Angela away for a strategy session, and Nick encounters LaCroix, who ridicules Nick's political philosophy. Nick believes that people should have the right to choose who governs them, while LaCroix believes in a benevolent tyranny, tempered by the occasional assassination. Ambassador Petrashenko reminds Nick and Schanke that they have no jurisdiction on consulate grounds, then kicks them out.

Schanke learns that Petrashenko turned down the presidency of Kazakhstan to accept the position of ambassador, leading the detectives to believe that there might be skeletons in his closet which he is trying to hide. Inspector Jacques Tremblay of the R.C.M.P. arrives at the precinct to inform the detectives that Ambassador Petrashenko has diplomatic immunity and that the R.C.M.P. is taking over the investigation. The ambassador can't be prosecuted, but if the R.C.M.P.'s investigation concludes that he should be expelled, they will make that suggestion. Nick and Schanke are furious.

In a flashback, Nick sees Angela coming out of a hotel room in tears, with her clothes in disarray. When Nick asks what is wrong, she says that it's all her fault. She asks Nick not to say anything to anyone, then walks back to her own room. Senator Gardner opens the hotel room door, sees Nick, and closes it again without a word.

Cohen informs the detectives of another body that has been dumped, then warns them that Petrashenko is off-limits.

The second victim was strangled during a massage, just like the first. Nick refuses to ease up on Petrashenko, despite Schanke's and Natalie's warnings. Natalie worries that Nick might ruin his career and have to relocate.

In a flashback, Angela has hung herself in her hotel room. LaCroix urges Nick to kill the senator, whom Nick had previously admired so much.

Juri Karimov visits the precinct and infonns Schanke that the ambassador is a murderer, and it's been going on for years. According to Karimov, Petrashenko beat his mistress to death back in Kazakhstan, and it was covered up. He also states that Petrashenko's wife committed suicide because of his beatings and affairs. He pleads with Schanke and Cohen to do something.

Meanwhile, Nick surprises Petrashenko at the consulate and finds him holding some pearls. Despite Petrashenko's outrage, Nick escorts him out of the consulate in handcuffs.

A friend of the second victim arrives at the precinct. She feels terribly guilty because she left her friend, Nancy, alone with the man they met at the nightclub, then Nancy was killed. They ask her to ID the ambassador, and she says that he bears some resemblance to the man she met, but he's about thirty years too old. Inspector Tremblay announces that the Kazakhstani government will officially request Detective Knight's extradition within twenty-four hours for having "kidnapped' the ambassador.

In a flashback, Gardner tells Nick to put Angela's death behind him and to move on with the campaign. Just then, Gardner gets a phone call and learns that someone on his team called the press and told them about what happened with Angela. It's going to be on the front page of the Tribune. Rather than face an investigation, Gardner drops out of the race for the presidency.

Schanke learns that Petrashenko has a son, Damir, who defected to Canada about a year before his father turned down the presidency. Although nothing was ever proven, Damir fled the country to avoid prosecution for unspecified crimes. His present whereabouts are unknown. Nick recalls Nancy's friend saying that the ambassador bore a resemblance to the killer, but he was about thirty years too old.

Nick and Schanke tell the ambassador that they know he has been covering for his son Damir, who is living and working under the assumed name of Juri Karimov. Because of the false pretenses of Damir's employment, he does not have diplomatic immunity. The ambassador had disposed of the women's bodies in order to protect his son. He feels responsible for the way Damir turned out because he paid more attention to his political career than to his son.

The ambassador takes Nick and Schanke to the nightclub where his son hangs out. Nick, Schanke, and the ambassador arrive just as Damir is about to leave with a woman. When he sees them, Damir grabs the woman and holds a gun to her, causing Nick and Schanke to draw their guns, as well. The ambassador is in the process of talking Damir into handing over the gun when the woman elbows Damir and escapes his grasp. Damir draws his gun on Nick and fires, but his father intercepts the bullet. Damir grabs the woman again and runs out with her. Nick follows Damir while Schanke remains behind with the wounded ambassador. Outside, Damir drags the woman down an alley and throws her to the ground. Nick flies in, grabs Damir from behind, and tosses him onto a pile of garbage, knocking him out. Nick holds the hysterical woman and tries to calm her down.

Back at the precinct, Daphne offers Schanke two tickets to a hockey game, but he says he can't go with her. She explains that she intended the tickets to be for him and Myra. He thanks her, but says that he would feel guilty taking them, then suggests that she take Nick to the game. Nick is willing to go, but Daphne glances at his empty ring finger and says, "No. I'll ask Lapinsky." Schanke chuckles, and Nick smiles knowingly.

**QUEEN OF HARPS**
written by Gillian Horvath
directed by Alan Simmonds

**Guest Cast**
Brenda Bazinet as "Gwyneth/Johanna Shea"
with
Peter Donaldson ..... Sir Raymond/Hugh DeLabarre
Ron Hartmann ..... Ted Haley
Colin Miller ..... Concierge
David Bolt ..... Sam Baskers

**Synopsis**

Carreg, Wales, 1220's - A woman, Gwyneth, sits on a stone that is part of a stone circle, playing a harp and singing. The sound of someone approaching causes her to stop. "Nichole?" she queries, looking around. A man appears and chases her down to a lake. She tosses the harp into the water moments before die man draws his sword and slays her.

Toronto, 1994 - The swan-patterned, ash wood harp, of unknown English or Irish origin, is being auctioned off as part of the Kushner estate. Nick, standing in the back of the room, gets into a bidding war for it. The other interested parties are a young woman, who had to drop out of the bidding early, and a gentleman, who is obviously the agent for someone else, since he is constantly conferring via his cellular phone. As the price reaches $285,000, Schanke arrives. New computer software has been installed, and he needs Nick's help to print out an arrest report that Cohen is waiting for. Since Nick didn't answer his phone or his pager, Schanke put out an APB on Nick's car in order to locate him. Nick's competition raises the bid to $290,000, and Nick signals the auctioneer to indicate his bid of $300,000. When the auctioneer announces the bid and points at Nick, Schanke assumes that the auctioneer has made a terrible mistake. When the competition raises the bid to $310,000, Schanke grabs Nick's paddle away from him to prevent the mistake from reoccurring. Nick loses the harp to his competition, but can say nothing. Schanke can't understand why Nick was even at the auction, since he and Nick are not investigating Ellen Kushner's death. Forensics has determined that it was an accident that she drove her BMW off a bridge. He asks Nick what it's all about, adding, "And if you're going to say 'hunch,' I'm going to have to hit you." Nick makes no reply.

Nick claims that he attended the auction in order to see who was buying up the estate, but Natalie doesn't believe him. She saw him eyeing the harp when the collection was being tagged. Nick admits that he underestimated Natalie. He laments that he lost the harp because he couldn't let Schanke see him spend ten years' salary in one night. He tells Natalie that he isn't going to let it go, not after all this time. She asks why it's so important, and he answers that it's from "before."

In a flashback to a time before he became a vampire, Nick is an attaché to Lord DeLabarre and is part of a delegation traveling to Carreg. Their mission is to bequeath papal blessings on the current Lord of Carreg in hopes of bolstering his failing quest to bring God to the Keltic pagans. Nick points out to DeLabarre that their influence may be unwelcome, but is told that he asks too many questions that require complicated answers. God is the wind in their sails and, failing that, the iron in their swords. They are bringing the pagans an offer that must not be refused. Nick hears music and rides ahead to investigate. He encounters Gwyneth in the stone circle, singing and playing the harp, and he is enchanted by her.

Nick visits the auction house and requests information on the bidder who bought the harp. The information is confidential, however, and he is told to return with a subpoena. From outside, he observes the auctioneer, Mr. Baskers, leave, then sees the woman who bid on the harp come down an alley on the side of the building, signal a waiting taxi, and depart. The padlock on the back entrance to the auction house is broken, and Nick lets himself in. He looks up the woman's bidding number, twelve, in the card file and learns that she is Johanna Shea from the Museum of the Giant's Hand in Carreg, Wales. The card for bidder number nineteen, the gentleman who bought the harp, is missing. Nick breaks into the auction house's vault and steals the harp.

Samuel Baskers has been found with his neck broken, and the harp is discovered to be missing. Schanke and Natalie theorize that Kushner may have been killed to put the harp on the market, then Baskers was killed when the person who wanted the harp wasn't able to get it at the auction. Natalie quietly checks Baskers's neck. There are no puncture wounds.

At home, Nick admires the harp. In a flashback, Nick and Gwyneth are drawn to each other, despite their religious differences. Natalie arrives and is aghast to find Nick with the harp. She reproaches him for stealing it, and he assures her that Baskers was alive when he saw him last.

Schanke has learned from Baskers's assistant that the buyer's name is DeLabarre, also known as Lord Carreg, and his agent's name is Ted Haley. Schanke scoffs at Nick's suggestion that the person who stole the harp might not be the same person who killed Baskers.

Nick and Schanke pay a visit to Lord Carreg at the Salisbury Club. He tells them that the harp is a family heirloom that was lost in the thirteenth century. Nick is not very encouraging and says that things can disappear in the underground art market and not show up for another hundred years. Outside, Nick and Schanke apprehend Johanna trying to break into the building.

At the precinct, Johanna tells the detectives that she is an archeologist working for the museum at Giant's Hand, the stone circle in Carreg. Since Cohen has learned that Johanna had two meetings with Ellen Kushner the week before her death, Johanna is suspected of killing both Kushner and Baskers. Johanna admits that she broke into the auction house to get the name and address of the buyer, but denies stealing the harp. She also tells the detectives that Kushner had agreed to donate the harp to the museum, but died before the paperwork could be done. She insists that she was trying to break into the Salisbury Club merely to talk to Lord Carreg, in hopes of getting him to donate the harp to her museum.

Natalie is still upset with Nick, but is willing to listen to the rest of the story. In a flashback, Lord DeLabarre reproaches Nick for spending so much time with Gwyneth. Despite the warning, Nick meets Gwyneth in the stone circle that night. She is concerned because a soothsayer has told her that she and Nick will not share a destiny. She tells Nick that her people will never bow to the will of Rome. Their ways will vanish in blood, and the life will go out of the land. The harp will remain and carry a curse which will deny fullness of life to whomever possesses it, so that her people will not be forgotten. She also tells Nick that he will live a very long time, but will never find happiness. The next day, Nick finds Gwyneth's body by the lake. He cradles her body and is suddenly surrounded by local men bearing weapons. He is imprisoned for murder, but DeLabarre, who is Gwyneth's true murderer, negotiates his freedom. Nick must pay his penance by fighting in the Holy Land. Nick protests that he is innocent, but is told to take his sword to Jerusalem.

Nick tells Johanna that he believes her and will try to help her. A mysterious benefactor has come up with her bond, and Nick recruits Ted Haley to represent her. She asks Nick why he is helping her, and he replies that maybe there was a time when he wished he had a good lawyer.

Schanke reports that the harp resurfaced 120 years ago when a private English collection went up for sale. Since then, it has been owned by three members of the DeLabarre family, all of whom died at age 55. Nick mutters, "The curse." He tells Schanke to meet him with backup at Johanna's hotel, then rushes out of the precinct.

Johanna returns to her hotel room and finds the harp waiting for her. DeLabarre arrives and demands that it be returned to him. She runs out, but he catches her and takes the harp. Nick appears in an alley outside, and DeLabarre pulls a gun on him. DeLabarre, who is 54 years old, asks if Nick has any idea what it's like to live under a curse and says that the harp must be destroyed. DeLabarre shoots Nick several times, which has no effect. Nick knocks him out and returns the harp to Johanna. DeLabarre emerges from the alley and is struck by a passing truck.

Natalie confirms, through skin and hair samples, that DeLabarre killed Baskers. Schanke reports that someone laid down $500,000 for the harp at an auction, then donated it to the museum in Carreg. Schanke departs, and Natalie tells Nick that she trusts him, but he can't throw the rule book out every time something from his past comes up. He promises that he won't. When she asks what's going to stop him, he smiles and replies, "You." He gives her a friendly kiss on the cheek and walks off. She rolls her eyes and groans, "A half a million dollars!"

Back in Carreg, Johanna sits in the stone circle, playing the harp and singing.

♪♪("Suite from QUEEN OF HARPS" is on the *Forever Knight Soundtrack.*)

## CLOSE CALL

written by Michael Sadowski
directed by Clay Borris

### Guest Cast

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| John Stoneham Sr. | Fugitive | Karen LeBlanc | Vera |
| Christina Cox | Motorcycle Cop | Laura Robinson | Reporter |
| Tracey Cook | Alma | Bryan Renfro | Crazed Gunman |
| Quyen Hua | Hostage | Rober Bockstall | Carl |
| Jason Blicker | Bobby Matteo | Randy Butcher | Shooter |
| Tony Perri | Bus Driver | Cynthia Belliveau | Alexandra |
| Michael Simpson | Rogers | Angela Moore | Officer No. 1 |
| David Blacker | Officer No. 2 | Kimberly Huie | Hellman |

### Synopsis

Schanke pursues a gunman into an alley and is startled by Nick's sudden appearance on a fire escape landing. Schanke wounds the gunman in a shoot-out, and as the man lies on the ground, Schanke gazes up at Nick in amazement. Nick sees the gunman get up, and he shouts a warning to Schanke. Schanke draws his gun just as Nick flies down and knocks the gunman out with one punch. Schanke is now completely baffled.

Knowing that it was not humanly possible for Nick to be there before him, Schanke asks when the academy started teaching cops to fly. Nick hypnotizes Schanke into forgetting that he saw him fly. He plants the suggestion that Schanke will take him home, then take the car for the day, adding, "See if you can get it washed, too." The gunman dies, but Schanke assures Nick that he is okay with it and says, "It was him or me, Nick. I had to take him down." The sun is coming up, and Nick has to get home. Schanke's car is in the shop, and Nick asks how he will get home. Schanke suggests that he take the Caddy, drop Nick off, then pick him up for work later. He adds, "Aw, hell, I'll even wash it for ya." It sounds like a good deal to Nick, so he suggests that Schanke drive while he rides in the trunk. Schanke protests that Nick isn't that allergic to sunshine and says that a tan will do him good. "Listen," says Nick, "I don't tan. I don't burn. I implode." Schanke flashes back to the first time that he and Nick rode a shift together. When asked why he drove that particular automobile, Nick had replied, "Trunk space. The 1962 Cadillac has more trunk space than any car made in the last thirty years."

Schanke visits the morgue and tells Natalie about Nick riding home in the trunk of his car. She says that Nick has to protect himself. She asks Schanke how he's doing, and he says that she sounds just like Nick. He asks if Natalie has ever gotten the feeling that Nick is "different." Besides riding home in the trunk of his car, Schanke feels that Nick is also a little too gallant under fire. Schanke flashes back to Nick's behavior when they went after a gunman in an apartment building and again when they cornered a suspect in a motel room. He worries that Nick believes he can't be killed. It occurs to Schanke that he really doesn't know his partner very well, so he decides to find out who Detective Nick Knight really is.

Natalie calls Nick, but he is sleeping and just knocks the phone off the hook. Schanke tries to reach him, also, but to no avail. Schanke flashes back to the incident with the gunman in the apartment building. He was first astonished by Nick's ability to see into the dark apartment, and then again when Nick managed to pull the gunman out through an upper-story window. Cohen is worried about Schanke's reaction to the shooting, but he assures her that he is fine. He erases Nick's name from a pad of paper and replaces it with "JOHN DOE 199." Under the heading "KNOWN ACQUAINTANCES," he writes, "JANETTE?" He flashes back to a conversation with Janette in which he surmised that she and Nick had been together in college. Her reply had been, "No, actually, it was closer to the Renaissance."

At the Raven, Schanke bangs on the door and rings the bell, but gets no response. Recalling that he has Nick's set of keys, he lets himself in. In the deserted club, Schanke recalls his encounter with the beautiful, but potentially deadly, Alma. In a back room of the club, Schanke finds a trunk containing old letters, a picture of "The Nightcrawler," an old photograph of Janette (which he pockets), and a old photograph of Janette, Nick, and LaCroix. He recalls Janette's words about knowing Nick during the Renaissance.

An angry Janette surprises Schanke. He apologizes and frantically says that he can explain. She pins him up against a wall and hisses, "This better be very good." They take a seat at the bar, and she tells him that

the photograph is of their grandparents. They agree that the resemblance is amazing. He asks if Janette has ever noticed any weird, even suicidal, behavior on Nick's part such as hijacking a city bus, for example. Schanke flashes back to the time that Nick climbed onto the roof of a moving bus because he claimed that he recognized a suspect from a previous case on board. Schanke asks if Janette knows anything about "The Nightcrawler," since Nick is a big fan. Janette mesmerizes Schanke and tells him not to probe into Nick's affairs. She advises him to forget that he was there and to call in sick for his next shift, adding that he needs a rest.

Outside the Raven, a motorcycle cop is about to ticket Nick's car. When she asks Schanke for the registration, he searches the glove compartment and finds an old New York driver's license in the name of "Nicholas Forrester."

Back at the precinct, Schanke calls an officer named Vera and asks her to fax a copy of Nick's registration to Traffic. He asks her not to tell Nick about the parking ticket. He also asks her to run an archive check on the driver's license that he found, which expired in 1963. When Schanke sees the tablet with Janette's name written on it, he recalls Janette telling him not to probe into Nick's affairs. He also recalls Nick telling him to forget about seeing him fly. Janette's advice that he needs a rest keeps running through Schanke's mind, and he falls asleep at his desk. Vera comes by, wakes Schanke up, and hands him the archive report on the driver's license. Upon seeing Nick's picture, Schanke remembers the old photograph of Janette in his pocket.

At the morgue, Schanke tells Natalie about Janette and Nick hypnotizing him and flashes back to a conversation with a television reporter. When the reporter asked Schanke if Nick seemed eccentric, Schanke reeled off a list of eccentricities, then sarcastically answered, "Nah." Schanke then flashes back to a police search of Nick's apartment, during which Nick's sun bed was discovered, as well as the blood in his refrigerator.

Back at the precinct, Vera sees Schanke's list of clues for John Doe 199: allergic to sun, hypnotized, and needs blood. She jokes that Schanke is looking for a vampire. Schanke then stocks up on books about vampires. and everything he reads seems to relate to Nick. He reads about a vampire's reaction to sunlight, his incredible strength, his abilities to fly and mesmerize people, his need for blood, the fact that vampires assume and dispose of identities throughout the ages, his fear of symbols of redemption, the fact that vampires often form loose societies with others of their kind and travel through the years with them, and a vampire's allegiance to the master who brought him across. Everything he reads triggers some memory of Nick that fits the description. hi Nick's desk, he finds a picture of "The Nightcrawler" identical to the one in Janette's trunk.

Janette and Natalie both visit Nick and warn him that Schanke is catching on.

Schanke visits the CERK radio station and asks LaCroix if he and Nick are vampires. "You tell me," LaCroix responds. Schanke explains some of the things that are causing his suspicion, then begins to talk about the shooting the night before. Nick and Janette arrive, and LaCroix motions for them to listen from the shadows, unseen by Schanke. After talking everything out, Schanke finally concludes that he's been an idiot. He's been running around all day butting his nose into Nick's affairs, after Nick saved his life. LaCroix explains that the fatigue, stress, and trauma that Schanke is experiencing have been playing with his imagination. Schanke sheepishly asks one more time if Nick is a ... (he can't even say it out loud anymore). LaCroix chuckles and asks, "What do you thing, really?" Schanke thinks he needs a drink. Before Schanke takes his leave, LaCroix answers the question about whether Nick is "different." He explains that Nick is actually very much like Schanke - he doesn't like to kill people, either.

Schanke books off work for his next shift, which Cohen thinks is a good idea, considering all he's been through. Cohen tells Natalie that she told Schanke to go right home, but he insisted that there was something very important that he had to do first. Natalie hopes that he'll be okay, wherever he is.

Outside, Schanke is meticulously washing Nick's car.

**BE MY VALENTINE**
written by Diane Cary
directed by Stefan Scaini (Canadian version) / Stefan Scani (U.S. version)

**Guest Cast**
Claire Rankin as "Fleur"
with

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| Marvin Karon | Stan | Nonnie Griffin | Nick's Mother |
| Natalie Gray | Terry | Patricia Carroll Brown | Elsa |
| David Sutcliffe | Fiancé | Shelly Hong | Co-ed |

**Synopsis**

A woman is delighted to receive a Valentine's Day card. It reads: "For my valentine, I have gazed upon the rose's petals, the lily's stem so fine, but none compared to your flower face ..." Nothing more is written on the card. She looks up in bemusement and sees written on the wall above her mantel: "And now you will be mine." Suddenly, the woman is strangled and killed.

While doing his radio show, "The Nightcrawler" discusses the history of St. Valentine. LaCroix feels that love drains us of our strength, and he says that we never learn. In a flashback, a beautiful young woman begs LaCroix to take her and says that she cannot live without him.

Natalie is collecting cell samples from Nick as part of her ongoing search for a cure. They discuss Valentine's Day and the fact that Natalie heard Cohen whispering sweet nothings into the phone. Since Nick seems to be tolerating his vitamin supplements, but they aren't having much effect, Natalie wants to double the dosage. Nick admits that it has nothing to do with the dosage. He keeps forgetting to take them. She had suspected as much and gives him a platonic Valentine's Day present - a sterling silver pill box. Nick reveals that he does feet more human now - at certain times, with certain people. Simultaneously, Nick's phone rings, and Natalie's pager goes off. There's only one thing that makes them both so popular.

At the crime scene, Natalie identifies with the victim, a busy career woman with little time for romance. Nick says the valentine was used to make her vulnerable for one critical moment. In a flashback, the sun has risen and smoke pours from the bodies of Nick, Janette, and LaCroix as they rush into the home of Nick's mother and sister. LaCroix's face is burned, and he is furious. He won't humor Nick like this again. Nick hasn't seen his family since he left for the crusades, and he doesn't want to disappear without seeing them one last time. Nick's sister, Fleur, rushes downstairs and embraces her brother joyously. She is concerned about LaCroix's injury, but he brushes her off. Nick's mother comes down and frets that her son is too pale. He assures her that it's just fatigue and introduces his traveling companions, Lucien LaCroix and Janette DuCharme. LaCroix nearly collapses, but Fleur catches him. He apologizes and says that he needs to rest.

This murder is similar to two that took place in Montreal last year. They are dealing with a multiple murderer and have to move fast. The 14th is two days away, and Cohen wants Cupid's wings clipped before he strikes again. Schanke plans to take Myra to Las Vegas for Valentine's Day. She would prefer Hawaii, but he's sure that she'll like Vegas just as much. Schanke says that women don't know what they want, but Nick thinks that women want a man who isn't afraid to express his love. Someone observes from across the street as Nick walks Natalie to her car.

While doing his radio show, LaCroix flashes back to stargazing with Fleur. She says that his quick healing indicates that a benevolent power flows though him, but he credits it to the warmth of her touch. Nick is troubled by the obvious attraction between Fleur and LaCroix. "The Nightcrawler" advises his listeners to "just say 'no' to love."

To Natalie's surprise, Nick begins acting more demonstrative and attentive. In a flashback, Nick argues that LaCroix can't be in love because he hasn't got one shred of humanity in him. LaCroix says that he would have agreed with that before he met Fleur.

Nick visits Natalie and asks what they are going to do about how they feel. In a flashback, LaCroix and Fleur stargaze. They express their feelings for each other and kiss passionately. Back in the present, LaCroix stands outside Natalie's apartment. Gazing at the stars, he asks for relief from the pain and incessant longing. Through the window, he sees Nick and Natalie kissing.

There has been another murder by the same killer. In a flashback, Nick observes LaCroix and Fleur in the courtyard. Fleur says that she can't live without LaCroix and begs him to take her with him. With glowing

eyes and bared fangs, he reveals that there is a way for them to be together forever. Nick stops LaCroix from biting Fleur, and the two vampires battle. Fleur tells Nick that she is willing to become a vampire in order to be with LaCroix. LaCroix reminds Nick that, as a mortal, Fleur will die. By bringing her across, he can preserve her beauty forever.

It turns out that all four victims were either engaged, or recently married. They also all had jobs that required a lot of library research.

Nick and Schanke visit the university library and split up. On a hunch, Nick asks a librarian about an employee from Montreal who hasn't worked there long, pretending that he has forgotten the man's name. "That would be Stan," she replies and directs him to Central Research. Schanke finds Central Research on his own, and when he shows his badge and inquires about a researcher who just moved from Montreal, Stan grabs a woman and holds a letter opener to her throat. Using the woman as a shield, Stan runs away. Schanke follows, but falls over a cart of books that Stan rolls into his path. Schanke calls for Nick, and Nick apprehends Stan from behind.

At the precinct, Stan refers to his victims as girlfriends and says that each one was going to leave him. In a flashback, Nick tells LaCroix that bringing Fleur over would annihilate her purity and make her a cold-blooded killer. If LaCroix truly loves her, he will not destroy her innocence. Gazing lovingly at Fleur, it strikes LaCroix as a great irony that such a cold, still heart can feel such pain. In a moment of privacy at the police station, Nick asks Natalie to keep tomorrow night open and kisses her on the head. In the squad room, they touch hands briefly and part ways, not noticing LaCroix observing from across the room.

Schanke delivers a dozen white roses to Natalie in the morgue and blatantly reads the card. It is an invitation to dinner and is signed by "a gentlemen from the thirteenth century."

Natalie arrives at the elegant restaurant and is escorted to her table by the maitre d'. She is surprised to find LaCroix waiting for her. He introduces himself and says that he felt it was time they met. She agrees. He bought out the entire restaurant for the evening, so they are alone.

Nick can't reach Natalie by phone, so he visits the morgue and finds the roses and card. In a flashback, Nick hypnotizes Fleur and tells her to forget. LaCroix tells Nick that he will demand retribution. One day, when Nick has fallen in love, LaCroix will take from him what he has taken from LaCroix. For his sister's sake, Nick agrees to the bargain.

Natalie admits loving Nick, and LaCroix reminds her that they have an insurmountable problem. Vampires may mix minds with mortals, but anything more can be quite hazardous to her health. She replies that she knew the risks when she signed on. While conversing with Natalie, LaCroix slowly mesmerizes her. He walks around behind her and is about to bite her neck when Nick crashes through the skylight. The two vampires battle, then LaCroix grabs a wooden staff from an ornamental suit of armor and declares that he will have the retribution that Nick promised. He will either deprive Nick of Natalie, or deprive Natalie of Nick. Nick denies loving Natalie. He explains that she is working to lift his curse and that it was in his best interest to humor her infatuation. LaCroix tells Nick to prove it by bringing Natalie over, or else he will do with her as he pleases. Natalie is in a hypnotic trance and is completely unaware of what is happening around her. Nick pulls her up from her chair and holds her from behind. Wih glowing eyes and bared fangs, he kisses her mouth and neck. Just as Nick is about to bite Natalie, LaCroix flashes back to Fleur and tells Nick to stop. Knowing how Nick reveres humanity, LaCroix believes that he would kill Natalie rather than bring her across. That would not be payment enough for having lost Fleur. Believing Nick's heart to be untouched, LaCroix decides to wait until Nick has felt the passion and sorrow that he has. When LaCroix flies out, Nick breathes a sigh of relief and spins Natalie around. He holds her tightly and squeezes his eyes shut in anguish over what almost happened.

The next night, Schanke calls from Hawaii. Myra changed their plans, and he is having die time of his life. Natalie is concerned about the night before. She usually holds her wine pretty well, but can't remember anything between walking into the restaurant and going home in the cab. Nick assures her that they had a good time, and she says that they should do it again sometime.

♪♪("Suite from BE MY VALENTINE" is on the *Forever Knight Soundtrack.*)

**THE CODE**
written by John Kapelos
directed by Clay Borris

**Guest Cast**
Joseph Ziegler as "Delehanty"
with
David Nerman ..... Wade
Anna-Louise Richardson ..... Irene
Ron Hastings ..... Prospector
Bridget Giggs ..... Gwen
Conrad Bergschneider ..... Duke

**Synopsis**

Schanke is frantic because his car has stalled, he is late, and Cohen is going to kill him. He gets out of his car to check the engine and tries to flag down a passing vehicle. Suddenly, his car is rear-ended by an elderly nun. In frustration, he screams to the sky, "I hate winter!"

Schanke arrives at the precinct shivering, and Cohen points disapprovingly at her watch. While en route to investigate the overdose death of a model, Gwen Madison, Schanke complains about the nonfunctioning heater in Nick's car, saying, "Eight centuries and this thing wouldn't heat up." He is definitely burned-out on the Canadian winter.

Schanke is aghast at the drawer full of different medications at Gwen's apartment. Nick finds a Narcotics Anonymous card with the notation: "Irene - your friend anytime." Schanke wants to head back, since it's obviously not a homicide, and Nick wants to send a unit for Irene.

Back at the precinct, Schanke is thrilled by a surprise visit from his childhood friend and former partner, Patrick Delehanty. He and "D" rode together for seven years before Delehanty moved to Montreal. Delehanty, who has already charmed Cohen and is calling her "Amanda," has come bearing lunch. He and Schanke offer a garlic-loaded souvlaki to Nick, who declines and explains that he is on a liquid diet. Delehanty reveals that he has quit the force, "chucked it all," and moved to Scottsdale, Arizona. In a flashback, Nick comes across an abandoned campfire in the Old West. A man suddenly pulls a gun on Nick from behind and demands his gold. Nick refuses. A shot rings out, and Nick's antagonist falls to the ground, dead. A man emerges from the rocks, and Nick thanks the stranger, Wade, for saving his life. Delehanty regales Schanke with tales of the good life in Arizona, where he is working as a private investigator.

Natalie finds it strange that there were traces of mercury in Gwen's system, although the amount wasn't lethal. Gwen definitely died of a drug overdose.

Delehanty rides along when Nick and Schanke investigate the death of an elderly man. Natalie says that the man, who suffered from chronic arthritis, appears to have died of a sudden seizure or aneurysm. Nick tells her that he's glad Schanke has Delehanty to hang out with. It seems to be doing him good. In a flashback, Nick and Wade bury the would-be thief, and Nick backs away warily as Wade marks the grave with a wooden cross. Schanke finds a bottle of pills identical to one of the bottles in Gwen's apartment. He invites Delehanty to ride along while he brings the pills to the lab. They depart, and Nick remarks, "That's okay. I'll finish up."

Schanke believes that the two deaths might be connected, but Nick disagrees because the drug found at both scenes, Provatrex, is a fairly common one. Delehanty is heading back to his hotel, but tells Schanke to stop by after his shift and have breakfast with him. When Schanke leaves to bring the Provatrex to the evidence lockup, Delehanty has a private word with Nick. He's worried because Schanke seems depressed and burned-out. Nick says that Schanke has his days, just like everybody else. Delehanty tells Nick about the time that he and Schanke were camping as kids and had to fight off a pack of dogs. After that, they called themselves dogs and lived by the code that they would go to the end for each other. In a flashback, Nick reluctantly shares a bottle of whiskey with Wade while sitting around the campfire.

At the precinct, Irene says that ever since Gwen's operation to repair a deviated septum, she suffered from a lot of headaches and pain. After the interview, Nick and Schanke argue because Nick disapproved of Schanke's manner and thought that he was too hard on Irene.

Schanke joins Delehanty in his posh hotel suite for breakfast. Natalie calls him and reports that the old man died of mercury poisoning. Schanke suspects that the Provatrex is the culprit and is concerned because it's an over-the-counter medication. Millions of people could be taking it.

In a drugstore, a man surreptitiously removes several bottles of Provatrex from a shelf and replaces them with new bottles.

At a press conference, Schanke announces that Provatrex has been recalled. Nick tells Natalie that something isn't right, even though she has confirmed that the Provatrex was tainted with mercury. Back in the squad room, Schanke is bursting with pride for having cracked the "great Provatrex scare of 1995." He thinks it would make a great movie-of-the-week, but Nick tells him not to go shopping for a network yet and walks off. Schanke is hurt and angry at Nick's lack of respect. "Good work" or "congratulations" might have been appropriate. Later, in the morgue, Natalie tells Nick that he doesn't give Schanke enough credit and that he should apologize. Meanwhile, Delehanty invites Schanke to come and work with him in Arizona.

Nick attempts to apologize to Schanke, but they end up arguing about the case again. Even though the pharmaceutical company admits that the contamination may have occurred in their own plant, perhaps by a disgruntled employee, Nick still doesn't feel good about the case.

In a rare moment, Cohen tells Schanke that she was impressed by his work. Although twenty-four hours ago he would have eaten ground glass to hear that, he hands m his resignation, effective immediately. He leaves his badge and gun on her desk. Cohen is speechless.

A woman named Megan Farr has been brought into the morgue with an unopened bottle of Provatrex in her handbag, but none in her system. Yet she died of acute mercuric toxemia. Like Gwen, Megan recently had reconstructive surgery, but unlike Gwen and the old man, she hadn't ingested any Provatrex. Schanke stops by the morgue and tells Nick and Natalie that he has resigned. Nick says he can't leave, to which Schanke replies, "Just watch me." In a flashback, Nick is dizzy and barely able to see straight. Wade taunts him with a bottle which contains the antidote to the poison that was in the whiskey. Wade drinks the antidote, and Nick passes out.

In the hotel suite, Schanke meets one of Delehanty's associates, Tom Duke. He is the man who was replacing bottles of Provatrex on the drugstore shelf.

Natalie discovers that both women were operated on in Toronto Central Hospital, and both operations used Marrow-Comp, a synthetic bone and cartilage material. She determines that the Marrow-Comp caused the mercury poisoning, and since no other cases have been reported, it must have been one isolated, contaminated batch. Nick remarks that it was only in Toronto that contaminated Provatrex was found. If Megan had taken the Provatrex, they would have assumed that that was what killed her, when in fact it was the Marrow-Comp. Nick believes that someone is pointing them in the wrong direction.

Schanke tests his own knowledge of Delehanty and manages to open Delehanty's briefcase using his tenth-grade locker combination. He is surprised to find it filled with bottles of Provatrex.

Natalie learns that H.M.S. Medical, the manufacturer Marrow-Comp, is located in Arizona.

Nick says that he must find Schanke and Delehanty. In a flashback, Wade ties up the unconscious Nick and reviews the "Wanted" poster that bears sketches of Nick, LaCroix, and Janette. LaCroix's sudden arrival surprises Wade, and LaCroix kills the bounty hunter.

Delehanty admits to Schanke that he was trying to protect his client, H.M.S. Medical, by making it look as if the mercury poisoning came from a different source, Provatrex. Duke holds a gun on Schanke, but Delehanty assures him that Schanke doesn't need that kind of coercion. He's sure that Schanke will stick by him out of friendship. Schanke pretends to go along with it, then smashes Duke with a chair. The gun goes off, and Delehanty gets shot. The wounded Delehanty pulls a gun and is about to shoot Schanke when Nick bursts through a window and grabs the weapon. Delehanty dies in Schanke's arms, and Schanke bitterly remarks, "Friends. Who needs 'em? Right, Nick?" In a flashback, Nick regains consciousness, and LaCroix explains that curare is lethal to mortals, but merely intoxicating to vampires. Nick asks how LaCroix knew where to find him, and LaCroix replies that he will always know. That is their code.

Schanke returns to work and explains his behavior by asking if Nick has ever been so full of one life that he wanted another. Nick answers that he's been there, done that. Schanke needs to borrow Nick's car so that he can check out some cross-country skis. He's decided that if he can't beat the winter, he might as well learn to love it. He even offers to get Nick's heater fixed.

## A MORE PERMANENT HELL

written by Ron Taylor
directed by John Kapelos

### Guest Cast

Sharon Bembaum as"Marybeth Ellis"
with

Richard Partington ..... Flavius
Gina Wilkinson ..... Seline
Joanna Bacalso ..... Brianna
Michael Ayoub ..... Dr. Forbes
Adrian Falconer ..... Officer Harris
Jennifer Mossop ..... News Anchor No. I
Susan Bryson .....Woman
Kathryn Long ..... Divia
Julian Richings ..... Dr. Paul Dana
Rod Wilson ..... Spark
Jacqueline McLeod ..... Dr. Carter
Lee Tim .....Plummer
Tim Webber ..... News Anchor No. 2

### Synopsis

Schanke tries to get Nick to invest with his stockbroker cousin, Arthur, and reminds him that he won't be young forever. They investigate the suicide of an astronomer, Dr. Pat Carter, at the observatory. Carter's associates, Drs. Paul Dana and Marybeth Ellis reveal, in the strictest of confidence, the reason that Carter became despondent. They have been tracking asteroid 6748 and have discovered that it will collide with Earth within three months. The asteroid will be over five miles wide when it hits, and it will traveling at 20 miles per second. It is larger than the asteroid which caused the dinosaurs' extinction, and it will destroy all life on the planet. They are all stunned by the news, but Dr. Ellis says that she never thought Carter would commit suicide.

A scientist, Dr. Forbes, tells Cohen that York University and the Jet Propulsion Lab in California will check the astronomers' data. Until then, any leak of this news could be disastrous.

Back at the precinct, Schanke calls Myra just to say that he loves her, and Cohen gazes at a family photograph. Nick tells Cohen that something feels wrong about this case.

Natalie confirms that Carter's death was a suicide. Natalie is edgy because of the news of the asteroid, and she snaps at Schanke. Nick tells her not to give up. She glumly says that she loves his optimism. "Well, let's hope that spreads," he replies and kisses her on the forehead.

From the observatory, a police officer from the 96th precinct makes a phone call and shares the horrible news that he has learned.

Reports of the asteroid are all over the news, even though the Jet Propulsion Laboratory says that they won't be able to confirm its course for another 48 hours. Panic and riots are breaking out everywhere. There have been a lot of suicides, and Natalie shows Nick that she has been getting bodies in the morgue with fang marks on their necks. With all the craziness going on, she thinks that she can keep it hidden for awhile. Natalie is exhausted and has no help in the morgue. Most of the department didn't come in today.

Cohen's department is operating at less than one-third strength, and the uniforms are at fifty percent. They are getting homicide calls at the rate of one every ten minutes, along with suicides and assaults. On his cousin's advice, Schanke sold his stocks and made $5,000, but Cohen tells him that the currency markets are collapsing, and very shortly, that $5,000 will be enough to buy donuts for the squad.

"The Nightcrawler" says that when the asteroid hits, the 1,000-megaton blast will raise an impenetrable dust cloud that will obliterate the sun for at least twenty years. He continues, "The temperature on Earth will fall below freezing and stay there. The air will be filled with dirt and toxins. Within a short time, all plant, animal, and human life will be gone." In a flashback to 79 A.D., LaCroix, a Roman general, returns to his home in Pompeii. He and his proconsul gloat over their defeat of the Gauls and the fact that LaCroix's men had their way with the Gauls' women afterwards. LaCroix learns that his daughter, Divia, who was ill, was visited by an ancient healer and cured as if by magic. His proconsul doesn't feel that Divia is exactly alive and well, however. She is pale and silent and won't go out into the sunlight. There is a menace about her.

Nick hears screams and stops a vampire from killing a woman in a park. At the Raven, he tells Janette that vampires are killing at random, but she is unconcerned and says that she can't hold back the tide. She worries that they will slowly die of starvation once the humans are gone.

With all the suicides coming into the morgue, Natalie starts to think that Dr. Carter had the right idea. Then it occurs to her that she doesn't have to die.

Nick visits Dr. Ellis, whose husband is in the real estate investment business and is away most of the time. Ellis tells Nick that she didn't know Carter very well.

Natalie asks Nick to bring her across to at least give her a chance to survive, but Nick refuses to inflict an eternity of darkness on her. Natalie is hurt and angry, and she walks out.

LaCroix visits Nick and laments about the lack of companionship that he will suffer. The "young ones" like Nick are fortunate. Most of them will eventually starve and die. LaCroix will grieve when that day comes. But the ancient immortals will linger for some time afterwards. LaCroix has been delivered from death to a more permanent hell. In a flashback, Divia asks LaCroix about his army's exploits and says that she must get her vicious streak from him. She also tells him that she will live forever. Mt. Vesuvius is erupting, and Pompeii is being destroyed. Divia tells LaCroix to choose between life and death. He chooses life, and she brings him across.

Dr. Ellis cries while watching a news report about the widespread panic and destruction.

Natalie parties at the Raven. She is drunk and has taken up smoking. Janette advises her that it is not a very good place for a mortal to act like she doesn't care what happens to her.

The army has taken over the police station, and Cohen goes home. Schanke says that some people are making money on the commodities market since the rumor surfaced that you could ride out the end of the world by staying underground for twenty or thirty years. At least real estate would be cheap when you came back up.

At the Raven, Natalie meets Spark, the vampire from the park, and says that he can have her if he brings her across. The bartender, Brianna, asks Janette where her mortal friend is, and Janette answers that Natalie is lying down in the back, then defensively adds, "She's not my friend." As Natalie is about to be bitten, she becomes frightened and changes her mind. Spark hypnotically suggests that she take him home.

Nick and Schanke arrive at Dr. Ellis's home with a search warrant. Nick finds it odd that Ellis said that she never thought Carter would commit suicide, then later said that she didn't know Carter very well. They confront her with the fact that when news of the asteroid leaked out, Ellis's husband did not come home. Instead, he stayed in New York, where his investment company bought securities and currency at a fraction of their value. If the market recovers, they stand to make millions. Ellis admits that the asteroid is not going to hit.

Scientists confirm that the asteroid will not hit. Ellis had mislead them by one arc second.

Upon discovering that Natalie is gone, Janette calls Nick.

Pretending to be hypnotized, Natalie brings Spark to her apartment. Once inside, she grabs a candlestick and hits him over the head. She then runs and locks herself in the bedroom, but he comes up behind her. Nick crashes through the window just as Natalie is about to be bitten. The two vampires battle, completely trashing the room in the process. Spark grabs a piece of wood and lunges at Nick, but Nick flips him over, grabs the wood, and stakes Spark through the heart.

The next night, Natalie arrives at the precinct, which is filled with balloons, and finds the cops celebrating with donuts. Nick asks if she slept well. She seems angry and distant and asks when he left. He tells her that he stayed as long as he could. She thought that he would close the curtains and spend the day, but he didn't think that she wanted him to. She replies that she doesn't know what she wants. She says that he was right not to bring her across, then leaves, saying that she has a lot of work to do.

"The Nightcrawler" repeats what Divia had told him: "Life will always find a way to cheat death." He adds that life is the enemy we cannot defeat. We cling to it like a parasite, hoping not to be noticed and brushed away with a flick of the hand. In a flashback, LaCroix and Divia stand in the ruins of Pompeii, and she tells him that they are truly eternal. Behind his microphone, LaCroix holds his daughter's cameo necklace and mutters, "You were right, Divia. Damn you for it."

♪♪("Suite from A MORE PERMANENT HELL" is on the *Forever Knight Soundtrack.*)

**BLOOD MONEY**
written by Jason Brett
directed by Geraint Wyn Davies

**Guest Cast**
Gordon Currie as "Sean Du Champs"
Bernard Behrens as "Charles Du Champs"
Andrew Gillies as "Feliks Twist"
with
Gary Robbins ..... Doorman
Robert Thomas ..... Henchman No. I
Ellen-Ray Hennessy ..... Jenkins
Ron Van Hart .....Henchman No. 2

**Synopsis**

Sean Du Champs has gotten himself into financial trouble and asks his father, Charles Du Champs, for a loan of one million dollars. His father says that Sean is a disgrace and a threat to the family business, Maison Du Champs, a 350-year old investment firm. Charles says that Sean needs help. Later, while Sean parties in a nightclub, his father is killed when he starts his car and it explodes.

Schanke has a vision of the winning lottery numbers, but Nick won't lend him a dollar for a ticket. They arrive at the scene of the car bomb, and when Nick realizes who it is that has been killed, he flashes back to a chess game with Charles Du Champs. Charles handles the Nicholas de Brabant Foundation, which contains Nick's fortune of $478 million. Nick has made charitable contributions of $40 million in one year, and Charles says that it's difficult to keep philanthropy of that magnitude anonymous. He has known Nick for nearly half a century, and although he knows him to be a man of honor, he senses that there is some dark secret behind his fortune. Nick seems to regard his money as a curse, as if it were tainted somehow.

Sean is drunk and gambling heavily at a nightclub called Paparazzi. The manager, Julius Walkin, says that Sean has exceeded his limit. Nick and Schanke pick Sean up and bring him to the morgue to identify his father's body. Schanke gets the feeling that Sean is more concerned about the family business than finding out who killed his father.

Schanke tells Cohen that he believes Sean killed his father in order to get his hands on the company's funds. It's a classic case of blood money. In a flashback, Nick and a mortal cohort show LaCroix and Janette a chest filled with gold coins. It is literally a king's ransom. The dauphin had staged his own abduction, but hadn't counted on his accomplices being even greedier than he. Nick and the other man killed the dauphin, and they claim that he deserved it for swindling his father, the king, like that. Nick escalates the treachery even further, however, and draws his sword on his fellow thief. Although LaCroix warns him that blood money brings only misfortune, Nick battles his accomplice and ends up taking a sword in the heart. Nick thinks that Sean is too smart to have killed his father in such an obvious attempt to get his hands on the money. Cohen says that they are going to turn the foundation upside down, one account at a time. At home, Nick burns his records of the Nicholas de Brabant Foundation.

Schanke tries unsuccessfully to get his fellow officers to go in with him on a lottery ticket. Cohen calls him into her office and reprimands him for soliciting gambling. Nick arrives and informs Schanke and Cohen that the bomb was detonated by a remote control for a garage door opener. It sounds like the work of an ex-convict, "Plastique Pulchuk," and Nick is working with the Ministry of Corrections to obtain Pulchuk's address.

In the offices of Maison Du Champs, Sean electronically transfers some funds.

Nick visits a fellow vampire, Feliks Twist. Feliks is an avid gardener and delights in his indoor greenhouse. As long as he avoids the rays from the sunlamps, both he and the plants are happy. Feliks has been a financial advisor to Nick and helped him set up his foundation account so that it was kept separate from the rest of Maison Du Champs's business. The assets were supposed to automatically transfer to a Swiss bank account in the event of Charles Du Champs's death. Feliks tries to access Nick's account on his computer, but finds that it has been cleaned out.

In his car, Nick listens to "The Nightcrawler" expounding on the evils of greed. In a flashback, Nick's fellow thief has just pierced Nick's heart with a sword. Nick changes to the vampire state and kills him. LaCroix warns Nick that greed brings tragedy. Schanke calls to say that Pulchuk is staying at the Summerton

Arms Motel. Nick says that he'll meet Schanke there, but has to make a stop first. Nick goes to Paparrazi and listens outside the private office as Sean attempts to pay off his gambling debt. Instead, Walkin wants to be Sean's partner and share half of the foundation's money. Walkin says that Sean is responsible for his father's death, but Sean denies having anything to do with it. Nick is waiting in Sean's car when Sean comes outside. Nick asks what happened to the de Brabant Foundation, but Sean resists Nick's attempts at hypnotism and insists that information concerning clients is confidential.

Schanke is in the parking lot of the Summerton Arms Motel when there is suddenly a huge explosion in the building. He is slightly injured, requiring three stitches in his hand.

The detectives learn that a pager registered to Sean Du Champs was used as the detonation device. Sean tells them that his pager was probably stolen. When they ask about a remote control for his garage door opener, he says that he lost his a couple of weeks ago and hasn't had time to replace it. He claims that he didn't know that his pager was stolen because he hadn't used it in a few years. Nick produces a list from the phone company linking Sean's pager with the phone numbers of known drug dealers.

Nick tells Schanke and Cohen that he thinks Sean is being set up. He was with him at the time of the explosion, so he knows that Sean couldn't have dialed the number that set off the bomb. Nick believes that Charles's murder was meant to be a message for Sean to pay up and that Pulchuk's murder was meant to eliminate a witness and tighten the screws.

Outside Maison Du Champs, Nick and Schanke observe Sean being forced into a car. They follow the car to Paparazzi.

In Walkin's office, a man named Foster is bound and gagged. Foster built the bomb that killed Pulchuk, who built the bomb that killed Charles. Depending on whether or not Sean gives Walkin half of the foundation's money, Walkin will either dispose of Foster in a manner that will clear Sean of suspicion, or use Foster to frame Sean for a third murder. Nick and Schanke hear everything from outside the office. Schanke hates it when Nick is right. Peering through a window, Nick's supernatural vision allows him to see the code that Sean keys into the computer to make the transfer. In a flashback, LaCroix urges Nick to leave the money behind and says that material wealth is a burden. Nick just scoffs. Once the transaction is complete, Walkin shoots Foster. He intends to kill Sean, as well, and make it look like a suicide. Schanke tries the doors to the club, while Nick enters via the roof, setting off an alarm. While Walkin's two henchmen go to hunt down the intruder, Sean slips away from Walkin and runs through the club. While Nick disarms the henchmen, Sean sneaks back into Walkin's office and tries to reverse the transfer. Walkin catches him and holds a gun on him. Sean bargains for his life and offers to let Walkin have the entire $478 million. Nick and Schanke burst in just as Walkin is about to shoot Sean. Walkin turns the gun on the detectives, and they shoot him.

Back at the precinct, Schanke learns that two other officers, Melvoid and Lange, have won the lottery. Schanke grabs his chest and claims to be having a heart attack.

At the Raven, Nick tells Janette that he gave Feliks the new access codes and that the assets are now parked in a bank in Luxembourg. Nick felt it was important to get the ill-gotten money back, so that it could continue to be put to good use. Janette says that Nick now has his burden back. She drinks a toast to his burden and to what she might do to ease it for him. She takes a sip of blood, and they kiss.

# EPISODE GUIDE

# THIRD SEASON

**BLACK BUDDHA - PART 1**
written by James D. Parriott
directed by Geraint Wyn Davies

**Guest Cast**
Tamara Gorski as "ClaireGibson"
Stuart Hughes as "Vudu"
with

Gillian Vanderburgh ..... Karen
Justin Allder ..... Hawkeye
Karen Waddell ..... Miller
Ola Sturik ..... Newscaster
Thomas Mitchell ..... Mountie
Damon D'Oliveira ..... Inca

**Synopsis**

A man makes some modifications to a music box. Later, after making love to an airline copilot, he gives her the gift-wrapped box with instructions not to open it until she is airborne.

April, 1912 - The Titanic is sinking. A beautiful woman tells Nick that it's her fault because of the Buddha. She says she deserves to die. Nick protests, but finally bites her neck.

Nick wakes up in a blood sweat, then goes down to the fridge for a bottle of blood. A TV newscaster reports that Dollard, who was arrested in Toronto last week, is being moved to Alberta in connection with a deadly courthouse bombing in Edmonton. Schanke calls to ask Nick to check in on his family while he and Cohen are away for a week escorting Dollard to Alberta.

In the morgue, Nick is frustrated that he hasn't been cured of his vampirism yet. Natalie tells him to be patient. He has made some progress in four years - he can now cat raw hamburger.

Joe Reese fills in for Cohen and assigns a rookie detective, Tracy Vetter, to work with Nick while Schanke is gone. In hopes of landing a permanent promotion, Reese is determined to stay on the good side of Tracy's father, Police Commissioner Vetter, by keeping Tracy safe. Tracy has dozed off while waiting for Nick and Reese. She apologizes and says she's more of a day person.

In the car, Tracy tells Nick that she wants to be judged on her own merits, not on her father's position. She asks why Nick didn't go to Alberta, since he is the one who actually made the collar. He says that he hates to fly. The man who tinkered with the music box presses a button on a mobile phone, and in the plane's cockpit, music plays from inside the gift-wrapped package. The copilot unwraps it and admires her gift. Suddenly, the plane explodes and plummets to the ground. Driving nearby, Nick and Tracy witness the explosion and rush to the scene. Nick's strength amazes Tracy as he tosses aside pieces of the plane to rescue a baby. Nick sifts through the burning wreckage and nearly collapses when he realizes that this was Schanke's plane.

Reese tells the grief-stricken Nick that we're all going to die. It's inevitable. Nick sincerely hopes he's right. In a flashback, Nicholas de Brabant meets Claire Gibson on the Titanic. She is fascinated by danger and the occult, and she has deduced that he is a vampire. With her fingernail, she pierces her wrist and offers it to him. He drinks hungrily, then she asks for his help. She shows him a small, black Buddha, for which she paid two million dollars. A curse states that if it is removed from the temple, destruction and death will follow it, which is why she is traveling on the safest ship afloat. The Buddha has the power to grant one wish. Previous owners, including Napoleon, have all had one spectacular dream come true. The Hong Kong opium lord who sold it to Claire had a severely crippled daughter who now walks perfectly. Nick must have a wish, and she offers him the Buddha in exchange for immortality. Suddenly, the ship is jolted.

Tracy and Reese walk through the wreckage, past the bodies of the crash victims. Tracy sees one of the victims open his eyes and calls Reese over, but he finds that the man is stone cold and has no pulse. He closes the man's eyes. As they walk away, the man opens his eyes again and runs away. Out of the comer of her eye, Tracy catches a glimpse of something moving.

Nick pays his respects to Myra. On the radio, "The Nightcrawler" asks who suffers more, those who die, or those who are left behind. At home, Nick examines the Buddha while "The Nightcrawler" asks if it is grief that weighs so heavily, or guilt.

All the bodies have been moved to a warehouse. It's a "closed investigation," but Tracy uses a Police Commission ID to gain entry. She is concerned because no one has yet claimed the baby - the sole survivor.

Nick hypnotizes a guard and gets in, also. The victims have all been identified, but three are missing: two woman, who were seated over the wing and were probably incinerated, and a man in his twenties, named Valdez. Again, Tracy sees something move out of the corner of her eye. When the others have gone, she goes back and discovers a man rummaging through a body bag. She tells him to turn around with his hands where she can see them. He complies, and she sees that his right arm ends in a bloody stump at the wrist. In his left hand, he holds his severed right hand, which he lost in the crash and has come to reclaim. Tracy faints.

Nick shows Natalie the Buddha, which is believed to be in the ship's safe at the bottom of the ocean. He blames himself for Schanke's death. Nick believes that the plane was bombed by an accomplice of Dollard's who didn't want Dollard to talk. If Nick hadn't arrested Dollard, all those people would still be alive. In a flashback, Claire tells Nick that the ship is sinking because of the curse. The Buddha does grant wishes, such as Napoleon's becoming emperor, but who can deny his Waterloo? Claire no longer wants to live forever, with so many deaths on her head.

Tracy revives in the passenger seat of her car. The crash victim, Javier Vachon, is driving. His hand is now reattached. He teases her about her car, saying it looks like something her parents would drive. She tells him to drive to the precinct at Queen and Spadina, but he plans to get some new clothes, clean up, and make her forget ever seeing him. She resists the hypnotism, however.

Nick visits the renovated Raven and asks for Janette. The bartender has never heard of her. LaCroix informs Nick that Janette left a month ago and sold the Raven to him. He does his radio broadcasts from a booth in the back. LaCroix says that he doesn't know where Janette is. That was the way she wanted it. She'd been in town for twenty years, and when she decided that it was time to move on, she felt that it would be easier to leave without saying good-bye. LaCroix assures Nick that their paths will cross again. They always do. LaCroix suggests that it might be time for Nick to move on, as well, considering the recent losses that he's suffered.

After showering at Tracy's apartment, Vachon insists that "J. D. Valdez" died in the crash. He's running from some kind of trouble, but says that Tracy can't help. When he kisses her good-bye, she doesn't see that his eyes are glowing.

Nick hears the music box on the tape from the cockpit recorder, but the newly promoted Captain Reese says it's out of their jurisdiction. Nick cleans out Schanke's desk and comes across Schanke's bowling team photo and their "Partners of the Month" award. Meanwhile, the bomber wraps a box of candy, then sends it to Reese with a congratulatory note "from the commissioner." Reese admits that he sucks up, but says that's how you get ahead. Nick can't handle all the changes. He hands Reese a letter of resignation and tosses him his badge.

Tracy finds that the last known address of "Valdez" is a condemned church.

Natalie visits Nick and finds him playing his piano. The rest of his furniture is covered by sheets, and boxes are stacked on the floor. She is hurt and angry that he was going to leave without saying good-bye. She expected more from him.

While Tracy is checking out the church, a man grabs her by the throat and asks, in Spanish, "Where is he?" When she shoots him, his eyes glow, and he rises into the air, taking her with him.

Reese calls Nick to ask if the name "J. D. Valdez" rings a bell. As they talk, the bomber uses his mobile phone to set off an explosion at the 23rd precinct, about two blocks from Nick's home. With another press of a button, Reese's box of candy starts playing music. Elsewhere in the city, yet another bomb goes off. Nick tells Reese not to touch the box, but he's already got his hand on a piece of candy. Nick tells him not to move his hand and to vacate the building and call the bomb squad. When Nick arrives, Reese asks how he got there so fast. Nick says he flew. Nick insists on trading places with Reese, who has a wife and two kids, and uses hypnotism to convince him to get out. Natalie tries to run in after Nick, but Reese pulls her away. Once everyone is out, Nick lets go of the candy and dives out a window as the bomb explodes. At the church, Tracy is about to be bitten when Vachon crashes through a window and knocks the other vampire away. Vachon wishes he could make her forget what she has seen, but knows he can't. At the precinct, Nick emerges from the smoke and dust, and Natalie runs to embrace him.

Nick has unpacked and has decided to throw the Buddha into the ocean. The newscaster announces that the baby's father has been located. He works on a remote oil rig and has only just learned of the crash. Nick says that should make Tracy happy. On the roof of the church, Vachon carries the unconscious Tracy in his arms. Suddenly, he takes to the air.

**BLACK BUDDHA - PART II**
written by James D. Parriott
directed by Geraint Wyn Davies

**Guest Cast**
Stuart Hughes as "Vudu"
with

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| Ola Sturik | Newscaster | Karen Waddell | Miller |
| Greg Kramer | Screed | Damon D'Oliveira | Inca |
| Joanna Bacalso | Angel | Kristin Lehman | Urs |
| Emmanuelle Ghriqui | Jude Deshnell | | |

**Synopsis**

Reese is concerned because Tracy hasn't been heard from since she went looking for "Valdez" at the church. The police have discovered that the bombs are being set off by music box mechanisms, which are radio-activated by a mobile phone. There have been similar cases. In Seattle, the bombs were aimed at firefighters; in Montreal, it was postal workers; in Edmonton, it was city officials; and now, it's cops. The bomber is nicknamed "Vudu" because of the tune that the music boxes play: "That Old Black Magic." Reese can't understand mass murderers. With single homicides, at least there is usually a motive, such as jealousy. Nick is sure the bomber must have some reason. It can't just be voodoo.

Vachon has brought Tracy, bound and gagged, to the lair of his friend, Screed. In between biting rats, Screed suggests that since Vachon can't "whammy" Tracy into forgetting what she has seen, he should kill her. Vachon reacts violently to the suggestion, grabs Screed roughly, and lifts him into the air. When asked why he can't keep her at the church, Vachon replies, "The Inca."

Nick goes to the church and is attacked by the Inca, the vampire who attacked Tracy. Nick quickly gains the upper hand.

Screed leaves, and Vachon removes Tracy's gag. She angrily orders him to get her out of the rat-infested hell hole. He tries to calm her by saying that, although he wanted to, he hasn't bitten her.

The Inca explains to Nick that he was a soldier of the "people of the sun" and was killed by Vachon in 1531. Vachon tells Tracy about when he, as a soldier, was running a message about an ambush to an artillery placement. The Inca's and Vachon's stories converge. They battled each other for hours, and as night fell, they delivered fatal blows to each other. As they were dying, a beautiful vampire came to them and brought them both across. She told them that she wanted them to stop senseless killing in the world. She then walked towards the rising sun and perished.

While gathering rats in the city's tunnels, Screed discovers one of the blue boxes that Vudu has left down there. He believes it to be a cellular transponder.

Nick visits the Raven and asks if LaCroix knows Vachon. LaCroix directs Nick to a dancer, Urs, who has been running with Vachon's crew for the last couple of centuries. Urs tells Nick that Vachon has left. She says he's always running.

Vachon tells Tracy that when he woke up the next night after becoming a vampire, he tried to kill the Inca, but failed. He's been running from him ever since. Tracy says the Inca just wants Vachon to do what they were ordered to do, and she doesn't think she likes him anymore.

Nick tells Urs that Vachon has one of his friends. He asks her to help him find Vachon before he runs away again.

Screed returns home, carrying the blue box, and finds Nick holding Vachon by the throat. Vachon swears that he let Tracy go. Nick says that since Tracy knows the truth about Vachon and Screed, she is now Vachon's responsibility. The others will kill her if they find out. Nick asks if Vachon will live up to his responsibility and says that eternity is a long time to keep running.

Tracy returns to the precinct and says that she was with an informant who saw a woman on the cockpit crew carry a wrapped present onto the plane, and it was never checked by security. She has checked and learned that the copilot was Karen Tomlinson. Tracy then cries to Natalie because something wonderful happened to her, but turned out to be so disappointing.

Nick explains to Natalie about Tracy and Vachon. He is still searching for a motive because he wants to know why Schanke, Cohen, and all the other victims died.

Karen's sister tells the police that Karen was seeing a guy she called "Toronto Jerry."

Tracy tells Nick that she has gotten all she can from her informant, and she refers to him as a "dead end." She laughs at her private joke and says that Nick wouldn't understand.

Vachon tells Urs that he is leaving. She says the Inca will just find him again.

There had been three bombs in Seattle, three in Montreal, and four in Edmonton. Tracy suggests that Dollard acted alone when he blew up the courthouse as a political statement. If Vudu had a three-bomb ritual, he might have killed Dollard on the plane in retaliation for ruining his pattern. The pattern has been three bombings, each bigger than the last, all within a week. So far, there has been one bomb on the plane and ten bombs set off in police stations. It was been five days since the plane went down, which means that there will be a massive bombing within the next forty-eight hours.

Vudu wraps another music box and puts in a shopping bag.

Morning arrives, and Tracy stops at a coffee shop on her way home. Vudu bumps into her and introduces himself as Gary Reynolds.

Nick searches for a pattern and finds that Vudu attacks institutions of authority, often using women on the inside as carriers.

On her way into work the next night, Tracy runs into Gary again. They dine together at the coffee shop, while Vachon watches from outside. Gary leaves, and Tracy realizes that he has left a shopping bag behind. Tracy is in a much better mood when she returns to the precinct carrying the shopping bag. She tells Natalie that an incredible thing happened, then amends "incredible" to "normal" and says that she met a nice guy who is an underground engineer for the city. The Inca arrives at the station saying that he wants to help catch the bomber. Tracy talks to him.

A swap meet dealer has brought in the blue box that he bought from a homeless man who found it on a sewer pipe and thought it was a cellular phone transponder. It's actually a bomb. Knowing the amount of Semtex that was stolen from an Alberta mining company last July, the police estimate that Vudu can make sixty such bombs, each one capable of leveling a city block. Reese orders an evacuation of downtown. Nick leaves to talk to the homeless man and allows the Inca come along. Tracy says she knows an underground city engineer and gives Gary a call. He is buying an airline ticket, with Vachon watching, when his cellular phone rings. Vachon listens as Gary tells Tracy that he has seen several of the boxes, but thought they were the new gas monitors. They agree to meet at St. Patrick's Station, where the boxes are underground in the heating tunnel. He asks if she has his shopping bag and requests that she bring it with her.

Screed agrees to help Nick find as many bombs as possible for "two bills apiece."

Vudu is getting a cab to the airport when Vachon confronts him and asks if he isn't supposed to be meeting Tracy. Vudu takes off running, and Vachon is cut off from him by traffic. Meanwhile, Nick, Screed, and the Inca begin collecting bombs in the tunnels.

Vudu observes St. Patrick's Station, and when Tracy arrives, he pushes a button on his phone. Music starts playing from inside the shopping bag. Vachon attacks Vudu, gets shot twice, and falls to the ground. Realizing that she is holding a bomb, Tracy calls Reese, who relays the information to Nick. Nick tells Screed to keep searching for bombs, upping the bounty to $500 apiece, while he goes to help Tracy. Vudu approaches Tracy and tells her that the bomb has a range of ten miles and a five-minute mainspring, and there is no way to disarm it. Vachon approaches, gets shot four more times, and is biting Vudu on the neck when Nick arrives, followed by the Inca. The music is starting to wind down, so the Inca takes the box and flies into the air with it. Nick asks Vudu why he did it, but he just sings some lyrics from "That Old Black Magic," then dies. The bomb explodes in the sky. With Tracy watching, Vachon pretends to hypnotize Nick into forgetting what he has seen.

Tracy visits Vachon in Screed's lair and says that she is glad he's staying. He's glad, too.

At Schanke's grave, Nick rests their "Partners of the Month" award against the tombstone. He still wishes there had been a reason. Natalie asks if it would have helped or made any difference if there had been one. He admits that it would not. Natalie says all they can do is chalk Schanke's and Cohen's deaths up to voodoo.

**OUTSIDE THE LINES**
written by Ron Sallows
directed by Jon Cassar

**Guest Cast**
Callum Keith Rennie as "Bruce"
with

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| Michael Filipowich | Stu | Mitra Lovett | Cass |
| Brad Austin | J.T. | Jeff Wood | Greg |
| Jacques Tourangeau | Claude | Tom Costain | Leo |
| M. J. Lefebvre | Marie-Claire | Simon Barry | Giroux |
| Gabrielle Allan | Vicki | Chantal Quesnel | Debbie |
| Starvoula Logothettis | Anne Meyers | | |

**Synopsis**

A group of young people are gathered to "do business" in a back room of a nightclub. Two of the guys, J.T. and Greg, almost get into a knife fight over a girl, Cass Purcell, but another of the young men, Bruce Spencer, stops them. The group leaves the room to watch two girls fighting on the dance floor. They return to find that Cass has been raped and murdered, with her throat cut.

When Nick and Tracy arrive to investigate, Tracy spots Bruce and recognizes him. Bruce has known Tracy for more than eighteen years and calls her "Button." He is an undercover cop who has been tracking this group of drug dealers for seven months. Although he is sure that J.T. Garry raped and killed Cass because she kept refusing his advances, he can offer no evidence. He and Nick argue about proper police procedure.

Reese tells Nick that Bruce has a great arrest record, but has had many charges brought against him. Commissioner Vetter has been helping Bruce by "cleaning up" his official records since he was a rookie. Nick reports that Bruce offered no evidence, but "just knows" that J.T killed the 23-year old Cass.

In a flashback, Nick is working with the French Resistance during World War II. One of the members of the group, Leo, returns to their secret headquarters, having been shot, and reports that the others he was with are all dead. They had walked into a Gestapo trap. Leo dies, and Nick realizes that there is a traitor among them.

Natalie reports that Cass was ten weeks pregnant, and according to Cass's gynecologist, the father was J.T. Garry.

Nick and Tracy arrive at J.T.'s apartment building, and Nick hears Bruce on the roof asking J.T. why he killed Cass. J.T. denies it. Nick tells Tracy to take the elevator while he takes the fire escape. He flies up and witnesses Bruce throwing J.T. off the roof. When Tracy arrives, Bruce, who hasn't seen Nick yet, tells her that J.T. ran when he cuffed him. Bruce acts very distraught that J.T. fell do his death. He claims that he tried to save him.

Natalie has done some blood tests and reports that John Thomas (J.T.) Garry could be the father of Cass's baby, but he is not the man who raped her. She has also determined that the killer is left-handed, and she wouldn't be surprised if he's done this before. Nick adds that he's likely to do it again. Natalie hopes they have a plan to bring him down fast.

In a flashback, Nick and Claude, the leader of the group, discuss who knew their plans and who may have betrayed them. De la Salle hates the Germans and would never have betrayed the group. Marie-Claire was Leo's sister. Giroux was always in trouble before the war. He was a thief and a liar. They decide it must be him, and they plan to avenge Leo's death.

Nick tells Reese that he doesn't believe Bruce's story, but he can't prove anything.

Nick surprises Bruce while he is on a pay phone reassuring another of the drug dealers, Stu, that business will continue without J.T. Bruce suggests that Nick and Tracy might want to back him up on the drug bust and share in the credit. Nick walks away without answering.

Nick and Tracy argue about Bruce. She grew up with him and believes that he is a good cop. She tells Nick that just because Bruce was wrong about J.T. being the rapist, that doesn't mean that Nick should question everything he does. Nick tells her that there have been reports of Bruce using excessive force and that her father has been covering for him. Tracy gets very upset and says that Nick doesn't know what it's like to doubt someone you've trusted all your life.

In a flashback, Nick guards Giroux, who has been beaten and is tied to a chair. Giroux vehemently denies being a traitor. Marie-Claire enters and offers Nick a bottle of wine. When his back is turned, she clubs him with the bottle, knocking him to the floor. She lunges at Giroux with a knife, but he has gotten himself untied. He grabs the knife and holds it to her throat. Nick gets up. Giroux again denies being a traitor and says that he will be butchered for nothing. He tosses Marie-Claire aside. Nick changes to the vampire state, then grabs Giroux and breaks his neck.

Bruce asks Tracy to get Nick off his back, claiming that Nick is trying to set him up for something. Tracy defends Nick and says that he's just investigating a murder, but she agrees to talk to him.

Bruce breaks into the apartment of a young woman named Vicki. He grabs her roughly and throws her onto the couch. He wants to confirm a drug shipment that is coming in, but she denies any knowledge of it. He is about to hit her when Tracy comes up behind him with a gun and says, "Don't even think about it." Vicki doesn't want to press charges, but Tracy gives her a card and says to call if she changes her mind. Outside, Tracy tells Bruce that she followed him to prove that what everyone said about him was wrong, but it turned out to be true.

Natalie has found substantial amounts of strychnine in the semen sample from Cass's body.

Nick explains to Tracy that some heavy users cut their drugs with strychnine. It makes their hearts race and gives them a bigger, faster rush. The killer obviously has a history of drug abuse, as well as violence during sex, which means he probably sees prostitutes. Nick and Tracy split up on the street to question prostitutes. Bruce talks to Tracy in an alley and says he'll try things her way, with less violence. She tells him that they have learned that the killer is a heavy user who cuts his drugs with strychnine. He wishes her good luck with the case, then leaves. Nick questions a prostitute about customers who are into violence, and she suggests that he talk to a couple of ladies at the Pink Towers. Tracy hopes it leads to the right guy this time.

In a flashback, Claude tells Nick that with Giroux dead, they should be safe for awhile. From the street, Nick sees the door of the Nazi headquarters open, revealing Marie-Claire passionately kissing a Nazi. When she leaves, Nick flies up, grabs the Nazi, and bites his neck. Marie-Claire then walks back in a trance, followed by LaCroix. Nick tells LaCroix to hand her over because she is the traitor. LaCroix points out that that means Nick killed an innocent man - Giroux. He accuses Nick of having a double standard about killing and says that he is playing at omniscience. At a gesture from LaCroix, Marie-Claire goes to Nick, who bites her neck, killing her. LaCroix then suggests that it would be an effective strategy to use sexual favors to elicit trust in one's enemy, in order to learn his secrets and destroy him. Nick realizes that Marie-Claire may not have been a traitor, after all. LaCroix says they'll never know, then smiles and flies off.

The first woman, Lisa Kischner, is not home. Nick and Tracy will visit Anne Caprios next.

Bruce arrives at Anne's apartment. He grabs her by the neck and demands, "Where is he?" Anne claims that she doesn't know. Just then, Stu comes out of the bedroom. Bruce releases Anne and pulls his gun on Stu, accusing him of killing Cass and saying that now he is going to die. Stu swears it was an accident. When Anne moves to get off the couch, Bruce turns his head and looks in her direction, giving Stu the opportunity to grab a small statue and bring it down on Bruce's head, knocking him out. Stu takes out a knife, and when Anne protests that he is about to kill Bruce, he pins Anne up against a wall and holds the blade at her throat. When Tracy bursts in, Stu grabs her gun and holds the knife to her throat. Nick enters with his gun drawn, but he holsters it, trying to defuse the situation, and tells Stu to put the knife away. Tracy grabs Stu's arm and spins him so that she is holding his arm behind his back. Nick grabs Stu from Tracy and shoves him to the floor. Bruce comes over and holds his gun against Stu's forehead. Stu begs Nick and Tracy not to let Bruce kill him, and Tracy tells Bruce not to do it. Bruce hesitates, then tells Stu to get up. He arrests him for the murder of Cass Purcell.

At the precinct, Tracy tells Bruce that Vicki cooperated with the police, and the drug raid went perfectly. Bruce is being charged with the murder of J.T. Garry. He says he should have killed Stu, too. He tells her that although what he does may be outside the law, it's justice. Tracy disagrees and says, "No. It's murder."

**BLACKWING**
written by Gillian Horvath
directed by Allan Kroeker

**Guest Cast**
Denis LaCroix as "Jess"
Michelle Thrust as "Marian"
with

Jack Burning ..... Gary Blackwing
Paula Barrett ..... Reporter
Peter Kelly Gaudreault ..... Mark Buckwater
Colm Magner ..... Security Guard
Glen Gould ..... Young Gary
Victoria Mitchell ..... Judge Beatrice Payne
Jim York ..... Roger Bland

**Synopsis**

While Gary Blackwing sits and chants, his granddaughter, Marian, dreams of walking in the woods and meeting a younger version of her grandfather. When Blackwing's throat is cut, the same thing happens to the grandfather in Marian's dream, although she cannot see the killer.

Tracy watches TV coverage of a demonstration at a site just north of Toronto, where Robinson Development plans to build the world's largest shopping mall. In an interview, Vachon supports the Mississauga Indian's claim to the land and their right to be partners in the project.

Nick and Tracy investigate the murder of Gary Blackwing, who was the Mississauga Indian's main advocate in the land dispute. Natalie notices that a raven-handled, obsidian knife is missing from a matched set. Tracy, who earned a merit badge in Native American Cultures as a Girl Guide in the sixth grade, tells them that the raven is a power animal of the medicine man. When Nick touches the remaining knife, he gets an electric shock, which he passes off as a static charge. He eyes the knife warily as Natalie bags the evidence for him. Obsidian is brittle, so if the missing knife is the murder weapon, it should have left some shards in the wound. Blackwing's friend, Jess Nevins, who found the body, tells the detectives that Blackwing had the original surveyor's letter proving that the Mississauga Indians own the land. No one else knows where the letter is. Blackwing's granddaughter, Marian, arrives. When Nick touches her, she flashes on various episodes in his life as a vampire, as well as on the vision she had of her grandfather's death. Marian tells Jess that she saw her grandfather's murder on the spirit walk.

At the precinct, Marian tells the detectives that in her dream, her grandfather tried to give her his warrior's lance, the symbol of his power. As they are leaving the station, Marian tells Jess that Nick is surrounded by darkness. She senses that there is a light trying to break free of the darkness, but it can't. Jess tells her that she has the power to heal, and she can take the darkness away. When Nick says good-bye to them, Marian touches him and flashes again on his life as a vampire. She is frightened and backs away. Jess tells Nick that Marian sees a darkness that is strangling his spirit, then asks if Nick is married.

While driving in his car, Nick gets a vision of Marian walking in the woods. Asleep at home, Marian is having the same dream. When Nick approaches Marian in the dream, she wakes up with a start to find that Nick is in her bedroom. Neither one understands what is happening to them, but Nick proposes that they help each other. They touch each other gently. Suddenly, Nick and Marian are standing in the woods, in the sunlight, and Marian tells Nick that it can't harm him. She cuts both their arms with an obsidian knife. They link arms, their blood mingles, and they kiss passionately. Later, Nick gets dressed and kisses Marian, who is still asleep in the bed.

At home, Nick calls Natalie and tells her how much better he feels. It's like he's been freed and the past has been erased. Natalie is skeptical of Marian's healing powers and tells Nick that his condition is not a metaphysical disorder. When he sticks his hand into a shaft of sunlight coming through a window, it smokes and bums.

The Indians are given until 9:00 a.m. Friday to prove their claim to the land.

Natalie visits Nick, and he tells her that for the first time in his life, he does not feel guilty. She doesn't want to burst his "morning-after bubble," but feels that he is just experiencing the placebo effect. He feels better because he wants to. He is still a vampire, but Nick says that he no longer feels like one, and maybe that's progress enough.

At Blackwing's home, Marian finds Tracy admiring one of her paintings. Marian felt that her grandfather disapproved when she left the reservation and earned her Master's Degree in Fine Arts. She would like to finish her grandfather's work, but isn't sure how. Tracy understands about destiny. She comes from a family of cops, so in college she tried pre-med, pre-law, and computers before realizing that we're meant to do what we're meant to do. And she is a good cop.

Vachon tells Tracy that he knows the Indian's claim is valid because he saw the surveyor's letter two hundred years ago. He fought in the French and Indian Wars on and off for seventy-five years. During Queen Anne's campaign, he fought on whichever side was losing. He fought with the Iroquois against the French and with the Ojibwas against the English. In fact, one of the signatures on the treaty negotiated between the Mississauga Indians and the Upper Canadian government is his.

In a dream, Nick meets Marian again in the woods. They kiss, then Marian asks Nick to help the Indians. He sees blood on his hands, then sees a man whose throat has been cut. He wakes up in a blood sweat. His digital clock reads: "8:28."

Robinson's lawyer, Timothy Wade, is found murdered in his car. His throat has been cut. Nick and Tracy investigate, and it's the same man that Nick saw in his dream. The time of death was 8:00 p.m., give or take 30 minutes.

Natalie has found flakes of obsidian in the wounds of both murder victims.

In his car, Nick listens to "The Nightcrawler" telling the Native American legend of the raven. Nick suddenly gets a vision of Marian pointing her finger at him in the woods. He slams on the brakes, then blacks out. While he and Marian face each other in the spirit plane, a gloved hand uses an obsidian knife to kill Roger Bland of Robinson Development in his bed. Nick wakes up with a start to hear the dispatcher calling him.

At Marian's house, Nick encounters Jess, who is also looking for Marian and who fears that she's in trouble. Jess says that Nick has forged a powerful bond with Marian and shares her gift now. He says that Nick can always find her in the spirit plane and that the spirits will guide him to her. Jess adds a request, in case Nick sees Gary Blackwing in the spirit plane. He asks Nick to tell Blackwing that Jess misses him and loves him like a brother - but that he still owes Jess money.

Nick visits Natalie in the morgue and is told that everyone has been looking for him. She tells him that there's been another killing. He knows. In fact, he thinks he did it. Marian took away his guilt, which was the very thing that kept the vampire in check, and now he kills without remorse. He tells Natalie that when he was in the spirit plane, he saw the knife and saw blood on his hands. Natalie urges him to remember more, and he realizes that the killer in the vision was Marian. She took the killer out of Nick and into herself.

In Bland's office, Tracy finds a recording of Bland telling Mr. Buckwater, one of the Indians involved in the land dispute, that an agreement has been reached and that Wade will see to his compensation.

In a vision, Nick sees an Indian's throat being cut. Painted on a rock is the same figure that was in Marian's painting at Blackwing's house.

Marian finds Buckwater searching Blackwing's house for the surveyor's letter. She gazes at her painting and says that she knows where the letter is. Suddenly, in a vision, she sees that Buckwater is the man who killed her grandfather. Buckwater stabs her from behind with an obsidian knife, then throws her onto the couch. With glowing eyes and bared fangs, Nick crashes through a window. Buckwater is about to shoot Nick when Jess comes in and throws a knife which lands in Buckwater's chest. Nick tells Marian that it was not her fault that she killed - it was the darkness that she took from him. Marian's eyes glow, and Nick says that he won't let her die with that darkness. He bites her neck and takes the vampire back into himself. In the spirit plane, Nick lays Marian's body down in the woods, kisses her, and covers her body with a blanket.

Nick notices the painting, tears the paper away from the back of the canvas, and finds the surveyor's letter inside. When Jess asks how he knew where to find it, Nick says that Blackwing showed him in the spirit plane. Jess says that Marian didn't have time to learn all ways of the elders. She didn't know that a wise healer doesn't take the pain into themselves, but transfers it to an animal, a mountain, or a stream. When Gary Blackwing died, there was no one to teach her.

**BLIND FAITH**
written by
directed by

**Guest Cast**
Diana Zimmer as"Jody Fraser"
with

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| Patrick Galligan | Rapist | Terry Nicholas | Rape Victim |
| Karen Glave | Female Cop | Desmond Campbell | Male Cop |
| Alisa Wiegers | Rape Victim 2 | Lee J. Campbell | Bus Driver |
| Greg Kramer | Screed | David Storch | Doyle |
| Colm Magner | Security Guard | | |

**Synopsis**

A blind woman, Jody Fraser, walks stiffly and uses a cane. Her legs are killing her, so she rests on a park bench and lets her guide dog, Perry, run free. Perry is digging excitedly when two hands suddenly come up out of the earth, grab him by the neck, and pull him towards the ground.

The next day, Jody notices that Perry is listless and not eating. She works nights and tries to take him to the vet during the day, but Perry won't go out into the sunlight.

At the precinct, Tracy flips through a dog book because her nephew wants a Shar-Pei for his birthday. She asks if Nick ever had a dog, and he says that he did, a long time ago. According to Tracy, you don't buy a Shar-Pei, you ransom them. She could buy a Mazda for the same amount of money, but Nick points out that Mazdas don't fetch. Nick has brought information on a 261 suspect (a rapist). There have been three incidents in the last year with similar composites and m.o.'s. The third victim died after the attack. Reese tells them to get the serial rapist off the street, and he'll buy them both a puppy. Nick glances through the book. In a flashback, a dog follows Nick home. He tries to send the dog away, but eventually takes him in. They share the deer that Nick has killed - the meat for the dog and the blood for Nick. He names the dog Raleigh, after Sir Walter. Tracy tells Nick that she had a dog named Sparky when she was growing up. Teasingly, Nick says he would expect that and asks if she had a cat named Fluffy. Reese dispatches Nick and Tracy to Allan Gardens where a woman was seen being dragged from her car.

Traffic is slow, and Tracy suggests that taking Adelaide to Jarvis would be faster. Nick asks if she'd like her own little steering wheel. They spot a police helicopter and radio for information. Jody, at Metro Air Control, tells them that the helicopter is en route to the possible 261 in progress at Allan Gardens. She suggests that 81-Kilo take Adelaide to Jarvis, saying that it would be faster. Tracy thanks her for the tip, then wonders, "Jody?" Jody wonders, "Tracy Vetter?" As two police officers walk through the Air Control room, one apologizes to the other. She says she didn't know he was there and hopes it's not broken, referring to his bloody nose. After they pass, Perry leaves Jody's side and licks the spilled blood from the floor.

At Allan Gardens, the rapist holds a terrified woman at knife point and says that he can cure her sickness. When Nick and Tracy arrive, Tracy stays with the victim while Nick chases the rapist through the woods. The man gets away, however.

Jody and Perry take the bus home, and a man gets on and sits behind them. He tries to pet Perry, but Perry growls, and his eyes glow briefly. The man tells Jody that it's a shame that a pretty lady like her can't see a handsome guy like him. He calls himself the "Doctor of Love" and says that he can cure her. When he touches her neck, she yells for the driver, who stops the bus. The man runs off, and Perry tries to run after him, but Jody holds him back.

Later, at home, Perry hears screams and runs out through the door flap while Jody sleeps. The "Doctor of Love" is attacking another woman when Perry leaps down from the top of a brick wall, attacks, and kills him. The woman tells the police that all she saw was a big, furry blur.

At work, Jody learns that a rapist calling himself the "Doctor of Love" was killed last night.

Natalie tells Nick that the rapist was drained of blood. She is puzzled because she suspects that he was killed by a vampire, yet the woman said it was a wild animal. Nick says it might have been a karouche - a lower form of vampire. They feed off of vermin, mostly.

The bus driver reports to Tracy that a man matching the rapist's description was bothering a blind woman on his bus. The woman is a regular on the bus and works at Police Headquarters. He thinks it might have been her dog that killed the man, since the dog had tried to run after him.

Nick visits Screed, who is draining the blood of rats, and asks if he has brought across any dogs lately. He hasn't. Nick gives Screed $100 and learns that there is another karouche in town.

Tracy and Nick visit Jody, who was Tracy's sorority sister, and Nick senses the presence of another vampire. Jody used to be a helicopter pilot, but when she lost her sight, Tracy's father got her the job at Dispatch. When Nick meets Perry, Perry's eyes glow red for a moment. Tracy tells Jody that they think Perry is the dog that killed the rapist, but Jody insists that he is not dangerous. Tracy wants a clip of his coat to compare with fur found at the scene. While petting Perry, Nick notices two small wounds in his neck. In a flashback, LaCroix visits Nick, and Raleigh barks viciously at him. LaCroix says Raleigh feels no affection or love for Nick and would follow any master. He says that dogs are for breakfast, but only in the hardest of times.

Nick takes Jody and Perry home, and Jody talks about her multiple sclerosis. She knows that it's hard for her friends to handle and understands why Tracy doesn't come around anymore. She worries that Perry, who is very important to her, will be taken away. She invites Nick in for coffee, but the rising sun forces him to decline. He offers to pick her up the next night, adding that he'll bring something special for Perry. She accepts and gives him a friendly kiss good night.

Natalie tells Nick that MS is not usually fatal, but in rare cases, such as Jody's, it attacks the brain stem. According to Jody's doctor, she is deteriorating rapidly. Nick says it must be so painful for her to lose her freedom and her mobility. "Sort of like having to avoid the sunlight for eternity," Natalie responds. "Kind of limits your options." In a flashback, Nick calls for Raleigh, but LaCroix has him on a rope. LaCroix calls a karouche out of the woods and tells him not to drain Raleigh completely. LaCroix has plans for him.

At Jody's house, Nick pours blood from a flask into Perry's dish. Perry laps up every drop.

At the precinct, Tracy sticks a bow on a bone and tells Nick that she talked her nephew into getting a mutt from the pound. "No tail. Big discount." She says that she and Jody were close in college, but people drift apart. Nick says it doesn't have to be that way. "I've had friends I haven't seen in a hundred ... in years, and, uh, you know, sometimes you can pick up where you left off." She doesn't know how to behave around Jody, and she feels guilty about it. He encourages her to just try. Anything she does is better than nothing.

At Metro Air Control, a police officer accidentally spills coffee on Jody, and Perry attacks him. Nick and Tracy arrive to find that the officer is pretty badly hurt, but will be okay. In a flashback, Nick discovers a body in the woods. A man arrives in search of "the beast" and tells Nick that two people were killed last night, and another was left for dead. The villagers say it was a mad dog. More than that, they say it was a hell hound, an unearthly creature. The constable has offered a reward for the beast, but Arthur Conan Doyle says that he has come because he can't resist a ripping good mystery. Nick tells him to go back. He is in grave danger if he remains. Nick tells Jody that Perry must go. In a flashback, Nick sharpens a stake to "do the right thing." LaCroix arrives, and with glowing eyes and bared fangs, Nick blames him because he must now slay Raleigh. Nick throws the stake at LaCroix, but misses. They hear screams, and Nick rushes out to find Doyle running from Raleigh. Nick intervenes and tells Doyle to leave and never return to the Baskervilles. Jody weeps uncontrollably as Nick takes Perry away.

Tracy takes Jody home, and before she leaves, they decide to pick up where they left off.

In the woods, Nick sharpens a stake and flashes back to having to kill Raleigh. Perry's eyes glow red, and he growls at Nick. Perry breaks his chain, knocks Nick down, and runs off. With glowing eyes and bared fangs, Perry returns to Jody. Nick arrives outside Jody's house and hears her screaming. He bursts and finds that her neck has been bitten, her eyes are glowing, and she can now see. "Good boy," she says, revealing her fangs.

Tracy is surprised to hear that Jody has resigned and is visiting relatives in the States. Nick tells Reese that he took Perry to Animal Control. He adds to Natalie, "I took care of it." He assures Tracy that Jody is strong and will survive.

With glowing eyes, Jody gazes out over the city. She smiles, revealing her fangs, and takes off into the air, followed quickly by Perry.

**MY BOYFRIEND IS A VAMPIRE**
written by Phil Bedard and Larry LaLonde
directed by Clay Borris

**Guest Cast**
Geordie Johnson as "Jerry Tate"
Stephanie Louise Vallance as "Charly Hawkes"
with

Brittany Edgell ..... Maggie Dwyer
Greg Kramer ..... Screed
Patrice ..... Jacinta
Lucia Verrelli ..... Julia
Ray Kahnert ..... Nuberg
Anton Tycody ..... Monk
Shelley Peterson ..... Dr. Jennifer Joyce
Normand Bissonnette ..... Bourbon
Laura Adamo ..... Franceline
Chantale Nadeau ..... Maria
Bryan Thomas ..... Hitman
James Hinkley ..... Punk

**Synopsis**

Tracy is in the studio audience of *The Jerry Show,* while Natalie watches on TV. Today's topic is "Supernatural Lovers." One guest, Maggie Dwyer, claims that her boyfriend is a vampire. Another guest, Dr. Jennifer Joyce, explains the two kinds of love. "Wellness love" is characterized by respect, understanding, and great sex. "Unwellness love" is what people use to relieve loneliness. They let their emotions get trampled while they fantasize and rationalize about a love that is unattainable, not even real. Needless to say, the sex is nonexistent. Natalie rolls her eyes and nods in agreement. Jerry goes to the audience and asks Tracy's opinion of someone who claims to be involved with a vampire. Tracy says she should get help. Later, Maggie is brutally murdered in her home, stabbed more than thirty times.

While investigating the murder, Tracy recognizes Maggie. She tells Nick about Maggie's appearance on the show, and the look he gives her prompts her to defend herself, saying, "I ... watch the show from time to time, okay? It's just fun." Nick repeats to Natalie, "Her boyfriend was a vampire" and rolls his eyes mockingly. He tries to keep a straight face as he relates the information to Reese. Dreading a media circus, Reese tells them to find the boyfriend fast.

At the television studio, Nick asks if Tracy buys the vampire angle. She claims not to believe in vampires, then asks if he does. He doesn't have a chance to answer, however, because taping is about to begin. The show's host, Jerry Tate, tapes a promo stating that Maggie's murder was in no way related to her appearance on his show. He asks that her death not be sensationalized. Charly Hawkes, Jerry's producer and biggest fan, assures him that the promo was sincere enough and that he "nailed it." Jerry thinks that Tracy would be perfect for the show they're planning to do on women in dangerous, traditionally male-dominated jobs. Tracy declines, saying the captain would never go for it. Nick finds it all very amusing.

Tracy asks Vachon how she will explain it if the killer is a vampire. People will think she's nuts - especially Nick, who's such a skeptic. "Know him that well, do you?" Vachon asks. "Well enough," she replies. He advises her not to even try. If it is a vampire, it could get her killed. Referring to Maggie's situation, Tracy says sometimes it's hard to tell if you have a relationship or not. The woman thinks she has a commitment and a future, and the guy doesn't even realize there is a relationship going on. "Men," Tracy huffs, then leaves the restaurant. Vachon flashes back to carousing with Screed, a vampire named Bourbon, and four ladies. "Women," he mutters.

Natalie doesn't know if Maggie's killer was a vampire or not. Nick agrees that if he was a vampire, he wouldn't have killed Maggie in the usual manner because it would have meant risking exposure. Natalie seems angry at Nick, and he wants to know why. She says that she is feeling a bit like Maggie. Natalie tells Nick that she saw the show and thought, whoever the guy is, he's using Maggie. Natalie is trying to help Nick, but doesn't feel that he is working with her. He hasn't stopped drinking blood, for one thing. She tells him that he is hurting her, and he says that that is not his intention. She asks what his intention is, but he has no answer.

Maggie's house is kept under surveillance. Movement is detected inside, and Tracy goes to investigate. Nick is notified and flies over, worried that the killer might really be a vampire. In the darkened house, a man screams. Tracy flips on the light to find Nick and Vachon apprehending Maggie's boyfriend, George Upton. Vachon came over because Tracy said the killer might be a vampire. She says she doesn't need his help, then

asks if Upton is a vampire. He isn't. Tracy tells Nick that her friend Vachon just happened to see her on the street and decided to back her up.

Upton denies killing Maggie. He went to her home to make sure that there was nothing which would connect her to him, since he is a married man. Maggie was very kinky, and he went along with the vampire fantasy to get her into bed.

Reese tells Nick and Tracy that Upton's wife, Susan, has been at a science fiction convention in Winnipeg for two weeks "probably learning to speak Klingon," so that takes care of the "jealous wife angle." He asks why Tracy was in the studio audience and says she's worse than his wife, Denise, who goes on and on about the show. Nick finds it all very funny and tells Reese that Jerry invited Tracy on the show. Nick feels that if Maggie's death was related to the show, this would be their way in. Tracy doesn't want to do it, but Reese agrees with Nick and orders her to do it.

Later, at Nick's apartment, Natalie announces that she's given up on him, then walks out.

At the studio, Charly fusses over Jerry, who got hit in the head when a fight broke out during a show featuring "Punks and Monks." While they conduct Tracy's background interview, Dr. Joyce comes in to check on Jerry. Charly rudely dismisses her. Jerry wants to videotape Tracy doing something exciting. Since homicide detectives usually arrive after the fact, he suggests that they stage something. Jerry wants a car chase, but it isn't in the budget. They agree to stage a meeting with Tracy and an informant, whose identity would be digitally masked.

At Tracy's apartment, Vachon checks out the contents of her refrigerator and comments, "You arrange this stuff alphabetically?" Tracy asks Vachon if he would like to be on television.

Dr. Joyce leaves the studio and gets into her car, then is attacked and killed with a crowbar.

Noticing that Natalie is not speaking to Nick, Tracy tries to get her to talk about their relationship. Natalie says it's complicated. Tracy tells her about a guy who reminds her of Nick. He has a mysterious side and quite a past. Tracy wants a relationship with him, but doesn't know if it's mutual. Natalie says you can't force it, and she doesn't have the energy anymore to wait and see. She feels all used up. Tracy says that in any relationship, sometimes we use, and sometimes we get used. Natalie thanks her for trying to help and hopes that Tracy's relationship works out.

Tracy and her "snitch" are being filmed when a man approaches with a knife. Vachon pushes Tracy out of the way, then grabs the man's arm and flips him over. The man runs off. Because of the camera, Vachon can't do more than is humanly possible, so the guy gets away.

At the Raven, Nick asks Vachon if the attack seemed planned. When Vachon admires the women in the club, LaCroix laments that modern women are so demanding. They used to be so entertaining. In a flashback, Vachon, Screed, and Bourbon have killed the women and delight in the fact that after enjoying them, they need never worry about fidelity, monogamy, or marriage.

While reviewing the tape, Nick notices that the attacker deliberately hid his face from the camera, which he shouldn't have known was hidden in a van. Reese recalls a show topic that his wife mentioned: "Hit Men Who Marry Their Intended Victims." Clearly, the producers have a list of hit men, and the detectives need to get that list. Nick takes Natalie aside and insists that he isn't using her. She tells him there is nothing left to say. Looking hurt and confused, Nick walks away.

At the television studio, Nick and Tracy split up to search for the list. When Charly finds Tracy, she pulls a gun on her and admits to hiring a hit man to kill her on the street. But she says that this is about more than ratings. She is killing everyone that she believes Jerry had an affair with. Tracy denies having an affair with Jerry, but Charly won't listen. Nick arrives and tries unsuccessfully to hypnotize Charly into letting Tracy go. When Jerry arrives, Charly, who is taping this, tells him that Tracy's execution will be the ratings winner of the year. Charly had an affair with Jerry, and she loves him, but he says it was just sex. Wondering why she didn't think of it before, Charly shoots Jerry. Nick grabs the gun, and Charly runs to the wounded Jerry.

Nick is watching Tracy on Jerry's new show when Natalie arrives carrying flowers. "They're beautiful," she says. "And the card ..." Nick smiles up at her and responds, "Well, I had to get you here somehow." "It worked," she replies. She tells Nick that when he stood speechless in the precinct the last time they spoke, she saw more than he thought she saw. She finally figured it out. She saw how much he cared, but needed him to say it. Nick says he doesn't think she ever will understand bow much he cares.

**HEARTS OF DARKNESS**
written by J. Daniel Sexton
directed by Clay Borris

**Guest Cast**
Krista Bridges as "Ellen"
with

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| Kristin Lehman | Urs | Edward Jaunz | Don Eckhart |
| Greg Kramer | - Screed | Normand Bissonnette | Bourbon |
| Steve Behal | Lemieux | David Nerman | Todd Marnecki |
| Camille James-Adams | Killoughby | Ralph Small | McFarlane |
| Adriana Galic | Mrs. Marnecki | Laura Catalano | Girl in Whirlpool |

**Synopsis**

It's amateur night at the Raven, and Ellen Simmons takes the stage to strip. Amid flashbacks to a saloon long ago, Urs, who is on the brink of tears, watches Ellen dance. Ellen strips for one man in particular, Don Eckhart, and tosses him her undergarments. When Ellen leaves the stage, Urs tells her that Eckhart will hurt her, but Ellen says she's hungry, then leaves. Urs fears that Ellen wants Eckhart to hurt her. Later, in Eckhart's apartment, the scantily clad Ellen suddenly becomes aware of her surroundings. Eckhart is tied up and has been stabbed to death.

Ellen calls the police. When they investigate, she insists that she didn't know Eckhart and that the woman's clothes that are there (the ones she was wearing at the Raven) are not hers. She doesn't know where her clothes are. Natalie shows Nick that Eckhart has bite wounds on his neck, and there is a lot of blood is missing. She suspects that the vampire erased "a few pesky gray cells" from Ellen to make her forget what happened. When Nick and Natalie walk away, Tracy notices the bite marks, as well.

The sun is nearly up, and Urs walks outside. She flashes back to singing in a saloon. Vachon and Screed are among the audience. She finishes her song, and a man at the bar grabs her possessively. Back in the present, the sun is rising, and Urs flies off.

At the precinct, Ellen passes a polygraph test. Tracy has found out that Ellen's mother died before she was ten, then her father deserted her. She lived in foster homes and was on the street by the time she was twelve. The last she had heard, her father died in a bar fight in Victoria. While at the police station, Ellen observes as Todd "Hammerhead" Marnecki's lawyer tries to get her client released. Marnecki is a hockey player known for his violence. His wife had called 911 screaming for help, then later dropped the charges. Psychiatrists have evaluated Ellen and determined that she has a suppressed memory.

Natalie tells Nick that Ellen's fingerprints were all over Eckhart's apartment. She measures the distance between Nick's canine teeth and finds it to be 3.5 centimeters. The killer's bite is 2.9 centimeters, which indicates to Natalie that it's probably a female.

Back at the crime scene, Nick finds a coaster from the Raven.

Tracy visits the Raven, shows Ellen's picture to Vachon, and tells him that a vampire killed the man that Ellen was with last night. She knows that Ellen is not the vampire because she's seen her in the daylight. Nick arrives at the Raven and ducks behind a pillar so that Tracy doesn't see him on her way out. Vachon tells Nick that Eckhart left with a mortal stripper who called herself Monica. Nick says that if Urs killed Eckhart, Vachon will answer for it. In a flashback, when the man at the bar grabs Urs, Vachon grabs him by the throat and says that he will die if he bothers her again. Urs tells Vachon that the man meant her no harm. He is a friend and is kind to her.

At the precinct, Tracy announces that she is going to stay with Ellen for a couple of days to see if familiar surroundings trigger her memory. She carries a huge duffel bag with "overnight stuff." Ellen watches the media circus at the station as Mrs. Marnecki comes to pick up her husband. Nick makes a phone call and says, "I need your help."

When Nick and Tracy bring Ellen home, Urs watches from the shadows, and Nick senses the presence of another vampire. While Ellen makes coffee for Tracy, Nick checks out her closet. Conservative dresses hang on the rack, while a suitcase at the bottom is filled with much racier clothing. Nick pockets an article of clothing from the suitcase. He wishes them good night and sneaks a look in Tracy's duffel bag on his way out.

A cross, wooden stakes, and garlic rest on top of the clothes. Nick backs away warily. In the hallway outside Ellen's apartment, Nick thanks Vachon for coming. A vampire is tailing them, and Nick wants Vachon to watch out for Tracy.

Natalie confirms that a hair from the clothing that Nick took is Ellen's. He says she doesn't seem like the type, and Natalie wonders if they are talking about two different people in one body.

Urs listens from outside as Ellen tells Tracy about being abandoned by her father. In a flashback, the man from the saloon pulls a knife on Urs. She can't understand why he's doing it. She has never denied him. Vachon comes up from behind, with glowing eyes and bared fangs, and kills the man. Urs is terrified. Vachon tells her that he and his friends don't live to kill, they kill to live. Vachon wants to take her away from her life of dancing for fools and thieves. She says that she has tried to leave, but always comes back. When asked why, she answers that she makes them happy. She wants Vachon to help her die.

Nick tells Natalie that even if Ellen and Monica are the same person, he would have sensed it if she was a vampire.

While Tracy is in the living room, Ellen changes clothes in the bedroom. When she spots the "Marnecki released" headline of a newspaper, a change comes over her. Vachon spots Urs outside and asks if she killed Eckhart. She says that she did not. She doesn't treat death as lightly as Vachon does. In a flashback, Urs begs Vachon to kill her. They kiss passionately until he can no longer resist biting her. Dressed in black leather, Ellen emerges from the bedroom and introduces herself to Tracy as Monica. Outside, Urs tells Vachon that Monica is as trapped as she is. Urs flashes back to waking up as a vampire. Outside Ellen's apartment, Urs laments that she must bear for eternity what she couldn't bear for another second. She asked for death, and Vachon gave her forever. "How could I kill you?" he asks. She says that he didn't save her any more than she can save Ellen. Monica tells Tracy that she knew Eckhart, but didn't kill him. Monica plans to pay a visit to Marnecki, and when Tracy tries to stop her, she pushes Tracy aside, sending her crashing into some furniture. Tracy doesn't see Monica's glowing eyes and bared fangs. Monica flies off, and Urs follows her. Vachon bursts in and finds Tracy just as Nick returns. Nick angrily sends Vachon outside before Tracy comes to. Tracy tells Nick about Ellen changing into Monica, who is now on her way to Marnecki's. In the hall, Nick tells Vachon to stay there until the paramedics arrive and not to let anything else happen to Tracy. He adds, "Don't let her see you."

Monica arrives at Marnecki's and finds him in a hot tub with a woman who is not his wife. When he sees Monica, he sends the woman to call the police. Monica then seduces him, and they kiss for few minutes. She introduces herself as Jacqueline, then kills him. Urs arrives, and Jacqueline says that Urs dances for the approval of men like Eckhart and Marnecki every night and probably doesn't even know why. Urs admits that she is right. Nick arrives in time to hear Jacqueline explain that she is three people. Ellen is the victim, like Urs, seeking the affection of men to replace the father who deserted her. Monica deals with the abuse by fighting fire with fire and using men. Her indiscretions led her to a vampire who brought her across, causing Jacqueline to emerge. Jacqueline tells Urs, "The pain is Ellen's, the anger is Monica's, and I am the revenge." Urs says that Jacqueline's revenge is causing more pain for Ellen and Monica. Nick emerges from the shadows, and Jacqueline reverts to Ellen. She sees Marnecki in the hot tub and realizes that she killed him. She is distraught and knows that it has to stop. As she crashes through the penthouse window, Nick tries to go to her, but Urs holds him back. She says that nothing can save Ellen except death. Urs feels that Ellen is lucky. Nick embraces her.

At the Raven, Urs tells Vachon how alike she and Ellen were. Urs's father abandoned her family when she was twelve. Jacqueline made her realize that she has spent her life searching for her father in every man she's met - someone to approve of her and love her. Vachon apologizes for what he did to her, and she forgives him. He asks if she still wants to die. She replies that she understands more than she did yesterday, but she isn't sure if it has changed her mind.

At Nick's apartment, Natalie marvels at the power that the mind can have over the body. Ellen didn't believe that she was a vampire, and so she functioned as a human. She was able to tolerate sunlight, eat food, and have sex. Natalie says it's something for Nick to think about.

In the morgue, Ellen's body twitches.

**TROPHY GIRL**
written by Michael Sadowski
directed by Terry Steyn

**Guest Cast**
Alan C. Peterson as "Christopher Scheer"
with

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| Ken Smith | Suspect #1 | Randy Butcher | Suspect #2 |
| Ellen Dubin | Ingrid Marr | Mary Jo Eustace | Heather |
| Dwight Bacquie | Manny | Polly Shannon | Liselle |
| Kristen Lehman | Urs | Douglas Miller | Jeffrey |
| Doug O'Keefe | Sedrick | Brian Kaulback | Bateman (Cop) |

**Synopsis**

A man wearing surgical gear undresses a woman's body, draws dashed lines around her wrists and neck, and turns on a saw. He later wraps the body in plastic and dumps it in the harbor.

Nick and Tracy are chasing two drug dealers. Nick captures one, and Tracy kills the other during a shoot-out in an alley. It is the first time that she has killed, and she is shaken by it. While Nick is driving Tracy home, they get called to the scene where the body was found in the water. The body has been decapitated, and the hands have been cut off, as well. Tracy nearly gets sick.

Natalie discovers some scarring on the victim's lower back, indicating that she recently had minor surgery. Hopefully, this will help them to identify the body.

Per regulations, Tracy must either take three days off, or spend them at her desk. Against her protests, Reese tells her to go home. Nick says he's there for her if she wants to talk. Reese can't understand how someone could mutilate a body like that, and Nick says that maybe only someone who's done it can understand it. He wants to talk to Christopher Scheer, known as "The Mortician," who was arrested ten years ago when he was found to be hoarding bodies and body parts. According to Reese, he'll be serving time at Oakridge into the afterlife. Natalie has found a match on the victim's description. Deena Ellis, 26, had disc alignment surgery at Scarborough Grace about five weeks ago. Nick checks the list of missing persons and confirms that Deena was reported missing four days ago. Tracy hears Nick say that Deena worked at an escort service, The Palomar Agency. She is upset about being sent home, and Natalie tries to comfort her. Like Nick, she says she's there if Tracy needs to talk. Tracy says she won't, but Natalie thinks she might.

Alone in the locker room, Tracy flashes back to the kill and cries.

Ingrid Marr at The Palomar Agency gives Nick a list of all her clients and employees and assures Nick that she screens them all thoroughly. The body hasn't been positively identified yet, but Ingrid says that if it was Deena who was killed, it was not by anyone associated with the agency. She promises to let Nick know if there are any additions to the list.

Without authorization, Tracy goes undercover and takes a job with The Palomar Agency.

Nick visits Scheer at the insane asylum, but Scheer won't talk to him unless he comes into the cell. It's against the rules, but Nick hypnotizes the guard into letting him in.

Inside The Palomar Agency, Tracy goes through Ingrid's desk and is observed through a telescope from an office across the street. Tracy gets her first assignment. She is to meet her date at the Raven, then go to a Commerce Awards Dinner. Tracy is observed through the telescope as she leaves the agency and gets into her car.

Scheer tells Nick that Rosebud, his E-mail pen pal, would enjoy the irony of the police, who hunted Scheer down like a wild pig, now coming to him for insight into the twisted criminal mind. When Scheer notes that Nick is not afraid of him even though he's a killer, he says that we fear least that which we recognize. Nick denies being anything like Scheer. Scheer doesn't believe it. He can tell that Nick has killed many times and is drawn to death. It compels him in ways that shock, frighten, and thrill him. "And they gave you a badge," Scheer says disdainfully. Scheer agrees to help Nick if Nick can get his computer privileges restored. When asked why he did what he did, Scheer asks Nick if there was ever anything in his life so rare and beautiful that he felt compelled to preserve it. Nick flashes back to France, centuries ago. He watches a beautiful woman, Liselle, through a window. LaCroix enters, Liselle runs to him, and they kiss. While kissing Liselle, LaCroix looks out of the window at Nick, who walks away.

Tracy meets her date, Jeffrey, at the Raven, and Vachon follows them outside. Using his powers of hypnotism, Vachon tells Jeffrey to "get lost," and Jeffrey gets into his car. Vachon tells Tracy that Jeffrey will be okay. He just doesn't know where he's going. Tracy informs Vachon that she is undercover, and she is furious with him for assuming that she needed his help. She returns to her car and discovers that it has a flat tire. A man comes by to help, and Tracy tells him that she's a police officer. He offers to change the tire and removes his jacket. While handing her the jacket, he jabs her in the hand with a syringe. Within seconds, she loses consciousness.

Nick has talked to the warden and tells Scheer that his computer privileges will be restored when and if any cooperation he gives results in an arrest. Scheer tells Nick to look for someone who collects things and who moves a lot. The killer also requires specialized tools and a facility that affords some privacy. As for victims, he waits and watches. He delights in taking someone who's been right under his nose. In a flashback, Nick and LaCroix admire Liselle's beauty as they watch her sleep. LaCroix would bring her across - if she weren't so annoying. Instead, he plans to drink his fill and then be gone. Again, Scheer tells Nick that they are kindred souls.

In his car, Nick listens to "The Nightcrawler." In a flashback, he wakes Liselle up and tells her that she must get away from LaCroix. She finds Nick's concern touching, and they kiss until he finally bites her neck. LaCroix enters in time to see Nick kill Liselle. Furiously, he grabs Nick and lifts him up against a wall. Nick apologizes and says that he was only trying to protect her.

Vachon learns from Nick that Tracy is on a leave of absence because of the shooting. He tells Nick that she was in the Raven earlier, dressed to kill, and claiming to be undercover.

Nick calls Tracy's cellular phone, but she is tied up and unconscious. She awakens up to find the killer, Efrem Sedrick, brushing her hair aside using a severed hand.

Nick tells Reese that Tracy went undercover, then learns about similar killings involving escort agencies in Portland, Chicago, and Detroit. Reese asks if one of Scheer's Internet friends could be the killer, and Nick reports that only Rosebud is in Toronto. They are working on getting a positive ID. Nick has read Scheer's E-mail, however, and says that he's not enticing anyone to follow in his footsteps. Natalie reports that the cause of Deena's death was a lethal dose of thiobarbitol, the fastest acting barbiturate you can find, and it's not easy to obtain. Tracy's car has been found with a flat tire, and it looks as if she left in the middle of changing it. Reese dreads telling Tracy's father that she is missing.

Sedrick warns Tracy not to scream because it would give him a headache, and he'd have to kill her. He would have fixed her dinner, but it's probably best that she doesn't eat before surgery.

At Tracy's apartment, Nick listens to her answering machine and hears a message from Ingrid Marr saying that something good has come up and that she wants to get Tracy started right away. Nick has Ingrid meet him at The Palomar Agency and asks why she didn't tell him that she'd added a girt to the roster. He tells her that Tracy is a cop, his partner, and is missing. While gazing out of the window, Nick spots the telescope in the window of an office across the street. He remembers Scheer's words about taking someone who's been right under your nose. In the office across the street, Nick finds a real estate ad for a house, with "sold" stamped on it.

When left alone, Tracy manages to get her feet untied, although her wrists are still handcuffed. She is groggy from the drug and can barely see straight. Sedrick unloaded her gun and left it behind after pocketing the clip, but she checks and verifies that there is one bullet in the chamber. She kicks open the door of the room that she is in and finds herself in a basement, surrounded by heads and hands preserved in jars. Sedrick lures her to another door by impersonating a woman's voice calling for help. He suddenly opens the door, knocking Tracy down. The gun skitters across the floor. They are struggling on the floor when Nick arrives with glowing eyes and bared fangs. He grabs Sedrick and throws him into an electrical panel. Sparks fly, and Sedrick sinks to the floor. Tracy grabs the gun and points it at Nick. Sedrick rises up behind Nick, and just as he is about to knock Nick over the head, Tracy shoots him.

Rosebud has been identified. Nick tells Natalie that it's nobody important.

From the computer in his studio at the Raven, LaCroix welcomes "The Mortician" back to the Internet. He signs off, "Yours as ever, Rosebud."

## LET NO MAN TEAR ASUNDER

written by Diane Cary
directed by Clay Borris

### Guest Cast

Jesse Collins as "Hans Victor"
with

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| Colette Stevenson | Veronica | Henry Chan | Tattoo Artist |
| Kelly Fiddick | Mel Purdy | Scott Gibson | Malora's Boyfriend |
| Donna Goodhand | Dr. Valerie Freeman | Deborah DeMille | Prostitute |
| Jonathon Potts | Walters | Jaya Karsemeyer | Sage Freeman |

### Synopsis

A woman is getting a tattoo. When the artist goes to refill his ink, he is clubbed with a crowbar. The woman is then clubbed, as well. She is put into a van and taken away.

The woman's body is found in a trash bin. Her heart is missing. It was done carefully, though. It was surgery, not mutilation. In a flashback, Nick is tied to a table in a laboratory filled with bubbling test tubes and buzzing electricity. He thrashes about, clearly in pain. A scientist, Hans, enters, turns off the electricity, and releases Nick. Hans is attempting to cure Nick. The electrical charges are intended to catalyze the serum injection and stimulate the production of normal blood cells. Hans would love to have Nick's vitality, but Nick says he'd have to give up women and mentions the lovely Veronica. Hans says it would be easier to excise his own heart.

Natalie reports that the victim had a rare blood type, AB-negative, the same as hers. She shows Nick and Tracy the unfinished tattoo. Tracy has a friend who's into tattoos, and she recognizes the handiwork of a shop in Chinatown. Natalie says that the victim had hepatitis, so if someone took her heart to use as a transplant, they will be out of luck. Tracy comments on how long the donor waiting list is. Her Uncle Sonny, a former cop, is currently awaiting a heart transplant. Natalie agrees that waiting is the hardest part. She is due to have surgery on her bad knee and is just waiting for her surgeon to be able to fit her in.

Although Tracy cannot condone stealing someone's heart, she feels that if you did it for someone you really love, it's almost understandable. In a flashback, Nick is among a group of people gathered in a private residence listening to Veronica sing opera. She is being wooed by every opera company in Europe, and Hans tells Nick that he will close his laboratory and follow her anywhere. As they are leaving, Nick's presence spooks a horse, and Veronica gets trampled.

At the tattoo parlor, Nick detects a heartbeat inside and tells Tracy to watch the front while he goes around back. He finds the tattoo artist bound and gagged, but otherwise okay. Tracy goes around back and gets attacked in the alley. When Nick hears the struggle, he runs outside and changes to the vampire state. He pulls the guy off Tracy, then quickly departs before being seen. Tracy and her attacker fall to the ground. She quickly gets up and holds her gun on him, then calls for Nick. She is amazed at what an adrenaline rush can help a person accomplish.

The victim has been identified as Malora Willoughby, 24, who recently moved to Toronto from Halifax. The suspect from the alley is Mel Purdy, whom the tattoo artist hired a week ago. Malora's blood was found in the back of Purdy's van, and $20,000 was found in a box under the floorboard. Malora's boyfriend is shattered by her death. In a flashback, Hans has brought Veronica to his laboratory. Her heart was damaged in the accident, and Hans begs Nick to bring her across before she dies. Nick refuses to inflict his condition upon her. Hans says that it was Nick's fault that the horse reared and bolted, and he begs Nick to bring Veronica back to him. Natalie's beeper goes off. Dr. Valerie Freeman has found an opening for Natalie's knee surgery, and Nick offers to help her in any way that he can. She asks if he would give her a ride home after the procedure and gives him the address of the clinic.

Purdy is uncooperative and denies knowing anything about Malora's murder. He claims that he went to the tattoo parlor because he was owed money. He says the owner was tied up before he got there. He also claims that he attacked Tracy because he thought she was a prowler.

Since Malora's heart was unusable, Nick feels that whoever took it will strike again.

Dr. Freeman verifies Natalie's blood type and tells her that she will be given a general anesthetic and be knocked out. Natalie is surprised. She had expected an epidural, but she trusts Freeman's judgment.

Since this case is "weird," and since Vachon is Tracy's only supernatural friend, she asks if he knows anything about black market organ transplants. He has heard from Screed about a group of doctors who have some ties to the vampire community. For an astronomical fee, they will get you what you need. Tracy is getting desperate enough about her uncle to consider this route. Vachon gives her the address of Dr. Walters. She is to say that Enrique from the clinic in Rio sent her and that she will pay whatever they ask.

Nick listens to "The Nightcrawler" in his car. LaCroix says that the only extraordinary thing about birth is that we are no longer dead, which we presume to be an inferior predicament. In a flashback, Hans has submerged Veronica in ice water to slow her deterioration and is keeping her heart going with intermittent bursts of electricity. He plans to replace her damaged heart with a healthy one and wants Nick to bring one to him. If Nick won't help him, he will stop trying to cure Nick. Hans is furious that after all the people Nick has killed, he won't commit one more murder to save Veronica. As Nick walks the streets, a prostitute propositions him. When Nick brushes her off, she stabs him and intends to rob him. He changes to the vampire state, breaks her neck, and drinks her blood. Hans transplants the prostitute's heart into Veronica.

Nick scans the national organ transplant waiting list and requests background information on one of the names on the list: Sage Freeman.

Natalie is unconscious on a gurney, and Dr. Freeman has changed into street clothes. Along with a man and woman in surgical gear, Freeman rushes Natalie out of the clinic.

Tracy talks to Dr. Walters about her uncle's situation. He doesn't think he can help, then she mentions that her family will pay whatever is necessary. He leaves her alone in the office to fill out some forms. Tracy peeks into a room across the hall, where Dr. Freeman is reassuring her child, Sage, that they have found a donor and are getting her ready right now in the other room. Tracy peeks into another room and sees Natalie on the gurney. She calls Nick and tells him, "They've got Natalie." Dr. Walters pulls a gun on her, and Nick hears a dial tone before Tracy can tell him who it is that's got Natalie.

Nick puts out an APB on Tracy's car, then flies to the Raven. Vachon gives him the address of Walters' clinic: 336 Church Lane.

Walters has Tracy at gunpoint in a supply room and plans to dispose of her by harvesting her organs.

Just as the incision is about to be made in Natalie's chest, Nick bursts into the operating room and angrily orders everyone up against the wall.

When Walters looks out to check the hallway, Tracy kicks the gun from his hand and knocks him out by repeatedly slamming the door into him. She grabs the gun and moves into the hallway, where she encounters Dr. Freeman pushing Sage in a wheelchair.

Nick checks on Natalie and flashes back to Veronica waking up. She panics because she cannot speak, but Hans tells her that she's been gravely ill. He assures her that her voice will come back and that she will sing again. Veronica, however, stabs and kills herself.

Dr. Freeman tells Tracy that Sage will die without the new heart. Tracy says she knows what it's like when someone you love is in pain.

Natalie starts to come around, and Nick rests his head against hers in relief.

Natalie is back to work, and Nick brings her flowers. She tells him that her knee has gone into spontaneous remission. He remarks that he likes her knee the way it is, and he's glad that she's in one piece. She thanks him from the bottom of her "... oh, never mind." She asks if this means that he idolizes her knee, and he replies that it's his personal choice for the Body Parts Hall of Fame. "Anything else?" she queries. "Everything," he responds. "I like the whole package the way it is." He leans forward to kiss her, but she slips sideways out the door.

## NIGHT IN QUESTION

written by Gary Stephen Rieck
directed by Nicholas J. Gray

### Guest Cast

Melanie Nichols-King as "Dr. Turner"
with

Demo Cates ..... Paramedic
Alice Poon ..... Nurse #2
Dimitri Frid ..... Russian Soldier
Don Dickinson ..... Detective Dwmeback
Domenic Cuzzocrea ..... Leon Sharp
Allegra Fulton ..... Nurse #1
Anais Granofskiy ..... Nurse #3
Michael Rigupero ..... Detective Maurer
Heather Hodgeson ..... Policewoman

### Synopsis

Nick gets rushed to the hospital after being shot in the head. Dr. Turner and the emergency staff try to revive him, but fail. He is pronounced dead at 12:36 a.m. Tracy weeps and blames herself. In a flashback, Nick and Tracy are in a warehouse where parade floats are stored. Tracy is about to be shot when Nick, in a blur of speed, pushes her out of the way and takes the bullet. Natalie rushes to the hospital and demands to see Nick. When Nick starts breathing, a nurse rushes out in a panic to find Dr. Turner. Natalie removes a bag of blood from her medical bag. Attached to the bag of blood is a tube with a needle, which she sticks into Nick's stomach. The blood flows into his body. Dr. Turner and the nurse enter, and Natalie quickly covers the bag of blood with the sheet. Turner calls Nick a "miracle man" and reexamines his head wound. It has already begun to heal. While Turner is distracted, Natalie removes the bag of blood. She then notifies Tracy and Reese that Nick is alive. She says that he went into a temporary cardiac arrest and is still in a coma, but she has a feeling that he'll pull through.

Baffled, Turner examines Nick's X-rays. He should be dead. Half his brain has been scrambled. LaCroix, in surgical gear, offers a second opinion. Using hypnotism, he tells her that the X-rays are flawed. He convinces her that the bullet glanced off Nick's skull, causing minimal damage. As Turner repeats LaCroix's words to Reese and Tracy, Natalie spots LaCroix. LaCroix visits the comatose Nick and tells him that he always pays his debts. In a flashback, LaCroix detects a heartbeat among the fallen bodies on a battlefield. He bites the neck of a Russian soldier, and the soldier plunges a stake into LaCroix's heart. With a scalpel, LaCroix cuts both his and Nick's wrists, then presses the wounds together to mingle their blood. Nick briefly comes to.

Natalie visits Nick, who is now awake. He has no idea who she is. She suggests that she should take Nick home, in hopes that familiar surroundings will jog his memory. In his hospital room, Natalie is amazed and delighted to see that Nick is eating. Nick can't understand why it's such a big deal. When introduced to Joe Reese from the Metro Police, he asks if he's in trouble.

Tracy is hazy on the details of the shooting. Nick got a call from an informant claiming to have information on an unsolved case from a few years back - the Yorkville Ripper. Once inside the warehouse, she and Nick split up. She can't remember seeing the shooter's face.

Returning to his apartment, Nick comments that it's a little dark. Natalie assures him that he likes it that way. When he guesses that his age is between 30 and 40, she says that he is so far off, she cannot begin to tell him. He plays "Für Elise" on the piano, and although he can't remember the name of the tune, he knows that it's by Beethoven. He recalls playing it for a friend who was hard of hearing and who jotted down notes with a quill. Natalie has to go to work. She removes a bottle of blood from the fridge, slips it into a bag, and tosses Nick an apple, saying, "An apple a day keeps the coroner away." He smiles at her and says he wouldn't want to do that.

When Nick is alone, he is surprised by the sudden appearance of LaCroix, who comes bearing a bottle of blood and who claims to be Nick's oldest friend. In a flashback, LaCroix lies on a couch, on the brink of death, and asks Nick to remove the stake from his heart. Nick agrees to help, but says that they will then part company. LaCroix points out that it was Nick's choice to remain with him as long as he did. He says that Nick really does like him, he just won't admit it. Nick removes the stake. Back in the present, Nick asks about himself, and LaCroix says that he's a killer. Natalie returns and tells LaCroix that she knows who he is. She thanks him for helping Nick in the hospital, but thinks he should leave Nick alone now. LaCroix wants Natalie

to inform Nick of his special nature and needs, but knows that she'll use this opportunity to try to accomplish the impossible - to redeem him. She suggests that he leave, adding, "By the door." Nick looks confused. At the elevator door, LaCroix pauses briefly at the spot where Nick impaled him with a flaming stake three years earlier, then leaves. When Nick asks why LaCroix called him a killer, Natalie says that he's killed in the line of duty. When he asks about his "special nature," she tells him not to believe anything LaCroix says. She asks him to promise not to leave the apartment and tells him that there's a change that he's wanted to make in his life, and it seems to be happening. She asks Nick to trust her and says, "We both have to take this slowly." Picking up on the word "we," Nick asks if they have a relationship. Natalie answers that they're just friends. He says that he knew there was something special between them when he saw her at the hospital. She says that they have a unique relationship, but won't tell him why. They kiss tentatively, then passionately.

Nick is passionately kissing Natalie's neck and shoulders from behind. She begs him to bring her across. His eyes are glowing, his fangs are bared, and LaCroix stands in the background. Nick bites Natalie, and she gasps sharply. With a start, Nick snaps out of the dream. Natalie is sleeping on the couch downstairs. Taking his gun, Nick goes out to discover what he is.

In his car, Nick listens to "The Nightcrawler," who says we must never forget what we are, or whom we came from. In a flashback, Nick has just removed the stake from LaCroix. He cuts his arm with a knife and offers his arm to LaCroix, who pulls it to his mouth and drinks hungrily.

Tracy pages through mug shots on a computer. If the shooter is there, she doesn't see him.

Nick returns to the warehouse. Recalling the shooting, he grabs his head in pain. A police officer arrives. He stares at her neck and is distracted by her heartbeat. He turns away, and she doesn't see his glowing eyes and bared fangs. When he turns back around, he seems weak, but he assures her that he is fine. When he tries to leave, he is driven back inside by the sunlight.

Nick arrives home with smoke pouring from his body. Despite having covered himself with a blanket, his face and hands are badly burned. He angrily demands to know what's wrong with him. Natalie laments that they were so close. If only he'd done as she asked, she might never have had to tell him the truth. Nick remembers the shooter's face and wants to go to the station, but Natalie says he can't go anywhere until sunset. She reluctantly tells him that he's a vampire.

The shooter calls Tracy and asks if the name "Jimmy Malik" rings a bell. It doesn't. He says he wants to meet Tracy at the cement plant at the lakefront. Tracy jots the information down.

Nick is amazed that he heals so quickly and is dumbfounded to learn that he's been a vampire for 767 years. He asks if that is what makes Natalie so sad. She tells him that it's what has kept them apart, although last night she believed it was possible for them to be together. Nick suddenly doubles over in pain, and Natalie pours him a drink from the bottle that LaCroix brought. After one taste, he is irresistibly drawn to the blood and takes a long swallow from the bottle. Eyeing the bottle, Natalie informs him that he doesn't want to be a vampire.

At the precinct, Nick looks at mug shots on the computer and identifies the shooter as Leon Sharp, a.k.a. Leon Malik. His older brother, Jimmy, was shot and killed by Tracy's father, Richard Vetter, during a drug bust about fifteen years ago. Nick and Reese realize that Tracy is the target.

Tracy gets out of her car at the cement plant, and Leon shoots at her from a catwalk. She takes cover among some pallets. He continues to fire at her, so she runs to take cover behind some barrels, firing up at him the whole way.

Nick goes out to his car at the precinct, then remembers that he can fly. He flies to Tracy's apartment, where he finds the note about the cement plant.

Leon tells Tracy about Jimmy and her father. She notices that the barrels she is hiding behind have "flammable" warnings on them and runs away just as Leon's gunfire causes them to explode and burst into flames. Nick arrives on the catwalk with glowing eyes and bared fangs. Jimmy screams, backs away, and falls over the railing. Nick flies off before Tracy sees him.

It's a lot to take in all at once, so Nick asks Natalie to bear with him, then kisses her fondly on the head. She can't fill in all the blanks, so he visits the Raven. It's nearly dawn, and LaCroix says Nick will have to spend the day. He asks if Nick has plenty of time. "Eternity, so I'm told," Nick replies. "Good," LaCroix responds. "Because what you are, Nicholas, is a long, long story."

**SONS OF BELIAL**
written by Phil Bedard and Larry LaLonde
directed by Clay Borris

**Guest Cast**
David Hemblen as "Dr. Max Vanderwal"
with

Frank Pellegrino ..... MacIssac
George Buza ..... Eric Sawchuck
Eduardo Gomez ..... Ario
Peter Messaline ..... Inquisitor
Seari Roberge ..... Bames
Thea Andrews ..... Eva
Cheryl Swarts ..... Melanie Sawchuck
Vincent Marino ..... Jailer
Mario Romano ..... Sancho
Patrick Gallagher ..... Mi chael
Johanna Black ..... Paula

**Synopsis**

Officer Brian MacIssac notices a woman slumped over in her car. While he is checking her pulse, Melanie Sawchuck comes to, screams something in a foreign language, then passes out again. While MacIssac radios for help, Melanie regains consciousness and drives off, knocking him down. While driving, she cries and repeatedly mutters, "Release this woman." She drives her car off an unfinished section of the Gardiner Expressway, and it explodes on the ground below.

MacIssac has a broken arm and a probable concussion. He hardly knows his own name, but Nick hypnotizes him into repeating Melanie's words. He tells Reese that it sounds like Latin.

Although burn victims are Natalie's worst nightmare, she confirms Melanie's identity using dental records.

Nick and Tracy notify Melanie's brother, Eric, who was her next of kin. He is extremely religious and continually quotes scripture. Nick demonstrates a familiarity with biblical quotes, as well. Eric shows no particular emotion over the news of his sister's death.

Natalie reports that Melanie had traces of lamb's blood in her stomach. Nick flashes back to Spain during the Inquisition. He and LaCroix are thrown into a cell, and the door frame is painted with lamb's blood to repel evil. Believed to be in league with the devil, they were taken while they slept. LaCroix believes in neither God, nor the devil. Nick says that if there is a God, he has not yet shown himself to him. A fellow prisoner, Sancho, urges them not to abandon their faith.

While checking out Melanie's home, Tracy asks why Nick is so familiar with biblical quotes. He says it's always a good idea to know what the other side is up to. Tracy finds blood on a window. A book is face down on a table, and when Tracy touches it, a chill sweeps through the room. Nick turns the book over, revealing a cross on the cover. He hands the book, *Exorcism and the Modern World,* to Tracy and explains that in medieval times, lamb's blood was used by certain Christian denominations in exorcisms.

At the precinct, Eric says that Melanie was undergoing an exorcism because she was sick and tormented. Doctors and psychiatrists couldn't help her. Her sickness was one of the soul. He tells Nick that the devil is real. In a flashback, Sancho says that he was accused of being a demon when he refused to give his valuable land to the church. Another prisoner, Ario, who appears to be insane, is said to be marked by the beast. A priest arrives, and Ario is taken away. As he is carried out, Ario cries out that they have no power over Belial and calls to Beelzebub, his "father." Eric tells Nick that Satan sends forth his angels to seek out those who no longer believe that the Lord's light is within them. He believes that his sister killed herself to escape the demon's influence. Eric tells Nick that the exorcist is an excommunicated priest, Dr. Max Vanderwal.

Nick and Tracy visit Vanderwal, who claims that the demon in Melanie was very powerful. He invites them to witness an exorcism. A man named Michael is about to undergo his fourth session and is handcuffed to a table. As the ceremony progresses, Nick grows increasingly edgy. Michael shouts, "You ... are ... mine" and nods towards Nick. Nick's head is thrown back, and he momentarily changes to the vampire state. Shaking his head, he returns to normal, although he's a bit disoriented. Vanderwal pronounces that the demon has been driven out of Michael.

Although Tracy's eyes have been opened recently to things that she thought only existed in movies and books, she doesn't believe that what they saw at Vanderwal's was real. She thinks that he's a dangerous

charlatan. Nick envisions a figure in religious garb standing in the road, and he swerves to a stop outside a convenience store. A shot is fired inside the store, and a man runs out holding a rifle. When Nick yells for him to freeze, he grabs a woman who's passing by and swears that he'll blow her head off. Nick orders him to put the gun down and let the woman go. His usual powers of mesmerism are different somehow. Terrified, the man asks, "My God, what are you?" He then says, "All right, I'll do it." He asks God to forgive him, then shoots himself.

Reese reports that the gunman, Barnes, was wanted for homicide and rape, and he did time for armed robbery. He had suicidal tendencies and tried to kill himself twice in prison because, "voices told him to." Reese feels a chill and says that he's had to send five men home. A sewer pipe has ruptured somewhere in the building, and the smell is making everyone sick. Nick grips the edges of his desk and starts shaking violently. Tracy asks if he's okay, but he is unable to answer. One of the men working on the pipes gets an electric shock and falls to the floor, but will be okay. Nick looks as if he's about to pass out.

Nick arrives home barely able to walk. He downs some blood and spontaneously changes to the vampire state. He shakes himself out of it, drops the bottle, and starts hallucinating. He hears screams and whistles, sees black liquid bubble up from the sink, the strings of his piano appear to be cut to shreds, and a bottle of blood flies across the room at him and crashes into the elevator door. In a flashback, Sancho prays that his wife and children will be taken care of. The priest arrives to take Sancho away. He is to be exorcised, and his flesh will be put to the flames. Nick changes to the vampire state and demands Sancho's release. Although LaCroix calls it crass showmanship, Nick claims to be a demon and says that Sancho refused to join them. Sancho is released, and Nick and LaCroix growl as lamb's blood is hurled at them and their cell is set on fire.

Tracy calls Nick, who has gone home sick, but there is no answer. She assumes that he went right to bed. Reese says he's never seen anyone look so pale.

Nick drags himself to the Raven and, again, can't stop himself from changing. He takes a beautiful female vampire into a back room. They get wildly passionate, then he starts choking her. LaCroix comes in and says that it's a pleasant surprise to see Nick like this. The female runs out, and LaCroix warns her not to breathe a word of this. LaCroix says Nick has finally come to his senses, but Nick asks for LaCroix's help because he can't control himself. Nick is highly agitated and tells LaCroix about the exorcism. LaCroix, who doesn't believe in demons, says that Nick's true nature is just coming to the fore. Nick threatens, then begs LaCroix to take him to Vanderwal.

Tied to the exorcist's table, Nick is clearly possessed. In a low, raspy voice, he claims to be the son of Belial. Vanderwal deduces that LaCroix is responsible for Nick's turmoil and asks for his help. Speaking through Nick, the demon says that Nick is already lost and belongs to him. LaCroix takes this personally and says he won't let the demon take his creation, his son, from him.

Natalie is concerned because Nick is nowhere to be found. She calls Tracy, who says that Nick probably just stopped at the drugstore on his way home. Tracy tells Natalie that Nick started acting strange on the way back from Vanderwal's, and she fills Natalie in on what happened.

In a flashback, Nick and LaCroix crash through the flames, but remain trapped by the priest, who wields a cross and a torch. Sancho returns, knocks the priest out, and frees them. Back in the present, the demon says that he's revived the vampire's taste for death. There is no semblance of Nick in the creature that thrashes about uncontrollably. As Vanderwal performs the exorcism, LaCroix holds Nick down and urges him to use his goodness to fight the demon. Using only his mind, Nick hurls LaCroix across the room. When Natalie enters, Nick breaks his bonds, leaps up, and grabs her. As he is about to bite her, she whispers, "Nick, it's Natalie," then cries, "Nick, don't!" He releases her and falls back. He convulses, then the demon is gone. Vanderwal says that the devil could not have been driven out if Nick believed that God had abandoned his soul. "Torn as he is by good and evil, Nick does have faith." LaCroix makes Vanderwal forget.

Natalie visits a troubled, melancholy Nick. He beat the devil, but says she can't imagine what it's like. He turns to her suddenly with glowing eyes. Frightened, she backs away, crying, "Don't! Don't do that!" He grabs her by the back of her neck and tells her not to be afraid. He rests his forehead against hers for a moment and listens to her heartbeat. What happened has set him back a bit. He hasn't felt such a powerful need for human blood in a long time.

**STRINGS**
written by Roy Sallows
directed by Don McCutcheon

**Guest Cast**
Joy Tanner as "Christie Black"
Peter Hutt as "Dr. Ben McGee"
with

Amanda Smith ..... Helen Neary
Caroline Yeager .....Alexandra
Joel Keller ..... Matthew Neary
Natalia Jasen ..... Rose Woolcott
Victor A. Young ..... Czar Nicholas
Sam Malkin ..... Rasputin
Elizabeth Brown ..... Captain Forrest

**Synopsis**

Helen Neary gets off a bus and begins walking. A car deliberately runs her down and sends her crashing into a store window. The driver gets out and shoots her five times.

While investigating, Tracy gets a call from her father on her cellular phone. Annoyed, she tells him that she's got to go. He is trying to get her to take a transfer to Corporate Crime Division.

Records is having a hard time tracking down Helen's daughter, but Nick and Tracy go to the apartment of her son, Matthew Neary, to notify him. When Nick knocks and announces that it's the police, Matthew rushes out through a window. Tracy's father calls her again, and she tells him that she hasn't made a decision yet. In a flashback, Czar Nicholas tells Nick that the czarina won't do anything without the consent of the monk, Rasputin. Their son, Alexi, is very ill, and Alexandra believes that only Rasputin can save him. Rasputin controls her every thought, and some believe that she has gone mad. Nick meets Rasputin and sees that he is a vampire. Tracy finds a letter in Matthew's apartment and discovers that his sister is Christie Black, the singer.

They visit the address on the letter. It is the home and clinic of Dr. Ben McGee, Christie's therapist, who says that her case requires constant supervision. Christie is watching home videos and listening through headphones. She is withdrawn and hardly looks at or speaks to anyone. They tell her about her mother's death, but in deference to her fragile mental state, they say it was a hit-and-run. When Christie goes for a glass of water, they tell McGee that it was actually murder. Tracy recalls that Christie's drug problems started when her boyfriend, Gary Wilton, committed suicide by shooting himself at Pier 5. McGee says that she would have gone over the edge even without that. McGee worries that Christie is taking too long, then finds the front door open and Christie gone. Nick uses his supernatural hearing to find her walking down a road, repeating, "Center yourself." She deliberately steps into the path of an oncoming car, but Nick pulls her to safety. She snaps out of her reverie and breaks into tears. McGee takes her back to the house.

Commissioner Vetter has notified Reese that Tracy will be transferring off his watch and will be working for Captain Forrest at Corporate Crime. Tracy insists that it wasn't her idea and says that she hasn't even decided yet if she's going to take the transfer. She knows it would be a smart career move, but the more her father pushes her, the more she doesn't want to do it.

Natalie tells Nick that some people call McGee a miracle worker. He works on very high profile cases, and if you've got enough money, you're not crazy, merely eccentric. McGee is a whiz at hypnotherapy and chemical conditioning, but Natalie is not a fan of his behavioristic approach. She believes in treating the disease, not just the symptoms. She adds that McGee tends to take over his patients' lives. In a flashback, Nick speaks with Alexandra and guesses Alexi's symptoms: weakness, paleness, aching bones, fever, intolerance for bright light, and constant thirst. Nick says that he is familiar with the ailment and that Rasputin's treatments cannot save Alexi. But Rasputin controls Alexandra's mind, and she says that any who oppose him must die.

Christie cries over her mother's death, and McGee says that Christie was weak when she tried to kill herself. He reminds her of how much she has been through and insists that she is strong enough to do what she has to do to survive. He tells her to center herself and get back to it. She dons the headphones and watches the home videos.

Tracy tells Nick that her father never let her learn how to make her own decisions. She says that people need to feet in control of their lives. If not, a little piece of them goes crazy.

At McGee's house, Tracy tells Nick that she thinks she's going to take the transfer. Matthew shows up and fires one shot. He accuses McGee of messing up his sister's head. Nick arrests him.

At the precinct, Matthew tells the detectives that Christie has lost her identity and is under McGee's complete control. They tell him that his mother was murdered and ask why he ran when they tried to notify him at his apartment. He says it was because he was carrying drugs.

The police decide to hold Matthew on the weapons charge and to tell Christie that her mother was murdered. She's the only one they haven't really questioned. Reese tells Tracy that her transfer has gone through, and she will start in Corporate Crime tomorrow night.

"The Nightcrawler" muses about "bumping through history." In a flashback, Nick learns that it was LaCroix who brought Rasputin across, but he's turned out to be more of a handful that LaCroix anticipated. He's headstrong, quite mad, and not even a real monk. LaCroix says that we're all under one form of control or another - the czar under the czarina, the czarina under Rasputin, and Rasputin under LaCroix. Nick asks who LaCroix is under, but gets no response. Rasputin has begun to resist LaCroix and has forgotten the source of his power. And LaCroix would have handed him the nation on a platter. Two soldiers enter. and at a nod from LaCroix, they shoot Rasputin repeatedly. LaCroix orders Rasputin thrown in the river. He knows it won't kill him, but it will catalyze events. "Revolution, you see," he instructs Nick, "is all in the timing."

Tracy learns that she will be working in the Forensic Accounting Department and is shown to her cubicle.

Christie shows up at the office of Rose Woolcott, her business manager and the woman she was watching on the videotapes. Christie shoots her five times.

Nick investigates the murder of Rose Woolcott, and since the time of death was within the last twelve hours, Matthew Neary is off the hook. He was in holding at the time.

Captain Forrest drops a large file off at Tracy's desk. An investment broker named Loren is suspected of bilking his clients out of tens of thousands of dollars, and Tracy must follow the various paper trails. Tracy lets it be known that she doesn't find her new work very exciting, and she and Forrest get off to a bad start.

Christie shows up at the police station and wants to see her brother. Since Matthew is about to be released, Reese lets Christie see him. She leaves her purse with an officer at the front desk. In the interview room, Christie cries about her mother, and the guard goes to get her some water and tissues. Matthew tells Christie that he doesn't think McGee is good for her. They embrace, and she says that she doesn't care what he thinks. Christie claims that Matthew wants to hurt her. She takes a gun out of her jacket, shoots him five times, and leaves.

In her cubicle, Tracy is accessing the records of Christie Black Music Enterprises, rather than working on the Loren file. Forrest catches her, and Tracy admits to being insubordinate. She feels that she should be tracking down a killer, rather than doing what Forrest tells her to do. She adds that Forrest is too busy trying to score brownie points with her father to do anything about it.

Tracy calls Nick, meets him at McGee's house, and tells him that Christie had no motive for murder. No one else can get at the fortune until Christie dies, at which point the money would stay in the corporation, to be controlled by Helen and Matthew Neary, Rose Woolcott, and Dr. McGee. "Three down, one to go," Nick remarks. Tracy wonders which one. No one is home, but they let themselves in. Nick plays one of Christie's videotapes. The tape shows Rose, Matthew, and Christie. McGee's voice in the headphones says, "This is the person that you must shoot" and tells Christie that she is strong, that it is just a dream, and not to let anyone stop her. McGee is using the tapes and drugs to make Christie kill. In a flashback, Rasputin returns to kill the czar, but Nick kills Rasputin. He tells the czar that Alexi should recover. The czar realizes what Nick is and thanks him for what he's done, but tells him to leave and never return. Nick plays another videotape, this one showing Christie and her boyfriend, Gary. If McGee is making her kill whoever is on the videotapes, she is going to kill herself, also. McGee returns, and they cuff him.

Nick flies to Pier 5 just as Christie is about to shoot herself. He says that she doesn't have to do it, but she insists that she does. He rushes over and grabs the gun just as she pulls the trigger. The bullet goes into the air. Using hypnotism, he convinces her that she doesn't have to die.

Tracy returns to work at the 96th Precinct and learns that Christie is willing to testify against McGee. Tracy's cellular phone rings, and she tells her father that they need to talk.

**FEVER**
written by Gillian Horvath
directed by Alan Simmonds

**Guest Cast**
Greg Kramer as "Screed"
Bruce Hunter as "Calvin"
with

Sarah Orenstein ..... Linda Wyatt
John Blackwood ..... Preacher
Catherine McGregor ..... Woman in Flashback
Christopher Kennedy ..... Dan Garrett
Chris Britton .....Gerald Archer

**Synopsis**

In a medical lab at Howsen Pharmaceuticals, Dr. Linda Wyatt checks Dr. Calvin Tucker's T-cell count, which is holding at 120. Tucker tells Wyatt that she's a lifesaver, then leaves. In the next room, Wyatt interrupts her assistant, Dan Garrett, who is checking some lab rats. He drops one, and it scurries off. Garrett grabs a briefcase full of notes and hurries out. Wyatt chases after him, accusing him of stealing her work. They struggle, he pushes her, and she falls down a flight of stairs to her death. Screed is in the alley behind the building and hides in a trash bin as Garrett hurries out. Screed finds the lab rat and bites it. A blood-borne virus passes into Screed.

When Nick and Tracy arrive to investigate Wyatt's death, Nick notices the bitten-into lab rat. When he bags it for evidence, the virus passes into him. Garrett tells the detectives that Wyatt must have slipped on the highly waxed floor, causing her to fall down the stairs. Nick shows Garrett the rat, and Garrett tells him that Wyatt was trying to clone a benign virus that attacks HIV. They find Calvin's name in Wyatt's appointment book. Natalie has known him since med school. He was on his way to being Chief of Surgery at Metro General when he got AIDS.

At the precinct, Cal tells Natalie and the detectives that he was looking for a miracle and was desperate enough to be one of Wyatt's test subjects. When you're staring death in the face, you'll try anything. In a flashback, Nick and LaCroix feed on plague victims in London.

Nick wonders if Wyatt's death was related to industrial espionage. A cure would be worth a lot of money. Natalie will check into Wyatt' s work to see if there was anything worth stealing.

Tracy tells Vachon about the partially chewed lab rat, and they visit Screed's lair. Screed tries to attack Tracy, but Vachon stops him, When Screed mentions "first kill, any kill," Vachon explains to Tracy about a vampire's first night and first feeding. The vampire wakes up so hungry that he'd do anything for the blood he needs. He would kill an enemy, a friend, a lover. If the first kill isn't human, the vampire doesn't hunger for humans. Screed's first kill was a rat. Realizing that Screed is starving, Vachon offers his arm, and Screed drinks from it. Tracy eyes go wide. Vachon tells her that vampires can't get sick, and yet Screed is. The virus passes into Vachon.

Vachon tells Nick about Screed biting the lab rat and says that he's been feeding him all morning, but he's still starving. In a flashback, Dr. Gerald Archer approaches Nick and LaCroix in a tavern. He has seen them walk through the city without fear and wants them to share with him whatever it is that keeps them from getting the plague. He insists that he must live and continue his work. When LaCroix says that it won't come without cost, Archer replies, "Anything." "Free consent, freely given," LaCroix says to Nick. "Let him be saved." Nick bites Archer.

Nick tells Natalie about Screed. No disease has ever touched a vampire before. "Stay out of the sun. Keep away from sharp sticks. You'll live forever. That is supposed to be the deal." She examines Screed and finds that he has a multiplying retrovirus and not much time left.

Tracy has gone through Wyatt's records and discovered that Calvin was part of a control group and has been receiving saline injections. Nick and Tracy theorize that Calvin might have killed Wyatt after figuring out that he was being given a placebo.

Calvin is crushed to learn about the placebo. He actually thought he was being cured.

When Nick and Tracy arrive back at the precinct, Nick nearly collapses in the parking lot. He is distracted by the blood pulsing in Tracy's neck, but assures her that he is okay.

Screed asks Vachon to bury him down by the water, then dies in his arms.

At the Raven, LaCroix assures Nick that vampires are safe from disease. Nick acts very fidgety and keeps gulping blood from LaCroix's wineglass. In a flashback, Nick learns that Archer's patients are dying faster in his care than they were on their own and that a priest has noticed the marks on their necks. Nick reminds Archer that he brought him across so that he could help people. Now that he is immortal, however, Archer no longer cares about mortals.

Tracy visits Vachon, who is very sick. He feels the "first hunger" and nearly bites her, but pushes her away and tells her to get out before it's too late.

At the morgue, Natalie tells Tracy that she hasn't found anything in Wyatt's work that would be worth stealing or killing for. Tracy surreptitiously slips two bags of blood into her coat, then leaves. Nick arrives looking sick, weak, and barely able to stand. He is hungry and is sweating blood. His temperature is 98°, but it feels like fever to him. He nearly collapses and needs to feed, but Natalie stops him. The more blood the virus has to feed on, the faster it will multiply. The disease has progressed more slowly in Nick because his blood intake is relatively restricted. Nick wonders if the disease is nature's way of eliminating vampires. In a flashback, Nick regrets bringing Archer across. The priest believes that Archer has made a pact with the devil which allows him to grow stronger while his patients die. The priest fends off Archer's attack with a cross, then sets him on fire with a torch. Natalie gets angry with Nick for implying that God sends sickness to punish the wicked. Nick wearily replies, "Natalie, I do not claim to know what God does. I stepped out of that light too long ago." When she asks if this is the kind of mortality that he's been looking for, he answers, "Maybe it's the only kind I'm allowed." She demands to know how he can stand there and not care if he dies, not care how that will make her feel. Maybe he'd like to explain it to someone like Cal, who'd give anything in the world just to live a little longer.

Vachon is weak and doesn't want the blood that Tracy has brought. She knew there would be disadvantages in getting involved with a vampire, but dying young wasn't supposed to be one of them. He reminds her that he's not actually young. As the one usually left behind, he's buried a lot of mortal friends in 500 years. She asks when it gets easier, and he says he'll let her know.

"The Nightcrawler" discusses the ages of man: denial, when he believes he'll live forever; awareness, when he knows he won't; and acceptance, when he is ready. LaCroix coughs. A dozen have died in a single night - his children and his people, who should have lived forever.

Calvin discovers that Wyatt's "cure" only works in the test tube. HIV destroys it in vivo. Garrett becomes outraged at the idea that the project will end and that he'll lose the job he was promised. He shoves Calvin into a table, knocking some beakers to the floor The liquids mingle, and the room begins to fill with smoke. He then shoves him into a tank, causing Cal's hand to hit a lever. Vapor streams out, instantly freezing Garrett. Nick arrives and hears Cal choking and calling for help. He rushes in and gets Cal out of the room, which has filled with poisonous gas.

At the precinct, Cal explains that the antivirus works in the test tube, but HIV overwhelms it in the body. It would have taken Howsen Pharmaceuticals ten years to get it on the market, but Cal has connections and could have gotten it out in 18 to 24 months. He had promised Garrett a split if Garrett stole it for him. Cal insists that it had nothing to do with money or credit, he was trying to save lives. Instead, two people died. Reese tells Natalie that he will release Calvin on his own recognizance, and with the court calendars the way they are, Calvin might not reach trial. Natalie laments to Nick that although the case is solved, he and Calvin are both still dying.

LaCroix pays a visit to Calvin and hisses, "The search for a cure for your harmless little virus has brought my people to their knees." A whole race is dying, and LaCroix wants revenge. He bites and kills Cal.

Nick and Natalie return to the morgue and find LaCroix waiting, with Cal's body on the examining table. Nick remarks that LaCroix is no longer sick, and Natalie realizes that the HIV that he took in when he killed Cal has destroyed the virus in his body.

Tracy sits at Vachon's bedside. They both know that he won't live another night. When Vachon sees Nick arrive and stand in the shadows, he sends Tracy away. Nick removes a blood-filled syringe from his coat pocket and tells Vachon to give him his arm.

Natalie plants a tree by Cal's grave, and Nick asks why she saved the lives of vampires. She answers that there are people who believe that AIDS is not worth curing and that men like Calvin Tucker are not worth saving. Who are they to decide that? Who is she?

Vachon buries Screed by the water and drinks a toast, saying, "See you in hell, sailor."

**DEAD OF NIGHT**
written by Michael Sadowski
directed by Jon Cassar

**Guest Cast**
Kari Matchett as "Alyssa"
with

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| Jack Duffy | Spencer | Barbara Radecki | Andrea King |
| Peter Keleghan | Gefford Weintroff | Catherine Williams | Female Cop |
| Leon Pownall | Davis Ogden | Kim Bourne | Shirelle |
| Corinne Conley | Nanna Tash | Adam Bramble | Priest |
| Courtney Greig | Young Tracy | Maia Filar | Susan |
| Richard Sali | Jack Scalley | Panou Mowling | Jimmy Reese |

**Synopsis**

Andrea King shows an old, reportedly haunted house to a very ill-tempered potential buyer, Gefford Weintroff. The power is off, and Weintroff orders the caretaker, Carl Spencer, to get some damn lights. The owner, Davis Ogden, isn't there, so Andrea goes to call him on her car phone. Alone upstairs, Weintroff hears his name whispered, then the balcony doors open of their own accord. He steps out, then spins back around, saying, "What the hell ...?" Suddenly, he goes over the railing and is impaled on a fence post below. A figure watches from the balcony.

When Nick and Tracy investigate, Spencer tells them that the house is a spiritual channel. When questioned, Andrea reports that she thought she saw a silhouette in the window, but it was dark, and she couldn't be sure. Nick hears his name whispered. Natalie speaks to police officer Kate Nash and says that her name tag, Natasha, takes her back. Natalie's grandmother used to call her that. Nash is confused, and when Natalie looks again, she sees the tag properly. Alone upstairs, Nick hears more voices calling his name. He looks down from the balcony and sees a woman, all in white, next to his car. She looks into the car, then looks up at him. When he sees her face, he runs downstairs and rushes outside, but she is gone. The officer outside didn't see anyone. When Tracy comes out, she sees a little girl dressed in winter clothing sitting in the passenger seat of Nick's car, but Nick is in the driver's seat and says he didn't see anyone.

Nick and Tracy visit Ogden, who affirms that Kessel House is haunted. His assistant, Shirelle, can attest to that, having had encounters there. Ogden says that ghosts are merely people without bodies, searching for answers to burning questions and seeking justice where none was rendered in life. Through Kessel House, the dead come to the living for closure.

Natalie has found an anomalous bruise on Weintroff's upper thorax. The ghost of her grandmother visits her in the morgue, startling her, and asks why Natalie didn't come to see her in the hospital. Natalie squeezes her eyes shut. When she reopens them, her grandmother is gone.

Reese doesn't believe in ghosts. Since Weintroff went over the railing with sufficient force to pull it down, Reese believes that he was pushed. He has checked with the phone company and found that no calls came into or went out of Andrea's car that night, so her alibi is destroyed.

When Nick revisits Kessel House, the woman in white reappears and says, "Nicholas, you said we'd be together forever." It's his wife, Alyssa. She wants to know that Nick remembers her and how she loved him. Nick flashes back to his and Alyssa's wedding. Back in the present, Nick is speechless, and the ghost disappears. Outside, Nick finds a metal star on the ground.

Tracy tosses and turns in her sleep. In a dream, she remembers herself and her friend, Susan Feldman, dragging their sleds near some railroad tracks. Susan's sled gets caught in the tracks, and when she tries to free it, her sleeve gets caught, as well. A train approaches, and Susan yells for help. Tracy awakens with a start. Susan is outside with her sled, calling for Tracy.

Nick and Tracy visit Weintroff's partner, Jerry Scalley, who is not particularly broken up about Weintroff's death. Scalley visited the house the week before and does not believe in ghosts.

The metal star is military and has Weintroff's blood on it. Reese will try to determine the medal's origin. Tracy tells Nick about being visited by Susan's ghost.

Natalie's grandmother revisits her. When Nick and Tracy arrive at the morgue and ask who Natalie is talking to, "Nana" disappears. All three admit to seeing ghosts. Tracy predicts that Natalie's grandmother will

return, since Natalie hasn't answered her question yet. In a flashback, the bride and groom are kissing, deliriously happy. Nick promises Alyssa that they'll be together for eternity. He says that he's immortal and can give her eternal life. He reveals his vampire nature and asks if she trusts him. She does. He tells her to give herself to him, then bites her.

Scalley calls Nick and says that a ghost is trying to kill him. When he hangs up the phone, he sees the woman who pushed Weintroff off the balcony and screams, "No!" When Nick and Tracy arrive, Nick goes around back and crashes through a skylight. Out front, Tracy sees Susan again. While Tracy is distracted, the killer sneaks out. Nick finds Scalley's dead body.

Natalie reports that Scalley died of a heart attack. He was literally scared to death. Reese has found that the medal is a U.S. Army service star, of the type issued about 20 years ago. Nick guesses that Weintroff grabbed it from his assailant in a struggle. Tracy has found that Weintroff and Scalley not only go back a long way in business, but they were fraternity brothers in college, as well. Nick suggests that the ghost had it in for both of them and is calling in an old debt.

Natalie finds an anomalous contusion, similar to Weintroff's, over Scalley's sternum. Nana revisits and says she can tell that "that nice boy, Nick" likes Natalie, and "he seems like a very down-to-earth young fellow." Natalie admits that she didn't visit when Nana was dying because she resented Nana for hitting her when she was a child. Nana knows now how wrong she was and is sorry. They make their peace, and Nana disappears. Nick arrives and Natalie tearfully says that she's waited her whole life for an apology. Nick holds her. In a flashback, Nick bites his wrist and lets the blood drip into a wineglass, which he then puts to Alyssa's lips. When she awakens, they will be as one forever. When he tries to rouse her, however, she is dead. LaCroix arrives and casually says, "Oh, well, never mind. It's a subtle art. Practice will make perfect. It was your first attempt, after all." Nick took too much blood, and there was no spark of life left to be rekindled.

At Kessel House, Nick calls to Alyssa. He loved her very much and wanted them to be together forever. He is so sorry. She appears and says that she still loves him and that he is in danger. He will die there tonight, and because of what he's been and done, he'll never be with her.

Tracy reports that Weintroff and Scalley were at McClinton University in Ohio 22 years ago when an army nurse, Lieutenant Jean St. Claire, was raped and murdered at the nearby Wayland Army Base. The case is unsolved. Reese still doesn't believe in ghosts. Tracy suddenly sees the squad room in an eerie light, deserted, with papers flying and furniture spinning. She sees Susan and drops her coffee. Tracy is staring at nothing, terrified, and Reese becomes very concerned.

Alyssa forgives Nick. It gives her a great peace to see him again and to know that he remembers her. She urges him to leave. Others are coming who bear him ill will. They are souls that he dispatched from this world who cannot be appeased. She wants to help him and leads him to a pearl earring in the fireplace. Nick recalls that Shirelle was missing one pearl earring.

Just after Tracy leaves for Kessel House, Reese receives a fax with a picture of Jean St. Claire. She looks just like the woman who killed Weintroff and Scalley.

Bright lights blind Nick, and dozens of ghosts converge on him. While running through the house, he finds Ogden dead. "Jean" steps out of the shadows and jolts Nick in the chest with a cattle prod, knocking him to the floor. Shirelle removes her wig and reveals that she killed Weintroff and Scalley because her mother came to her in the house and said that they had to pay for killing her. She killed Ogden because he was planning to tear the house down, and she would never have seen her mother again. She shoots Nick, then leaves. The ghosts converge again, and Nick crashes out through a window. Outside, Tracy is almost hit by a car when she follows Susan across the street, but Nick pulls her to safety. As Shirelle is about to shoot them, Reese shoots Shirelle. From the front porch, a soldier greets Reese with, "Hey, Little Joe." "Jordan?" Reese asks in disbelief. The soldier walks back into the house, revealing the bullet wounds in his back.

In his apartment, Nick tells Natalie that his ghost was someone he loved and lost a long, long time ago and who needed to be remembered. Natalie thinks the ghosts were projections of their own desires for closure, since they all told them things they wanted to hear. She isn't willing to go on record as having seen a ghost. According to Nick, the house will probably be torn down.

In his office, Reese gazes sadly at a photograph of Jordan in his dress uniform.

Tracy walks along the railroad cracks, lays a rose on them, and walks away.

**THE GAMES VAMPIRES PLAY**
written by Naomi Janzen
directed by Nicholas J. Gray

**Guest Cast**
Catherine Brubier as "Rita"
with

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| George Chiang | R. H. Lo | Diane Plotka | Linda Fulford |
| Kelley Grando | Virtual Beauty | Moe Kelso | Megan |

**Synopsis**

A computer programmer, R. H. Lo, is oblivious to the real world as he works out the bugs in a virtual reality computer game. Within the game, he is a vampire. As a beautiful female vampire tells him that she wants him to experience death, he is shot and killed in real life.

In the car, Tracy complains about doing all the paperwork, but Nick is lost in thought. Once it's all off her chest, she says that she feels much better, then asks if Nick heard a word she said. He replies, 'Yeah, sure. You said you were feeling better, and that s good. Isn't it?' She asks what's wrong with him, since he seems so out of it. Perplexed, he asks, "Out of what?"

Nick is tired of the repetition and routine, which concerns Natalie. Bored cops get careless, which may not be of much concern to Nick, but could prove disastrous for his partner. He has lost interest in the job, and Natalie worries that he might move on. Being a vampire gives his life a little extra kick which has been missing lately. She advises him to find something to fill the void.

Reese is concerned because Nick seems to be off his game. Like Natalie, he is concerned about how Nick's loss of focus might affect Tracy. He tells Nick to take stock of the situation.

Detective Linda Fulford from Computer Ops is assigned to help Nick and Tracy investigate Lo's murder. She says that the game is a combination of virtual reality and an on-line service. The hardware is uplinked by a digital cell phone to a mainframe at Virtual Dimensions Lab. Nick tries out the game for a moment, and when he removes the headgear, he sees a woman being brought into the station who looks just like the vampire in the game. She is Rita Scott, Lo's partner and the model for the vampire. She tells them that the remote headsets that Lo designed will revolutionize the market. She claims that she was doing an on-line interview at the time of the murder.

In the evidence room, Nick puts on the virtual reality gear. In the game, Rita tells him that to win, he must kill and keep killing. The victims' blood is his source of power. In a museum display of a boudoir, a beautiful woman begs Nick to take her, but he resists. Rita tells him that he will find what he is looking for if he makes it to the end of the game, but first, he must play. The vampire Rita admits to killing Lo, but doubts that a virtual confession is admissible in a real court. Nick finally takes the woman. A display shows that he has just less than 12 hours in which to complete the game. Rita indicates a door. He walks through and finds himself at B.C.E. Place. Reese catches him playing the game and is furious. He doesn't believe the answer is in the game.

Fulford confirms that Rita was logged on to the Internet at the time of the murder, but Nick suggests that she could have faked it, since she is a computer wizard. Since Lo's death left Rita with complete ownership of the corporation, she did have a motive for murder. Tracy, like Reese, feels that Nick is wasting his time playing the game. Fulford has analyzed the program and determined that Nick has only one chance to find whatever there is to find.

Rita is brought back to the station, where she denies killing Lo, denies playing the game with Nick, and denies confessing to the murder. Reese lets her go.

Nick visits the museum that was depicted in the game. Behind the door that Rita indicated, he finds a silver skull. He then visits B.C.E. Place and dons the headset and gloves. In the game, Rita indicates a young woman, Megan, riding up on the escalator. Nick approaches her. She is frightened and holds up a cross to ward him off. Nick goes around and grabs her from behind. She begs for her life, but Nick kills her with just under 9 hours left. When Nick removes the headset, he is in the vampire state. After returning to normal, he finds a type O blood label.

Tracy says that Reese is going to blow an important blood vessel if Nick continues the game. Fulford suggests a different approach, but Nick convinces her through hypnotism that he's on the right track. Natalie

pulls him aside for a private chat and angrily reprimands him for hypnotizing a cop in front of Tracy. It concerns her that Nick kills in the game. They have had some major setbacks recently, and although he claims to be over them, she doesn't think he is.

At home, Nick drinks blood. LaCroix pays a surprise visit and offers him a bottle of human vintage. Nick hesitates, then drinks. LaCroix believes that Nick is ever so slowly wandering back into the fold and asks what has happened to him. Nick explains about the game. He rejects LaCroix's suggestion that the game has rekindled stirrings in him and insists that he is only playing it to solve a crime. LaCroix leaves, and Nick resumes the game. He finds himself in an industrial plant and kills two workers with 6 hours, 21 minutes remaining. He rips off the headset and is, again, in the vampire state. He takes a long swallow from the bottle of human blood.

Nick visits the plant in real life and hides as two workers pass by. Involuntarily, he changes to the vampire state, but snaps himself out of it. He finds an hourglass and a truncheon.

At the precinct, Tracy examines Nick's collection of clues and is not at all supportive of his approach to the case. Reese berates him and doesn't believe that the game has anything to do with solving the crime. Nick argues with Reese, then walks out.

Al home, Nick drinks more of the human blood, then dons the gloves and headset. He finds himself in a factory. He battles a man, then kills him with 3 hours, 28 minutes remaining.

Tracy tells Reese that nothing points to Rita as the killer, but Fulford gives Nick's theory a little more credit. She explains that people get hooked on computer games because they're challenging and because it's an ego boost when you win. She suggests that Rita might be hooked on her own game. The clues that Nick has been finding are probably a game within themselves.

Nick visits the factory in real life and finds a noose and a jackknife. He dons the virtual reality gear, and Rita that tells him there is just one level left, but he can't get there until he's figured out the clues. It's a game within a game, and he has 58 minutes remaining. He removes the gear and calls Tracy to report the two new clues. Separately, they arrive at the same conclusion: it's an anagram. After hanging up, Nick jots down the clues, while Fulford keys them into the precinct's computer. The clues are: skull, O type blood label, truncheon, hourglass, jackknife, and noose. The decoding program can generate thousands of answers to a word jumble, so they should tell it whether to use first letters, last letters, or middle letters progressing. Reese suggests using "progressing," since first letters would be too easy. The computer generates "SRCPGE," and Reese asks if they get to buy a vowel. Using first letters, Nick quickly comes up with "St. John" and dejectedly mutters, "A church." Outside, the sun begins to climb in the sky.

The computer isn't generating anything helpful, so Reese suggests trying last letters.

Smoke pours from Nick's body as he runs from his car to the church. Once inside, he puts on the gloves and headset, and Rita tells him that the murder weapon is somewhere in the church.

At the precinct, they resort to first letters. From "THONSJ," Tracy suggests "John Street," but Reese gets "St. John." Tracy comments that a church is a perfect place for a vampire game.

Nick has three minutes left in the game. Wearing the headset, he can see only the virtual world. Standing on the altar wearing a special headset which covers only one eye, Rita can see both the virtual world and the real world. She says that in games, people can be whatever they want to be, and she wants to be the winner. With 1 minute, 32 seconds remaining, the vampire Rita shoots Nick in the heart with a wooden arrow, while in reality Rita fires a bullet into Nick's chest. They both remove the virtual reality gear. She reveals that she is holding the murder weapon, then shoots him three more times. While her back is turned, Nick gets up with glowing eyes and bared fangs. He grabs her and says that if she's going to play a game, she should know who she's playing against. He almost bites her, but stops himself and makes her forget that she has seen him this way. Reese, Tracy, Fulford, and two others officers arrive and take Rita away.

At Nick's apartment, Natalie says it's a good thing that Tracy showed up at the church, since Nick couldn't have gotten Rita back to the station at 8:00 in the morning. Nick considers keeping the virtual reality gear. He remarks, "Virtual vampire, virtual feeding." "Virtual killing, you mean," Natalie responds. She is scared. She knows that he enjoyed killing again, even if it was just a game. "The trouble is," she says, "these games can be addictive. It's up to you." He tells her to do what she wants, and she throws the gear into the blazing fireplace. They share a smile and hold hands briefly, then Nick turns away.

**THE HUMAN FACTOR**
written by Phil Bedard & Larry LaLonde
directed by Geraint Wyn Davies

**Guest Cast**
Deborah Duchêne as "Janette"
with

| | |
|---|---|
| Jean-Pierre Bergeron ..... Mario Larouche | Soo Garay ..... Nancy |
| Katia De Pena ..... Griffin | Galen Wyn Davies ..... Patrick McDonagh |
| Lucy Peacock ..... Peggy Bolger | David Blacker ..... Officer Peter Schull |
| David Keeley ..... Robert McDonagh | Carlo Rota ..... Roy Martin |

**Synopsis**

Mario Larouche, who is an arson investigator from Montreal, and Nancy Ebbers get a motel room after meeting in a bar. While Nancy is in the shower, Janette arrives, shoots Mario twice, and steals a key. Janette leaves, but Nancy sees her through a window when she emerges from the bathroom.

Sitting in a car outside the Raven, Janette listens to "The Nightcrawler." She flashes back to telling LaCroix that she is leaving and giving him the deed to the Raven. There is a young boy, Patrick McDonagh, in the backseat of the car, and Janette tells him that he's going to spend a few days with his Aunt Peggy.

A sketch artist works with Nancy to produce a composite of Mario's killer. Seeing that it's Janette, Nick flashes back to Janette holding his hand while LaCroix brings him across.

Nick shows the composite to LaCroix, who says that if Janette were in the city, both he and Nick would have sensed it. In a flashback, Janette tells LaCroix that she is leaving because of Nick. She likes being a vampire, but Nick's quest for humanity is causing her to have doubts. LaCroix tells Nick that Janette never told him her reason for leaving.

While driving, Janette is followed. The other car pulls up alongside and shoots at her.

Nick arrives home. In a flashback, he awakens as a vampire, and Janette welcomes him back. He reaches up, pulls her down to him, and they kiss. Nick turns to find Janette standing on the step in his apartment. She admits to killing Larouche and says that she needs Nick's help. There is some evidence that she must find before whoever shot at her finds it. She asks that Nick either arrest her, or help her, but he needn't decide right now. First, she needs some rest.

Tracy learns that a car registered to Robert McDonagh, a Montreal arson investigator who was shot and killed two weeks ago, has been found shot up and abandoned by the Civic Center.

The next night, Nick agrees to book off work and help Janette. Janette admits to Nick that she left because of him. "A vampire's heart must be cold," she tells him. "Immortality makes this so. Death is always around us, but we must never allow it to touch us. So we cannot allow the emotion of loss to infect us." After 800 years, Nick could no longer live without his humanity, and Janette began to wonder if he might be right. Eight hundred years is a long time to live with a cold heart. But Nick's search has caused him a great deal of suffering, and she didn't want to end up like that. So she went to Montreal, which has a taste of Paris, but isn't too far from the family, and got caught in the very dilemma that she left to avoid.

In the car, she tells Nick that the key is to a locker in the Civic Center. In the locker is $50,000 and the location of the next fire that Larouche was to have set. A Toronto real estate developer was paying Larouche to set and then cover up a series of Montreal arson fires. Larouche framed a friend of Janette's for the arson cover-up, then murdered him. She needs the evidence in the locker to clear his name. Janette tells Nick that she was in love with Robert McDonagh more that he could ever imagine. She wants to clear his name for his son's sake. Patrick's mother died five years ago, and Janette is his official guardian.

In Uxbridge, Tracy visits McDonagh's sister, Peggy Bolger, and asks about her brother's car. Peggy tells her that Bobby's girlfriend is driving the car while she and his son, Patrick, visit Toronto. Patrick is staying with Peggy for a few days, while Janette de Brabant visits her brother in the city. Patrick shows Tracy a picture of Janette and "Uncle Nicholas."

At the Civic Center, Janette tells Nick that she met Robert, a firefighter, when he rescued her from a burning building. He reminded her of Nick, and she realized that Nick's quest to regain his mortality was right. After getting injured that night, Robert was transferred to the arson squad. Nick asks how they could have been

together and if Janette told Robert what she was. In a flashback, Janette tells Patrick a bedtime story about Napoleon. After Patrick goes to bed, Robert marvels that when Janette tells these stories, it's like she was there. Janette tells him that she was and points out that Robert has never seen her in the daylight, never seen her eat or drink, and they have never made love. She places his hand on her heart, which is not beating, and reveals the truth about herself. Nick asks how Robert took it, and she replies that it was a long night, but love conquers all. In a flashback, Larouche offers to let Robert in on the cover-up scheme. Robert pretends to go along with it in order to confirm the cover-up, but he underestimates Larouche's ruthlessness. Nick realizes that they are being watched and suggests that they return another time. As they rush out of the Civic Center, two men chase them, and Janette gets shot in the shoulder. As she lies bleeding on the floor, she says, "I forgot to tell you. Um ... I'm mortal." A police officer, Griffin, hears the commotion and runs over in time to see Nick take Janette out.

Griffin tells Reese that the lady who got shot in the Civic Center matches the composite of Larouche's killer. The man who got her out was tall, blond, and wearing a dark coat. Tracy almost shows the photo of Nick and Janette to Reese, but changes her mind.

Nick brings Janette to Natalie for medical treatment, and Natalie wants to know how Janette regained her mortality. Janette says that she fell in love with a mortal and knew that the change was possible the first time they made love. In a flashback, Janette bites Robert while they make love, but stops herself before taking too much. She tells Nick that Robert's blood calmed her heart, not just her hunger, and that she felt warmth. Each time they made love, she needed less and less blood. Natalie is incredulous that all it took for Janette to become human was love and a little restraint, but Janette says there was a higher price to be paid than that. In a flashback, Janette walks with Robert down a street. Suddenly, from a rooftop, Larouche shoots and kills Robert. Janette tells of how she tried to bring Robert across to save his life, but it didn't work. She wanted to die herself. The vampire, or rather the killer in her, lingered until she killed Larouche, then she felt it vanish completely. She is now willing to confess and accept her punishment. Patrick still has his aunt and uncle, who love him deeply, as she does. Janette calls to check on Patrick and finds that the two men from the Civic Center are holding Peggy and Patrick hostage for the key.

Tracy seeks Natalie's advice about Nick and says that she believes he's involved with the murder suspect. Natalie assures her that Nick always tries to do the right thing.

At Peggy's house, Nick hands over the key. Rather than cutting their hostages loose, the arsonists shoot Nick and Janette, set the house on fire, then leave. Nick frees Patrick and Peggy and sends them out, with Patrick calling back, "Mom!" to Janette. Nick wants to bring Janette across to save her life, but she tells him not to do it. With Janette dying in his arms, he bares his fangs, rears his head back, and howls.

In the morgue, Natalie says that the fact that Janette regained her mortality means that they have been doing the right thing all along. And she has additional proof - she and Nick are going to have a baby. Delighted, he rushes to her and embraces her. Reese's voice on the answering machine wakes Nick from the dream and tells him that there has been a double homicide at the Civic Center.

At the Civic Center, Nick thanks Tracy for covering for him. He assures her that it won't come back to haunt them, although he cannot assure her that it was the right thing to do. The evidence in the locker proves Larouche's involvement in the cover-up. Nick tells Natalie that Patrick will be fine with his aunt and uncle. As for what happened between Janette and Robert, Nick tells Natalie that he can't take that kind of chance with her life. She thinks that she's okay with that, then points out the bite marks on the necks of the murder victims.

In Nick's apartment, LaCroix ponders the "hellish circumstance" in which Janette obtained what has proven so elusive to Nick, only to have it taken from her by Nick. Nick finds that Janette has returned to him the portrait of herself which they had fought over in the past and which later served as a peace offering between them. LaCroix doesn't know whether to laugh or to cry for Nick and says that he has lost a daughter and regained a son.

## AVENGING ANGEL

written by Alison Bingeman
directed by Alan Simmonds

### Guest Cast

Diane Cary as "Laura Stone"
with

Denise Norman ..... Battered Woman
Louisa Martin ..... Gloria Henderson
James Rankin ..... Reporter
Charmaine D. Lau ..... Mai-Loong
Peggy Coffey ..... ER Doctor
David Crean ..... Derrick Schmidt
Lindsey Connell ..... Julie Henderson
Sharry Flett ..... Barbara Vetter
Simon Sinn ..... Wei
Hardee T. Lineharn ..... Jack Henderson
Shari Hollett ..... Female Uniform Cop
Calvin Green ..... Male Uniform Cop

### Synopsis

Screams and the sound of breaking glass are heard coming from Julie Henderson's room at a shelter for battered women. Laura Stone, who runs the shelter, bursts in to find that Julie's mother has been stabbed to death. Julie is hysterical and says that her father did it.

Tracy's mother pays her a surprise visit. Although they are a bit awkward with each other, Tracy says it's good to see her again and invites her mother to stay with her while she's in town.

Outside the shelter, a reporter taping a story on the murder says that it hardly seems appropriate to call the shelter a "safe house" now. Nick becomes angry, since the house's location is supposed to be confidential. He uses hypnotism to convince the reporter that it's "a wrap."

Inside, Reese notices that there seems to be a lot more broken glass in the alley outside than there is in Julie's room. Natalie says that she stopped counting the stab wounds at twenty. No murder weapon has been found. An APB has been put out on Julie's father, Jack Henderson, who has three prior convictions for spousal abuse. In a flashback, Nick and LaCroix attend a cockfight in China. Nick dislikes it and says it's barbaric, but LaCroix calls it sport. Nick observes a man beating his concubine. LaCroix tells him to stay out of it, but when Nick intervenes, LaCroix backs him up. Nick swears to kill the man if he touches the woman again. When the man leaves, Nick tries to get the woman to come with him and says that he will see to her safety. Instead, she runs back to her master.

In the precinct, Julie says that her father must have stalked her mother when she came by the shelter to drop off some clothes. Julie left home because her father repeatedly raped her, in addition to beating her mother. Reese wants Julie held at the station for as long as possible.

On the phone, Tracy tells her father that she doesn't know what her mother is doing in town, but that the divorce and the settlement are none of her business. She then asks, "Well, what was I supposed to do? Give her a field sobriety test in my living room?" Tracy insists that she is not taking sides and gets off the phone with a headache. "Family thing," she explains to Nick. Reese sends Nick and Tracy to a clinic where a man who looks like the fax APB has just come in "all sliced and diced up." In the car, Tracy tells Nick that he's lucky not to have family. Sometimes, she's not sure whether she's supposed to be her parents' daughter, or their referee.

Reese listens as Laura visits Julie in the interview room. Laura promises that Julie's father will get what he deserves.

Nick and Tracy arrive at the clinic, and Nick goes inside to find that Henderson has slipped out. In the alley alongside the clinic, Henderson knocks Tracy down as he runs out. Henderson then trips and falls, and Tracy jumps on his back. She holds her gun to his head and says, "Go ahead, you son of a bitch. Give me a reason." Nick tells her to take it easy, and she gets off Henderson so that Nick can cuff him. Tracy admits to Nick that she's having a hard time not getting emotionally involved in this case. Noting her state of disarray, Nick comments, "You know, mud works for you."

Julie tells Reese that her father moved out a couple of months ago, but when he came back for some of his belongings, things started up again, and she had to get out.

Henderson tells Nick and Tracy that his wife brought him to the shelter to make peace with Julie, but Julie became enraged. Henderson used to have a drinking problem and says that he is honestly ashamed of the things he did to his family. He insists that he has gotten help and has changed. He says that his wife wanted a

reconciliation. Nick flashes back to finding the concubine with her throat slit. Henderson says that Julie killed her mother and would have killed him, as well, if he hadn't gone out through the window. A bloody knife is found in Henderson's motel room, but he says he used it to cut off his bloody clothes.

Tracy arrives home and is angry to find her mother drinking. Her mother claims that she was driven to drink by worrying about her husband, his brothers, and now her daughter being police officers, along with her husband's infidelity. Her mother says that Tracy became a cop because her father made her what he wanted her to be. She says that Tracy is going to wind up as lonely as she is. They argue heatedly, and Tracy ends up slapping her mother. Her mother says that she is sorry for visiting, then leaves.

Natalie reports that the knife from Henderson's room is not the murder weapon. There was no trace of Gloria Henderson's blood type on it, and besides, the tip of the blade that killed Gloria was found imbedded in her sternum. Nick again flashes back to finding the concubine dead. While Nick goes after the woman's master, LaCroix bites the woman's neck.

Derrick Schmidt from the Crown Prosecutor's Office reports that the Forensics team searched Henderson's room before the search warrant was approved. Therefore, any evidence found there is inadmissible. Upon hearing this, Laura is concerned that Henderson will get away with killing his wife, even though Nick assures her that none of the evidence pointed to his guilt.

There has been another attack at the shelter, which Nick accredits to the news report which disclosed its location. Laura is distraught and must now find safe places for all the women.

Reese must release Henderson due to lack of evidence, but is not happy about it. Henderson assures him that, even though he doesn't know it yet, he's doing the right thing.

Nick tells Reese that he's going back to the shelter to try to find some evidence against Henderson before he leaves town. Meanwhile, Reese will have a unit keep tabs on Henderson.

At the shelter, Laura sobs, then calls Julie, who is still at the police station, to ask where her father is staying. In her office, Laura looks at pictures of herself holding a baby, then at pictures of herself with bruises on her face. She removes a gun from a desk drawer and loads it.

Tracy's mother visits her at the police station, and they make their peace.

Reese and Tracy confront Julie with the fact that no bag of clothes was found in her room. Also, her father's fingerprints were found on the outside of her door, indicating that he did not come through the window. Criminologists have determined that the window was broken from the inside out.

At the shelter, Nick finds a bullet on the floor in Laura's office.

Laura goes to Henderson's hotel and shoots him repeatedly when he comes out. Seconds later, a police car arrives, and Laura is apprehended. In his car, Nick flashes back to catching and killing the Chinese man.

At the precinct, Nick and Natalie observe as Julie tells Reese and Tracy that she hated her mother for staying with her father. When her mother brought her father to the shelter to apologize, Julie just snapped. Tracy flashes back to slapping her own mother. Julie became angry at her mother for betraying her and doesn't even know how many times she stabbed her. She admits that she wanted to kill her father, too, but he jumped out the window. Tracy asks what Julie did with the knife, and Julie flashes back to slipping it into a heating grate at the base of a wall.

♪♪("AVENGING ANGEL - Time Stands Still" is on the *Forever Knight Soundtrack.*)

**FALLEN IDOL**
written by Gary Stephen Rieck
directed by Geraint Wyn Davies

**Guest Cast**
Rob Stefaniuk as "Joey"
Todd William Schroeder as "Henry Ellis"
with

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| Jim Mezon | Miles Filbourn | Layton Morrison | Nitro |
| Simon Bradbury | Director | Selina Martin | Police Woman |
| B. J. McQueen | Tank Williams | Tony Nappo | The Shark |
| Hayden Christensen | Andre | Bob King | Eddie Phelps |
| Kevin Rushton | Johnny Harris | Lina Giornofelice | Woman in Bar |

**Synopsis**

Henry Ellis, a professional wrestler known as The Bulldozer, injects himself with steroids, then pumps iron. He comments, "One hundred percent industrial grade cut steel." His 17-year old nephew, Joey Martin, enters and corrects him that only The Bulldozer is made of cut steel. Joey has a mental disability and doesn't realize that Henry and The 'Dozer are one and the same.

Later, Henry wears his costume, which includes a mask, to film a promo with another wrestler, Carl Hilbert, better known as Nitro. When Nitro refers to Joey as "Forrest Gump," the two wrestlers get into a tussle. After the promo, Henry sends Joey for towels. Joey brings them to the locker room and arrives in time to see The Bulldozer break Nitro's neck, then run off.

When Nick and Tracy arrive, Henry is frantic because he can't find Joey. He has been Joey's guardian since Joey's parents died in a car accident a couple of years ago.

Outside, Natalie is frightened by Joey, who is hiding in the backseat of her car. Realizing that he is equally afraid of her, she befriends him and takes him back inside. Henry convinces Joey to tell the detectives what he saw, and Joey reports that The Bulldozer killed Nitro.

At the precinct, Henry claims that he didn't go right to the locker room after the promo, but went to the trainer's room because he felt a twinge in his back. Tracy checks, and the trainer, Eddie Phelps, swears that he wasn't at the arena. Henry will be booked, and Natalie doesn't want Joey to be put into a facility. She wants to assume protective custody, but since she isn't a cop, she suggests that she and Nick share joint custody. Nick flashes back to the burial of his sister, Fleur. Years earlier, LaCroix loved Fleur and wanted to make her immortal, but Nick didn't want Fleur to become a vampire and convinced LaCroix to leave her behind. Before dying, Fleur wrote to Nick asking him to look after her son. Against his better judgment, Nick agrees to share custody of Joey. "And there are those who say you have a cold heart," Natalie remarks.

In the locker room, Nick finds the custodian, Johnny Harris, about to clean up in an area that has been marked off with police tape. Nick tells him to take the night off. In an open locker, Nick finds one of The Bulldozer's costumes.

At home, Nick finds Joey and Natalie making soup. "How domestic of you," he comments, then whispers to Natalie, "Just don't make me eat any." He tries to use hypnotism to get Joey to remember exactly what happened in the locker room, but Joey becomes distressed and frightened. Once Joey is asleep on the couch, Natalie tells Nick that his impairment resulted from a high fever caused by spinal meningitis when he was three years old. His brain did function normally at one time. She suggests that Nick's blood might heal the damage. In fact, there is a test sample in the fridge right now. Nick rejects the idea and says that they don't know what would happen, or how long the effects would last. He doesn't feel that it would be fair to Joey. Joey wakes up, and after Nick goes up to bed, Natalie fills a syringe with Nick's blood. Joey is concerned because Henry has told him that drugs are bad, but she assures him that it's a medicine that will help him.

At the arena, the manager, Miles Filbourn, tells Nick and Tracy that Henry had been moody and hard to deal with lately and was always picking fights. Filbourn kept Henry on only because he showed signs of improvement in the ring and because Henry had Joey to support. He goes on to say that wrestlers like The Bulldozer exist only to be beaten by wrestlers like Nitro and that Henry never had a shot at stardom. That frustration, along with the fact that Nitro threatened to bring Henry up on charges with the wrestling association, would explain why Henry killed Nitro.

At Nick's apartment, Joey watches wrestling, then turns it off because it seems stupid.

Natalie tries to modem a report from her laptop computer to her office, but gives up in frustration. With a few taps on the keys, Joey accomplishes the task. Delighted, Natalie hugs him and exclaims, "It worked! Oh, my God, it worked!" Joey doesn't understand what all the fuss is about.

Because of Henry's nervousness and mood swings, Nick surmises that he's on steroids. That would explain why Nitro threatened to have him thrown out of wrestling. Henry admits to the drug use and says that Joey doesn't know. The Bulldozer is Joey's hero, and Henry says that Nick doesn't know what it's like to be put on a pedestal like that. In a flashback, LaCroix visits Nick and his nephew, Andre. After Andre goes to bed, LaCroix wonders what would happen to their very caring relationship if Andre knew the truth about Nick. Nick plans to tell Andre, and he doesn't believe that it will make a difference. Henry tells Nick and Tracy that the real reason he didn't go right to the locker room after the promo was that he was buying steroids from the trainer, Eddie Phelps, in the north stairwell. He also tells them that Phelps was late meeting him.

Nick arrives home and finds Joey nervously tapping away at Natalie's computer. He is trying to access the university's library and becomes frustrated and agitated when asked for a password. When Nick shoots Natalie an accusing look, she says that she's sorry, but that she had to do it. Joey is edgy and volatile, and Nick points out that Natalie didn't consider the side effects.

At the precinct, Joey gives a much clearer account of what he witnessed. He understands now who The Bulldozer is, and he knows about Henry's steroid use. He recalls that the killer was not wearing The Bulldozer's robe, but was wearing gloves that are not part of the costume. Also, the killer wouldn't speak to him, but Henry would have. Joey realizes that Henry is not the killer.

In the arena's stairwell, Phelps sells steroids to a wrestler named Shark. Nick arrests him and confirms Henry's alibi.

In the morgue, Joey becomes frustrated with the computer and angrily demands another injection, but Natalie refuses. Henry arrives to find Joey distraught and violent, and he demands to know what Natalie did to him. Joey grabs Natalie's medical bag and runs out, knocking Henry down. He returns to Nick's apartment and gets the vial of blood from the refrigerator.

In the locker room, Harris returns a mended costume to a wrestler named Tank, and Nick notices the yellow rubber gloves that he carries. Harris has access to all the lockers. Tank mentions that Harris wanted to be a wrestler, but he washed out, and he keeps bugging Filbourn for another chance. Nick tells Tracy to call it in, then chases and apprehends Harris. Nick then gets a call from Natalie and is told about the problem with Joey.

In Nick's apartment, Joey smashes a mirror, then goes through Nick's belongings and finds a Raven matchbook. When Nick, Natalie, and Henry arrive, Joey is gone.

At the Raven, Joey is approached by a pretty, smiling girl. He is delusional, however, and imagines everyone laughing at him. He screams, breaks a bottle, and grabs the girl by the neck.

At the precinct, Harris confesses to the murder. He thought that eliminating some of his competition would give him a shot at being a wrestler. Natalie tells Henry that she gave Joey some pills to help his mental process. Without it, Henry would have been convicted of murder. But Henry is more concerned that Joey now knows about his drug use and that he is no longer Joey's hero. He won't be able to get that back and says that Nick will never know how that makes him feel. In a flashback, Andre discovers Nick feeding on a woman. Horrified, Andre cries, "No!" and runs out. LaCroix enters and simply laughs when Nick says, "Damn you, LaCroix." Reese reports that someone matching Joey's description is causing a disturbance at the Raven.

At the Raven, LaCroix calmly observes the "floor show." Nick, Natalie, and Henry arrive and talk Joey into releasing the girl. Joey is distressed because he realizes that the effects of the injection are wearing off and because his illusions of his uncle have been shattered. He thanks Natalie for the insight, then slashes his wrist. Nick and Natalie rush to his aid.

Nick and Natalie arrive in the nearly empty arena, long before the match is to begin, and take first row seats. Nick convinced Filbourn to give Harris's old job to Henry, and Henry and Joey are setting up chairs. Natalie asks if she was wrong to try to help Joey, and Nick assures her that Henry and Joey are happier now than they were three days ago. When asked who he picks in the fourth, Nick tells her, "This is wrestling. That's horse racing." "I knew that," Natalie replies.

**JANE DOE**
written by Michael Sadowski
directed by Nicholas J. Gray

**Guest Cast**
Ron White as "Jordan Manning"
with

Marilyn Denis ..... Host
Duff MacDonald ..... Hitler
Robbie Rox ..... Big George
Rena Polley ..... Nurse
Steve Michalchuk ..... Gypsy
Francisca Zentilli ..... Uniformed Cop
Paul Miller ..... Lt. Miller

**Synopsis**

A woman's body is dragged from a car and hung from a tree by her wrists.

In disgust, Reese watches Jordan Manning being interviewed on a talk show about his novel, *Killing Mind,* which he wrote while incarcerated for manslaughter. The controversial book is a fictional, first-person account of a serial murder spree. Manning believes that evil is not extraordinary, but banal and commonplace. He believes that if the right conditions are met, even the sanest person can commit the most heinous of crimes.

In the morgue, Natalie shows Nick, Tracy, and Reese the badly decomposed body that some hunters found in a tree. She estimates that the woman has been dead three to four weeks. The woman is a black female, approximately 20 to 30 years of age, but can't be identified through dental records because she was shot in the face to conceal her identity. She is too decomposed to obtain fingerprints. Tracy gets queasy and has to leave. Natalie says that the woman may have been strangled before she was shot. Reese calls it desecration and says that he knows who did it.

At the police station, Reese tells Nick and Tracy that Manning is the most vile and racist individual he's ever come across. They may think they've been around and have seen some sick people, but they've never encountered evil like this. In a flashback, Nick and LaCroix sit facing a soldier and a gypsy on a train in Germany. The gypsy's hacking cough is annoying, and LaCroix uses his powers of persuasion to convince the man to "get lost." The corporal thanks him and says that it's beyond him why stinking gypsies are allowed to ride the train with good soldiers. Reese shows Nick and Tracy a list of unsolved murders of black Jane Does from all across North America, going back twenty years. They were all lynched in one way or another, which is the killer's trademark. When Reese was a vice cop, one of the girls on his beat, Donna Kensit, told him that a man fitting Manning's description was harassing the girls. She was later murdered, but no one was charged. Manning ended up doing seven years for manslaughter after killing a man in a barroom brawl. In order to force Tracy to deal with her squeamishness, Reese assigns her to work with Natalie and orders her to stay on the case until the woman has been identified.

Dressed in surgical gear, Tracy assists Natalie with the autopsy.

At a book signing, Manning passes a copy of his book to Reese. It is inscribed: "To my favorite loser, Joe Reese, 'Per me si va tra la Perduta Gente,' Jordan Manning." Nick tells Reese that the Italian is from Dante's *Inferno.* It's part of the inscription of the entrance to hell, and it means, "This way to join the Lost People." Reese says that in the book, Manning admits to the murders. It's all there if you read between the lines. As Manning prepares to leave, he remarks that Reese has finally been teamed with an Aryan, meaning Nick. Reese grabs him by the throat and accuses the "sick son of a bitch" of killing another woman. Nick tells Reese to take it easy and gets him to release Manning. Upon hearing that Reese is now a captain, Manning remarks, "Thank God for affirmative action, huh, Joe?" Nick pushes him back and says, "That's enough out of you." Manning leaves, and Nick apologizes, then asks what the hell is the matter with Reese.

Tracy discovers fibers under the victim's fingernails, and Natalie discovers needle marks that are too neat to suggest that the victim was a "user." Perhaps she was a diabetic.

Manning sends flower to Reese at the station, along with a copy of his itinerary going back six months. The note reads: "Something for the wife. You'd have picked them yourself, but I know you don't have the time." They are cotton flowers, and Reese throws them away.

Reese tells Nick that the killings in the book include details from the real murders that only the killer would know. Reese reveals that he was one of the officers who arrived on the scene of Manning's bar fight.

Manning was holding a .38, and Reese could have taken him out. But Reese held back, and Manning put the gun down. He says that Nick doesn't know what it's like living with the idea that you could have changed history, but didn't. In a flashback, the corporal does a sketch of LaCroix and gives it to him. Feeling that they see eye to eye on many issues, he invites LaCroix to join his political organization. LaCroix declines, saying that he's above such concerns.

In a warehouse, Manning pays a fellow ex-convict to beat him up.

Miller from Internal Affairs brings photos of Manning's battered face. Manning has filed a complaint against Reese, and an investigation is pending. Meanwhile, Reese is restrained from contacting or approaching Manning.

In the morgue, Tracy is taking oxygen to recover from the postmortem. Natalie tells her that the fibers she found under the fingernails were human hairs. There is no evidence of diabetes or illicit drug use, but Tracy points out that the position of the puncture marks suggests selfadministration. Tracy suggests that they might have been the result of vaccinations, but who vaccinates themselves? "A doctor," Natalie replies.

Reese tells Nick that he reported his suspicions about Manning when he was a vice cop, but no one would listen to him. Reese tells Nick to watch Manning, since he can't.

While listening to "The Nightcrawler" read from Manning's novel, Nick flashes back. On the train, LaCroix tells Nick that he senses something special about the corporal. LaCroix and Nick both sense hatred and evil in the corporal, and LaCroix is considering bringing him across. Nick urges LaCroix to kill the corporal and be done with it, rather than amplify his evil.

Manning has asked Reese to meet him at the warehouse, and Nick surreptitiously observes the encounter. Manning says that he's becoming very fond of Reese - even though he's a lower life form. Manning claims to be on a mission. He is sowing the seeds of the apocalypse, and if some of Reese's people are sacrificed, they will have served a purpose that Reese will never understand. Reese punches Manning, then grabs him by the hair and holds a gun to his head. He says that he's going to make Manning's worst nightmare come true by throwing him in with some of the biggest, baddest, meanest brothers in the pen and telling them what Manning is all about. Outside, Nick tells Reese that he saw everything. Reese reveals that he obtained some hair samples from Manning. He tells Nick to stay on Manning and not to lose him.

At Toronto University General Hospital, Tracy learns that Dr. Miriam Nyanda completed her residency six weeks ago, then left to go back to Kenya to open a clinic. She was going to a very remote area, and no one expected to hear from her soon, so no one has reported her missing.

At the precinct, Tracy reports that Nyanda participated in experimental drug studies on volunteer prisoners at Millhaven during her internship two years ago. One of the prisoners was Manning. Her coworkers said that Nyanda was the kind of person who talked to anyone and shared her life with everyone. Reese concludes that Manning had designs on Nyanda for a long time and that he targeted her. Natalie arrives and reports that the hair samples that Reese obtained match the samples from under the victim's fingernails.

The police arrive as Manning is checking out of his hotel. Reese pursues him down a stairwell and through the corridors of another floor. Everywhere Manning runs, he finds Nick waiting for him. Manning is finally trapped between Nick and Reese, and Reese arrests him.

Reese tells the press that a number of unsolved cases will be reopened based on evidence recovered from Manning's personal effects. He adds that Manning's arrest is the end of a very long and personal nightmare. Everyone will rest easier knowing that Manning is in custody.

In prison, Manning tears his shirt into strips and forms it into a rope. He bites his finger and writes, "NO JUSTICE JOE" in blood on the prison wall. With one end of the rope tied to the bars and the other around his neck, he throws himself forward, strangling himself.

At the Raven, LaCroix tells Nick that he came very close to bringing the corporal across, but a feeling came over him which stopped him. The feeling intimidated LaCroix. He realized that, as Nick said, the corporal's vile power did not need to be amplified. LaCroix often wonders how the world would be different if he had done what he intended. He removes the sketch, signed by A. Hitler, from his jacket pocket, and bums it.

**FRANCESCA**
written by Gillian Horvath
directed by Nigel Bennett

**Guest Cast**
Maurice Dean Wint as "Frank"
Brooke Johnson as "Lisa Kadlec"
with

Maria Syrgiannis ..... Francesca
Hamish McEwan ..... Gordon Fuller
Todd Dulmage ..... Faubert
Chris Cound ..... Man #1

**Synopsis**

Amid flashbacks of a beautiful female vampire stabbing her victim, then drinking his blood, a man is stabbed, and his throat is cut in an empty restaurant. A kiss print is left on his forehead.

Frank LoPietro is undergoing past life regression with the help of his psychiatrist, Dr. Lisa Kadlec. He remembers being the female vampire, Francesca, passionately exchanging blood with another vampire - a crusader who has turned away from the light. The crusader is Nick. When Frank snaps out of it, he doesn't remember anything.

The body of Dan Chase is found in the restaurant. In a flashback, Nick and LaCroix visit another of LaCroix's vampire offspring. Lucien LaCroix introduces Francesca, the Comtesse du Montaigne, to Nicholas Chevalier, and they are enchanted with each other. At the scene of the murder, Tracy can't shake the feeling of déjà vu. Natalie suggests that the killer is substituting killing for sex and says that they should be looking for a woman with a highly repressed sexuality.

Nick learns that the victim had a gourmet meal shortly before death and that the kiss print is a mixture of lipstick and the victim's blood. Although there are no fang marks, the killer apparently drank the victim's blood. Nick tells Natalie that stabbing a victim in the heart, causing sudden death, sweetens the blood, but stops the circulation. Without the beating heart to bring the blood to the neck, the victim's blood must be drained. In a flashback, the three vampires are entertained by a group of musicians in Francesca's home. The violinist, Faubert, is particularly impressive. All of Francesca's guests must earn her approval, but Nick will not have to sing for his supper. Nick tells Natalie that he knew a vampire who killed in this manner, but she is dead.

When Nick and Tracy investigate a similar murder in a parking garage, a reporter, Gordon Fuller, presses Tracy for information. Tracy brushes him off and admits to Nick that she dated him once. "Oh, yeah?' he asks. "Anything serious?" "No," she replies. "I mean, I dated him once."

While undergoing another regression in Kadlec's office, Frank says that he is Francesca and that the year is 1755. Highly agitated, he identifies his lover and killer as Nicholas Chevalier.

In a dream, Tracy lies on her bed with her throat cut. Francesca enters and kisses Tracy's forehead, leaving a kiss print. Tracy wakes up with a start.

Frank breaks into Dr. Kadlec's office and steals the cassette tapes of his sessions from her filing cabinet. He misses the one that is still in the tape recorder, however. At home, he listens to the tapes and flashes back to Francesca entering Nick's room and waking him up. Nick begins kissing her and whispering her name. She tells him that they said all they needed to say last night. She gives Nick a chalice, and with one taste, he realizes that it contains the blood of Faubert.

Nick explains to Natalie that with one sip of Faubert's blood, he knew who it was, what he thought, who he loved, and how he died. Every drop of blood has your whole life in it. It's not just a vampire's food. It's the way they feet life. By sharing someone's blood, you know their soul. Everything you know and everything you are is transformed into touch and taste. He asks Natalie to imagine the temptation to take just one sip, and then another, and then another. By taking the person inside you, you know every secret, and they know yours. You become that person. Natalie is fascinated, and Nick explains that that's what makes it such a tough habit to break.

Tracy visits Vachon, who explains that there are vampires who get off on the death rush. If the killer is a vampire, Tracy doesn't know what she will do when she finds her.

Dr. Kadlec visits the precinct, having decided that doctor-patient privilege goes out the window when the patient could be dangerous. She has read about the murders, and they resemble Frank's fantasies. Frank

believes that he is the reincarnation of an 18th-century countess - a vampire. She plays the remaining tape, in which Frank describes killing. At the moment of death, everything that the victim is feeling pours into the blood, and there is nothing sweeter. Frank came to Kadlec three months ago because he was disturbed by dreams in which he saw himself as a woman making love to a man. He felt the urge to be that woman, yet had always been heterosexual. All of Frank's stories were from the perspective of a female vampire, Francesca du Montaigne. In a flashback, Nick is furious with Francesca for killing Faubert. Nick does not appreciate art by killing it. With Faubert's essence coursing through them, they would be able to play the violin as Faubert did, but it would last only a couple of hours. Angry that Faubert's genius and passion have been wasted, Nick throws Francesca onto the bed and storms out. Kadlec mentions that Frank's vampire fantasy included a mysterious lover, Nicholas Chevalier.

At home, Frank transforms himself into Francesca with makeup, a wig, and a dress.

Kadlec explains that Francesca is a manifestation of Frank's sexual desire. For a vampire, killing is sexual. Nick and Tracy feel that Frank believes he has permission to kill, since that's part of a vampire's nature. Kadlec agrees to work with a sketch artist to produce a composite of Frank.

Nick and Tracy visit Frank's apartment. Frank is gone, but Nick flashes back to Francesca.

Nick discusses reincarnation with LaCroix, who asks whom Nick intends to arrest - Frank, or Francesca's soul. If this is Francesca, LaCroix doubts that she remembers Nick fondly.

Tracy asks Kadlec about dreams. Kadlec says that troubling dreams and instances of déjà vu often indicate that something hidden on a subconscious level is trying to reveal itself. The answer might be right in front of Tracy, but she just isn't seeing it. Usually, all the clues are there, but you can't put them together if you're not open to self-discovery. Kadlec gives Tracy her card.

Natalie has trouble accepting the idea of reincarnation - even though she is in the habit of believing ten unbelievable things before breakfast every day, starting with Nick. Nick fears that if vampires' souls are immortal, the evil in him will just infect someone else if and when he dies.

Fuller hangs around the precinct and retrieves Kadlec's business card after Tracy discards it.

Vachon hems and haws when Tracy asks if the name Nicholas Chevalier means anything to him. Tracy feels that there is something obvious about the case which she is just not seeing.

Fuller visits Kadlec at her office, but is thrown out when he asks about the man in the composite drawing. Seconds later, Frank arrives, dressed as Francesca. Wielding a knife, he accuses Kadlec of sending the police to his house. The tape recorder is left running in Kadlec's office, and when the police discover it, they bring Fuller down to the station. Fuller reports that he didn't see the man in the composite, only a tall, dark-haired woman in a long dress. They realize that Frank becomes Francesca when he kills, and Fuller agrees to help alter the composite.

Frank brings his prisoner, Dr. Kadlec, a gourmet meal and says that he is all that is left of Francesca. Although she died long ago, he still remembers her beauty, her passion, and her needs. In a flashback, Nick finds the remaining musicians being kept in cages. Francesca urges him to come away, saying that a chef doesn't spend his time in the slaughterhouse. The humans mean no more to her than cattle mean to humans. Nick releases the prisoners, then battles Francesca. She grabs a burning stake from the fireplace and comes at him, but he pushes her away, and she lands sprawled in a doorway. Nick grabs a warring ax, a guisarme, from the wall and throws it, severing a rope which holds a gate raised above the doorway. The gate comes down, spiking and killing Francesca.

Recalling Francesca's words about the chef in the slaughterhouse, Nick flies to Frank's apartment building and finds him in the basement, holding a knife to Kadlec's throat. Frank recognizes Nicholas Chevalier. He grabs a guisarme from a display of medieval weaponry on the wall and hurls it at Nick. The weapon misses Nick and sticks into the door. Frank grabs a burning stake from a wood stove and charges at Nick. Nick evades the attack, and Frank runs into the door, driving his throat into the sharp point of the guisarme. Flashing back, Frank says that it's not the first time Nick has killed him. He says there'll be another time, then dies.

Kadlec is fine, although she doesn't remember much. Tracy is glad the case is over, since it gave her the creeps. Nick tells Natalie that Francesca is gone for now, but her soul will return.

Tracy visits Kadlec as a patient because her disturbing dream makes her wonder if she was killed by Francesca in a former life. Kadlec tells Tracy to relax and count backwards from ten. When Tracy reaches three, she flashes on Faubert and asks Kadlec, "Do you hear music?"

**ASHES TO ASHES**
written by Phil Bedard & Larry LaLonde
directed by Jon Cassar

**Guest Cast**
Kathryn Long as "Divia"
with
Ron Obadia ..... Hamid Karam Kristin Lehman ..... Urs

**Synopsis**

Hamid Karam breaks into a tomb in Egypt. Speaking to his brother through a headset, he worries that he will be destroyed if the legend of the sun god Re'-Atum is right. His brother reminds him that the only legend which concerns them deals with the treasure. Hamid brings his pickax down on the symbol of Re'-Atum, breaking open the lid of the middle sarcophagus. Bright light and smoke pour from the sarcophagus, and Hamid screams in terror.

Returning to the Raven after going for a walk, LaCroix gets an uneasy feeling.

Nick gets a call at the station. A girl's voice tells him, "There's a corpse at the Raven."

LaCroix finds Vachon and Urs sleeping in a back room of the Raven. Urs asked Vachon to come over because she was frightened by a nightmare and felt an evil presence. LaCroix finds a headless body in a refrigerator behind the bar, then notices a box. He opens the box and finds a cameo necklace. In a flashback, LaCroix's daughter, Divia, brings him to a tomb, where he feels an evil presence. The box also contains a severed head. Nick and Tracy arrive with two uniformed officers. LaCroix pockets the necklace and shows them his gruesome discovery.

At the police station, LaCroix tells the detectives that he has no idea who the victim is, or how he wound up in the Raven's refrigerator. LaCroix can't be charged with anything at this point, but Reese wants him held as a material witness. Reese feels that LaCroix may not be guilty of this, but he sure as hell is guilty of something.

Tracy felt an evil presence at the Raven and asks Vachon if LaCroix is a vampire. Vachon says that he isn't. Tracy says that she and Vachon would never work because she can feel the evil that is a part of him, and it scares her. Nevertheless, she asks him to call her when he gets home.

On his way home, Vachon finds a girl crying in an alley and asks if someone hurt her. With a supernatural strength far beyond his, she grabs his wrist and forces him to the ground. She tells him, "Lucius hurt me. My father. My son." She raised him from the ashes of Pompeii, and he betrayed her. Now, Vachon will pay for her father's sins. She slashes his face and bites him.

Hamid's body has been identified, but no one knows how the Egyptian graverobber wound up at the Raven after his brother lost contact with him. Natalie reports that Hamid was torn to shreds, as if by a wild animal.

Nick visits LaCroix's cell and finds all the other prisoners huddled meekly in a comer. "Clearly," LaCroix remarks, "I have a future as a sobering influence on the disenfranchised." Nick informs him that he is going to be released due to lack of evidence, then he informs him of Hamid Karam's identity. When LaCroix hears that Hamid was looting an ancient burial chamber in the Valley of Kings, he flashes back. Divia brings LaCroix to the tomb of Ayahotep, the son of Re'-Atum. Divia reveals that she killed the ancient vampire, Qa' Ra, who brought her across. Qa' Ra was among the first vampires and lived long before the pyramids were built. Divia staked him and left him to be scorched by the sun, then interred him in the sarcophagus so that the symbol of the sun god would imprison him for all time.

When Urs visits Vachon, he attacks her, but she throws him off. He begs her to "make it stop." He is being bombarded with Divia's memories and visions of killing. His wounds have not healed, and when Urs asks who did this to him, he mutters, "Daughter, mother, daughter, mother." He doubles over in pain and tells Urs to get out before she is destroyed. He then calls Tracy to say that he knows who is doing this and why the body was at the Raven. He doubles over again and screams in pain. Tracy rushes over.

In a flashback to ancient Rome, LaCroix returns home and learns that his daughter, Divia, who was ill, has been cured by an ancient healer, as if by magic. But she has changed, somehow.

In the flashback, Divia wears the cameo necklace. Nick listens as "The Nightcrawler" gets a call from a young girl. "Hello, Lucius," she says. "It's been a very long time." LaCroix is shocked to hear her voice. She

says that when LaCroix's friends all die, or the fear of death drives them away, LaCroix will know what it is like to be betrayed by your own child and left alone in the darkness.

While on her way up to visit Nick, Urs is attacked and killed by Divia. Nick finds Urs's body in the elevator. She has been mauled, as if by an animal.

Tracy finds Vachon nearly incoherent. Divia's thoughts are becoming his. He tells Tracy that he is not healing. He is dying.

Nick can't understand why Urs didn't regenerate, since she wasn't staked or decapitated. Natalie suggests that she might have been attacked by some new breed of vampire, but Nick recalls the girl's words on the radio and thinks that perhaps it is a very, very old one.

At the Raven, Nick asks LaCroix if the young girl is someone whom he brought across. In a flashback, Mt. Vesuvius erupts, and Pompeii is being destroyed. Divia tells LaCroix to choose between life and death. He chooses to live, and she brings him across. LaCroix has never before told Nick that his master was his daughter. LaCroix flashes back to twenty years after the destruction of Pompeii. Divia reveals to LaCroix that she killed her master because she didn't want to be controlled by him. Qa' Ra brought her across because he felt that her evil was pure, then he tried to harness it. She refused to be made in anyone else's image. Divia tells LaCroix that they are free do to whatever they please, without restriction. They can do everything that is forbidden. She asks LaCroix to make love to her, and he angrily refuses. She persists, and he decapitates her with a sickle. LaCroix tells Nick that he put Divia's remains in the sarcophagus, and the sun god on the lid acted on her in the same way that a cross would act on them until the graverobber broke the seal. LaCroix has felt guilty all these years about killing his daughter, but Nick says he didn't have a choice. LaCroix replies that he could have done as Divia asked and not despised himself any more than he does now. LaCroix says that he saw an evil in his own daughter that he couldn't bear to took upon. It was an evil that she inherited from him, magnified a hundred times by the one who brought her across. Perhaps the evil that permeated the tomb sustained her all those years and enabled her to regenerate. He says that Divia won't come after him quite yet. There is more killing to be done. As Nick is about to leave, he puts his hand compassionately on LaCroix's shoulder and says, "If you need me ..." LaCroix quietly thanks him.

Vachon begs Tracy to kill him. She protests, but he angrily orders her to pick up a wooden stake. He bares his heart, but she can't do it. With glowing eyes and bared fangs, he growls and runs into Tracy, burying the stake in his own heart. He asks Tracy to wish him luck, then dies.

Nick goes to Vachon's and sees Tracy cradling his dead body, saying that Vachon opened her eyes and that she will always love him for that. She promises to bury him near Screed.

Nick tells Natalie that there was nothing he could do for Tracy, and there is no one she can talk to about Vachon. Natalie worries that she will find herself in the same situation, since Divia is killing anyone who is close to LaCroix, and no one is closer than Nick. Nick gently touches Natalie's face and tells her not to worry.

When Nick returns home, Divia viciously attacks him, then leaves him for dead.

Divia confronts LaCroix at the Raven. The centuries that she expected to spend loving and caring for him were instead spent in darkness and isolation. Saying that LaCroix cannot imagine the hate she feels, she tosses him around the room with a strength that far surpasses his. She gloatingly tells him that his favorite son, Nick, is dead. LaCroix tries to attack her, but she easily fends him off and throws him through the glass window of his broadcasting booth. She raises a sickle and is about to decapitate LaCroix when Nick stakes her from behind. Divia pitifully begs her father not to let her die, but Nick holds LaCroix back.

For once, LaCroix is glad about Nick's quest for humanity. Perhaps it was his resurgent goodness that enabled him to defeat Divia's evil. Nick says that Urs and Vachon were young and didn't know how to deal with it. Nick tells LaCroix that Tracy is resistant to hypnotism, but he's seen LaCroix work around that. He wants Tracy to remember that Vachon was a good friend - a vampire who decided that it was time to move on. The knowledge of their existence was Vachon's gift to Tracy, and Nick doesn't want that to be taken away. LaCroix agrees to take care of it, but first, he will burn Divia's body and commit her ashes to the wind. He may even say a prayer.

## LAST KNIGHT

written by Michael Sadowski
directed by Geraint Wyn Davies

### Guest Cast

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| Anna Pappas | Dr. Laura Haynes | Roger Honeywell | Dawkins |
| Adam Large | Cop #1 | Stuart Williams | Pencil Pusher |

### Synopsis

A friend of Natalie's, a psychiatrist named Dr. Laura Haynes, kills herself and leaves an envelope for Natalie which contains her journal. The suicide note, addressed to Natalie, says, "Do as I ask, not as I've done. Don't let yourself become empty." Natalie says that Dr. Haynes was right to peg her as a kindred spirit. She used to think suicide was a sacrilege, but now isn't so sure. Nick doesn't want her to talk like that, but she reminds him that he has considered it himself. In a flashback, Natalie is concerned about Nick's self-destructive behavior following the suicide of his former lover, a vampire named Erica. Nick doesn't want Natalie to work on Dr. Haynes's case, but Natalie assures him that she can handle it and says that she owes Laura that much.

Tracy is about to call it a night when a transfer prisoner, Delbert Dawkins, is brought into the station to be held for pickup and starts causing trouble. He resists the officers who are bringing him in because he doesn't want to go back to prison. Reese warns him to settle down, or he'll be cuffed and shackled.

Natalie tells Nick that she and Laura used to talk for hours, but it was always about their careers. They slowly realized that they never talked about themselves because their personal lives were nonexistent. It was a depressing discovery, and they lost touch after that. Laura's suicide note and her journal are wake-up calls for Natalie. "Time to get a life." Nick insists that Natalie's life is not empty. "Not now," she replies and flashes back to the day six years ago when Nick was brought into her morgue in a body bag. Natalie doesn't want to end up like Laura. Nick says that he won't let her. She tells him that it's simple - he just has to love her as much as she loves him. Natalie isn't willing to go on like this and says that she and Nick can be together. He says that he can't damn her into becoming what he is, but she insists that there is a way. She has faith in him and whatever follows. In a flashback, Nick attempts to bring his wife, Alyssa, across, but inadvertently kills her by taking too much blood. He tells Natalie that it's too much to ask.

At the precinct, Dawkins gets a gun away from an officer and grabs a woman as a hostage. Reese orders everyone to hold their fire. Dawkins drags the woman through the corridors of the police station, then releases her when they run into an officer. He pulls the gun on the officer and insists, "I am not going back." He continues running, and when he comes across some electrical panels, he smashes them, killing the power.

Nick gets a call about the situation at the precinct and flies over.

Dawkins holes up in the locker room. He is hysterical and would rather be killed than go back to prison. Tracy slips into the room, and Dawkins doesn't know that she is there behind the lockers. Nick arrives and tells Reese that he knows Dawkins from having arrested him. Nick enters the locker room and tries to talk to Dawkins. Dawkins is about to shoot himself, rather than go back to prison, but Nick hypnotically tells him to point the gun down at the floor, kneel down, and lay the gun very gently on the floor. Dawkins is in the process of obeying him, but when he sees Tracy move into position behind Nick, he screams, "No!" and opens fire. Nick grabs Dawkins and throws him against a wall. Tracy slumps to the floor, having taken one bullet in the abdomen and one in the head. Nick rushes to her with glowing eyes and bared fangs. When she sees what he is, she weakly tells him, "You could have trusted me."

Nick tells Reese that he didn't know Tracy was there. He blames himself for Tracy's injuries, although Reese assures him that it wasn't his fault. Reese tells Nick that Dawkins didn't make it, and Nick's going to take some heat from the review board on that one. Tracy might not pull through, and Reese says that he knows what it's like to lose a partner. Nothing on earth can rip you apart like that. Nick flashes back to the explosion and plane crash that killed Schanke.

At the hospital, Nick almost brings Tracy across to save her life, but Natalie catches him and stops him. She says that Nick can't know if that is what Tracy would want, and she angrily demands to know why it's so easy to consider bringing Tracy across, yet so impossible to consider bringing her. Nick just walks out.

Nick visits the Raven, which is empty and quiet. LaCroix has packed a trunk and decided that it's time to move on. He suggests that Nick go with him. He says that Nick has overstayed his welcome and is only

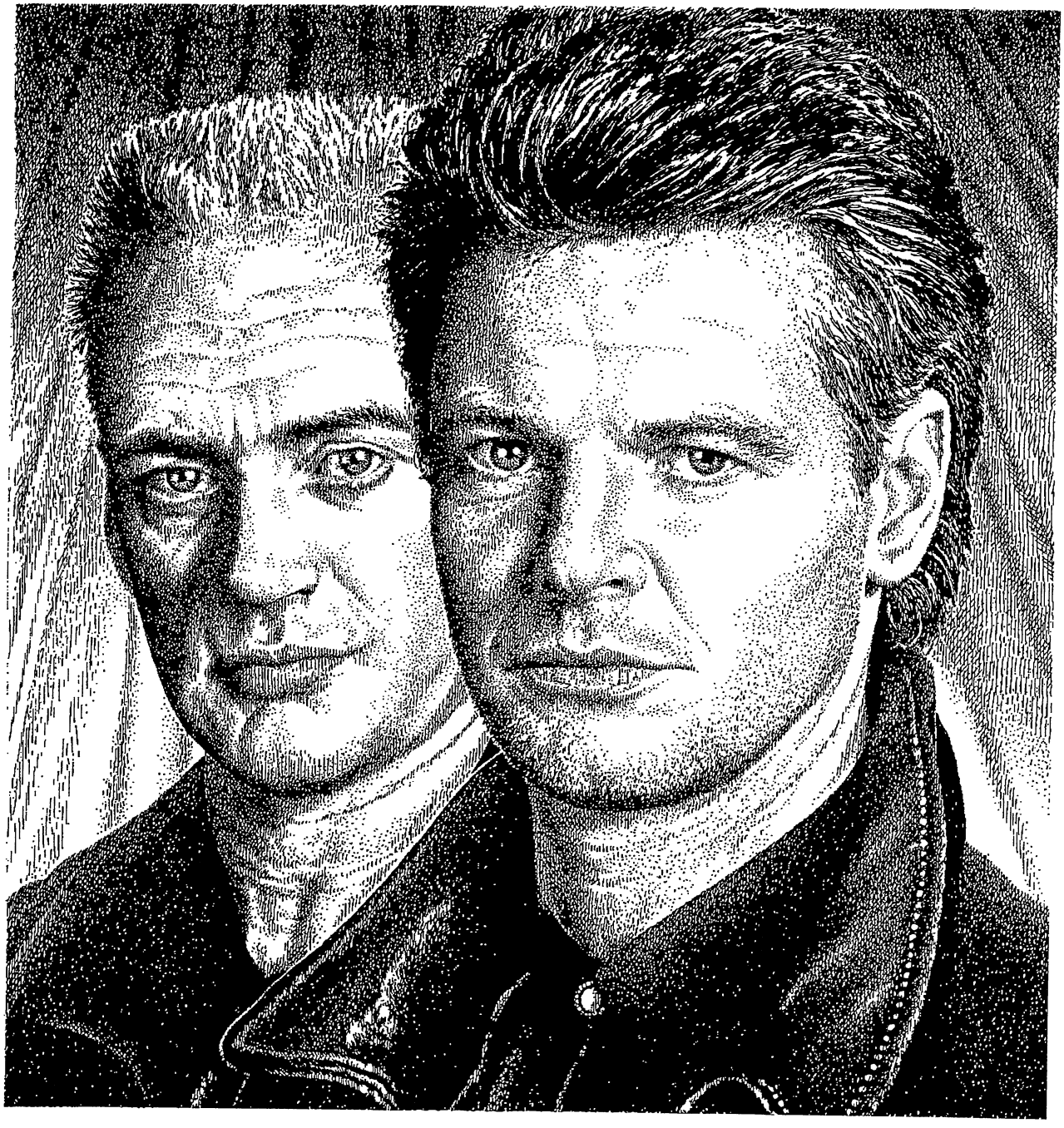
causing pain to his mortal friends. LaCroix will come to Nick's loft later tonight for his decision, and then he will leave, with or without Nick.

It was Nick who taught LaCroix that if a vampire truly cares for and loves a mortal, he must leave. In a flashback, LaCroix has fallen in love with Nick's sister, Fleur, and wants to bring her across, but Nick convinces him to leave her behind rather than turn her into a cold-blooded killer.

In his car, Nick listens to the radio. A caller asks what happened to "The Nightcrawler," and the woman now hosting the show says that he decided it was time to move on. In a flashback, Schanke has recently died, and Nick has decided that it's time to move on. Natalie comes to his apartment and is greatly disappointed in him because he planned to leave without saying good-bye. She found out from a desk sergeant and is deeply hurt. In another flashback. Nick is reunited with Janette for the first time since she left without an explanation. She thought it was best that way, but he tells her that she was wrong.

Nick arrives home to find Natalie waiting for him. She informs him that Tracy passed away twenty minutes ago. Nick is guilt-ridden about all the deaths he's caused over the centuries, but Natalie reminds him that he has also saved many lives and says that he has made up for what he's done in the past. He says that it's never enough, and he tells her that he's leaving. "Not without me," she responds. He replies that he is leaving because of her. His love would only destroy her. She reminds him that there is one cure that they haven't tried yet. Janette was able to become mortal by making love to Robert and taking just a little blood at a time. Natalie is willing to take her chances, but Nick is not. He fears that he would take too much. He is not willing to live a life of eternal pain, but she asks if it's any different than living a life of eternal regret. She asks Nick about faith, and he says that it's a mortal folly. She asks if he really believes that, and he flashes back to Joan of Arc refusing his offer of immortality because she has faith that she will live on in the hereafter. Natalie has faith that there is a future for her and Nick, here as they are, or somewhere else. She believes in Nick and trusts him. She asks him to make love to her and take just a little at a time. Nick is afraid of what might happen, but Natalie assures him that she is not afraid of death, or of an eternity in darkness, as long as she can spend it with him. Taking her hands, he changes to the vampire state and promises not to leave her. No matter what happens, they will be together forever. He kisses her on the mouth, then on the wrist, where he gives her a small bite. He hesitates, then bites her neck. Natalie gasps, and many images of Nick's life flash by as he drinks her blood. Natalie slumps, and Nick lowers her to the floor, distressed that he has taken too much. LaCroix arrives for Nick's decision. Natalie lies on the brink, and Nick must choose between bringing her across, or letting her die. Saying that he can't condemn her to this darkness, he leans over her body and kisses her on the cheek. LaCroix says that it's a wise decision. Nick tells LaCroix that Natalie had faith that they would have a life together and that this would be a beginning, not an end. Nick takes a staff that is leaning against the fireplace and says that he shares that faith. LaCroix tells him not to be foolish. LaCroix believes that life is a gift and has never been able to understand the logic of willfully surrendering such a treasure. He asks how dark Nick's existence can be when compared to an eternal void. Nick may have faith in something beyond, but won't know until after the deed is done whether the light he sees at the end of the tunnel is a ray of hope, or will bum him like the morning sun. LaCroix believes that Nick sees him as the devil, but Nick assures him that he does not. "What, then?" asks LaCroix. With tears in his eyes, Nick replies, "You are my closest friend," then hands LaCroix the staff. Nick kneels next to Natalie and takes her hand. "Damn you, Nicholas," LaCroix swears, then raises the staff to strike.

# WRITER'S GUIDE



# GENERAL PREMISES

*Forever Knight* was the story of a vampire cop. Nick Knight, then known as Nicholas de Brabant, was "brought across" in Paris in the year 1228. A beautiful female vampire, Janette, seduced him and led him to LaCroix, the master vampire who had brought her across. LaCroix, a former Roman general, brought Nick across and became his master, as well.

The trio traveled together for many years, but Nick eventually decided that he just couldn't kill anymore and left them. LaCroix was obsessed with keeping his "family" together, however, and pursued Nick throughout the centuries, continually trying to reclaim him. Nick rejoined the "family" and left them again several times. Nick believed that he could become mortal again, and his quest for a cure angered and frustrated LaCroix, who took it as a personal insult that his "son" wanted to discard the gift of eternity that he had given him.

Trying to atone for his past sins, Nick worked as a homicide detective in Toronto. Forensic pathologist Dr. Natalie Lambert knew his secret and was constantly trying to cure him of his vampirism. There was a romantic tension between them, but they both knew that nothing could come of it until he was "cured." Grace Balthazar was Natalie's friend and coworker at the morgue.

For the show's first two seasons, Janette ran a nightclub called the Raven, whose clientele consisted of both vampires and humans. Miklos was the bartender. Janette had an on-again-off-again relationship with Nick and often tried to seduce him back into the fold, whereas LaCroix tried to accomplish it with force. Unlike Nick, who detested being a vampire and placed a great value on humanity, Janette reveled in her vampirism and viewed most humans as no more than cattle. She had some sympathy for prostitutes, however, having been one herself in Paris. The Raven served as Janette's home, and she offered it as a haven for vampires, a collection of which slept in the wine cellar. In the third season, Janette left town, and LaCroix took over the club. By then, he had mellowed a bit and was less violent and more reasoning and helpful to Nick.

Early on in the first season, Nick battled LaCroix and apparently killed him. LaCroix was then relegated to being seen only in flashbacks. He returned for the second season, however, with the explanation that he was "much too old and powerful" for Nick to have destroyed him. Going by the name "The Nightcrawler," he hosted a radio program on station CERK. In the third season, he broadcast from a booth in the Raven, which then served as his home, as well.

In the first season, Nick and his partner, Don Schanke, worked for Captain Joe Stonetree at the 27th precinct. Schanke had a wife, Myra, and a daughter, Jenny. He came close to figuring out the truth about Nick at times and often commented on Nick's diet, or lack thereof. Food was somewhat of an obsession for Schanke. Originally, Nick and Schanke worked different shifts, although Schanke put in a lot of overtime working with Nick at night. Schanke later joined Nick full-time on the night shift. In the second season, Nick and Schanke worked for Captain Amanda Cohen at the 96th precinct. In the third season, Schanke and Cohen died in a plane crash, and Nick was then teamed with Tracy Vetter and worked for Captain Joe Reese. Tracy's father was a police commissioner, and Reese worried constantly about Tracy's safety because he wanted to stay on her father's good side. Throughout the series, the dispatch ID for Nick's car was 81-Kilo.

The third season also introduced Javier Vachon, a younger vampire who served as a romantic interest for Tracy. Tracy knew the truth about Vachon, but not about Nick. Urs, whom Vachon had brought across, was a dancer at the Raven. Screed was a friend of Vachon's and a karouche - a lower form of vampire. His diet consisted mostly of rats. Toward the end of the third season, Screed died from a man-made virus that was being developed as a possible cure for AIDS. Vachon and Urs were killed by LaCroix's daughter, Divia - the vampire who had brought LaCroix across in 79 A.D. Tracy was shot by a gunman at the precinct and later died of her wounds.

Nick lived in a loft apartment in a converted warehouse. It featured a high-tech security system and remote control blinds. He drove a 1962 convertible Cadillac, whose ample trunk space sometimes served as a haven during daylight hours. His refrigerator was stocked with wine bottles full of cow's blood, which he drank instead of human blood.

The series concluded with many questions unanswered. Natalie was on the brink of death, and Nick, who may or may not have regained his mortality, was about to be killed by LaCroix.

# CHARACTER HISTORY

## Detective Nick Knight

In the thirteenth century, Nicholas de Brabant ("For I Have Sinned," "Blood Money," "Queen of Harps," "Black Buddha - Part I") was a knight during the crusades ("Dark Knight - The Second Chapter," "Last Act," "Dance by the Light of the Moon," "Queen of Harps," "Be My Valentine"). As a mortal, he traveled to Carreg, Wales as part of a religious delegation and was unjustly accused of killing a woman, Gwyneth, whom he, in fact, cared very deeply for. Unbeknown to Nick, the murder was actually committed by the tyrannical Lord DeLabarre. DeLabarre "helped" Nick out of his predicament and negotiated his freedom. As penance, however, Nick was sent to fight in Jerusalem. During the crusades, he was wounded and almost killed ("Last Act"), but in the year 1228, Nick victoriously returned to Paris. He was then seduced by the vampire Janette and "brought across" by the master vampire LaCroix ("Dark Knight," "Dance by the Light of the Moon," "Near Death"). Becoming a vampire was a matter of choice ("Near Death"), but he later came to regret it. He told LaCroix that he wanted to go back ("Dark Knight - The Second Chapter"), but LaCroix told him that it was too late. LaCroix considered the gift of eternity the greatest gift that he could have given Nick, and he expected loyalty in return ("Dark Knight - The Second Chapter," "Father's Day," "The Fix"). Nick hated killing, however, and searched for a cure for his vampirism, even though LaCroix and Janette repeatedly told him that he could never be cured ("Cherry Blossoms," "Father's Day," "The Fix").

Nick traveled with Janette and LaCroix intermittently for centuries. He disagreed with their way of life and didn't want to kill anymore ("Dark Knight - The Second Chapter," "Father's Day"), but occasionally traveled with them because he found safety in numbers ("The Fire Inside"). Nick tried to leave his vampire family on numerous occasions ("Cherry Blossoms," "Bad Blood," "Father's Day," "Night in Question"), but LaCroix followed him through the centuries ("I Will Repay"), trying to reclaim him and thwarting his attempts at regaining his humanity ("Cherry Blossoms," "1966"). Because LaCroix was the vampire who brought Nick across, an eternal bond existed between them ("I Will Repay"), much to Nick's dismay. LaCroix saw through Nick's attempts to lie to him ("Father's Day") and said that Nick couldn't hide his thoughts from him because they had "skipped" those lessons ("Unreality TV"). He told Nick that he would always be able to find him ("The Code"), and he moved to Toronto specifically because of Nick ("Dark Knight"). For centuries, LaCroix tried to force Nick to rejoin the "family" and had no qualms about using physical violence ("Killer Instinct," "Father's Day"). Eventually, he tried a different tactic, and by the end of the series, he had taken on more of an advisory role and even helped Nick out on occasion ("Father's Day," "Sons of Belial").

Nick loved Janette, and they had an on-again-off-again relationship for centuries. Eventually, they became primarily friends, but still had occasional romantic liaisons ("Crazy Love," "Partners of the Month," "Blood Money"). Janette liked it when Nick "needed" her ("Crazy Love"). She was more than happy to provide shelter from the storm ("Curiouser and Curiouser") and to help ease Nick's burden ("Blood Money") in any way that she could. Janette loved Nick, but her greater loyalty was to their master vampire, LaCroix. Once, she helped Nick escape from LaCroix in Paris, but later betrayed him and led LaCroix to him in Los Angeles ("Father's Day"). At one point, they had lived together for ninety-seven years, and although she still loved him, Janette left Nick because she felt that eternity was too long to spend with one person ("Partners of the Month"). Nick was heartbroken, and they quarreled over possession of a portrait of Janette. She had had it painted for him, but she was sure that "Leonardo" would want her to have it. She eventually relented, and Nick kept the portrait, only to return it to her, centuries later, as a peace offering. At one point, Janette was able to accomplish what Nick had tried, but failed, to for centuries. She regained her mortality ("The Human Factor"). She got shot, though, and would have died if Nick hadn't brought her back across, against her protests. Before she left town, she returned the portrait to Nick once again. Nick and Janette were physically very comfortable with one another and almost invariably greeted one another with warm kisses ("Love You to Death," "Killer Instinct"). When they were together, they were often in physical contact - touching, embracing, or leaning against one another ("Dead Issue," "If Looks Could Kill," "Love You to Death"). Although French was both Nick's and Janette's native language ("Be My Valentine," "A Fate Worse than Death"), Janette retained her French accent, while Nick lost his. Janette called Nick "Nicholah." Until Janette fell in love with a mortal man, Robert McDonagh, ("The Human Factor"), she disapproved of Nick's attempts to regain his mortality ("The Fix") and encouraged him to rejoin the vampire community ("Cherry Blossoms").

In addition to English and his native French ("Dark Knight," "Be My Valentine"), Nick spoke and/or understood Chinese ("Dark Knight," "Cherry Blossoms," "1966") and Spanish ("Sons of Belial"), and he was able to translate an Italian passage from Dante's *Inferno* ("Jane Doe").

After four centuries as a vampire, Nick rationalized his killing by deciding to prey only on the "guilty," such as criminals and derelicts ("Love You to Death"). He lived by that principle for three hundred years, until he was tricked by LaCroix into killing a mortal woman that he loved. He then realized that there was no difference between guilty and innocent blood. Because of that, Nick reportedly hadn't killed anyone in the past one hundred years ("Love You to Death," "Cherry Blossoms"). There was some discrepancy on this point, however. Nick was shown to kill three people during World War II (although he only drank the blood of two of them) ("Outside the Lines"), and he killed two German policemen in 1966 ("1966").

Nick had many different professions over the years and used many different names. He was a Civil War doctor ("Unreality TV"), a member of the French Resistance ("Outside the Lines"), the night curator and associate professor of the archeological museum at the University of Chicago ("Spin Doctor"), a medic with the Red Cross during the Vietnam War ("Can't Run, Can't Hide"), and he had at least two previous incarnations as a policeman ("Beyond the Law," "Amateur Night"). He spent some time in a circus ("Last Act"), which might explain the "Barnum's Circus The Greatest Show on Earth" poster that he displayed in his apartment. He also claimed to have been with The Grateful Dead during Woodstock ("Dying for Fame"). He had previously been known as Nicholas Chevalier ("Francesca"), Nicholas Hammond ("Forward into the Past"), Nicholas Girard ("Spin Doctor"), Nicholas Forrester ("Close Call"), Nick Thomas ("1966"), and Nick Parker ("Can't Run, Can't Hide"). He used the name Knight at least twice before, as well ("Unreality TV," "Amateur Night").

Nick moved from Chicago to Toronto in 1989. Of course, if he had known that they were going to install lights at Wrigley Field, he might have reconsidered ("Dark Knight").

On April 14, 1990, Nick tried to stop a gang robbery, and someone tossed him a pipe bomb ("Only the Lonely," "Last Knight"). Nick was badly injured and appeared to have been killed. When he was brought into the morgue in a body bag, he had no ID on him, and there was reportedly not much of a face left to look at ("Only the Lonely"). While the coroner, Dr. Natalie Lambert, was on the phone, the blood that had leaked from the body bag was reabsorbed, his wounds healed, and he came back to life on the examining table. It just happened to be Natalie's twenty-eighth birthday. Natalie was shocked and frightened, but mostly curious. He revealed that he was a vampire, then found that he was unable to hypnotize her into forgetting what she had seen. When he told her that his immortality was a curse and that he had locked himself into a hell of an existence, she offered to try to help him regain his mortality. Nick claimed that evil was a metaphysical condition and didn't think that Natalie could help him. She disputed his claim that he was evil, since he ended up on her table because he had tried to help people. Also, as a scientist, she believed that his condition was a physical one. Natalie became Nick's friend and confidante, as well as a romantic interest.

Shortly after Nick became a vampire, he returned home to see his mother and sister one last time, accompanied by LaCroix and Janette. LaCroix fell in love with Nick's sister, Fleur, and wanted to bring her across so that they could be together for eternity. Nick protested that it was Fleur's purity that LaCroix loved, and it was her purity that he would destroy if he turned her into a cold-blooded killer. LaCroix agreed to leave Fleur behind on the condition that, one day, when Nick was in love, he would take from Nick what Nick had taken from him. For this reason, Nick couldn't admit his love for Natalie. If he did, LaCroix would either kill Natalie, or force Nick to bring her across, which would torment him even more than Natalie's death. Years later, when Fleur knew that she was dying, she wrote to Nick and asked him to took after her young son, Andre ("Fallen Idol") . Nick and Andre had a loving relationship, although the boy wondered why his uncle never ate with him. Nick told LaCroix that he planned to tell Andre the truth about himself, and he was sure that it wouldn't make any difference, since he and Andre were so close. LaCroix took it upon himself to enlighten the child and succeeded in destroying Nick's relationship with his nephew. At LaCroix's prompting, Andre came upon Nick while he was feeding and ran out, horrified.

Nick loved Natalie, but was reluctant to admit it because of the danger posed by LaCroix ("Be My Valentine"). He also feared that if he were to become physically intimate with her, he might not be able to stop himself from taking too much of her blood ("Be My Valentine," "The Human Factor," "Last Knight"). On the one occasion that they did admit their feelings for each other, Natalie was later hypnotized into forgetting it ("Be My Valentine"), even though she had previously been resistant to hypnotism ("Only the Lonely"). Natalie knew that nothing could come of their relationship until Nick was "cured" ("Night in Question"), and she continually worked towards that end. She believed that he could become human again by overcoming his

aversion to the things that vampires could not normally tolerate. She had him drink green tea and lie in a sun bed ("Dark Knight"), drink protein shakes ("Dying to Know You") and veggie drinks ("Dead Issue"), eat garlic pills and hold a cross ("For I Have Sinned"), and drink artificial blood ("Father Figure"). She encouraged him to give up blood ("Dark Knight," "Feeding the Beast," "Capital Offense") and to eat real food ("Killer Instinct"). She also discouraged the use of his vampire powers ("Dark Knight," "Dying to Know You"). Nick was physically demonstrative with Natalie, as well, although to a lesser degree than with Janette. He often hugged and kissed her ("Feeding the Beast," "Undue Process," "My Boyfriend is a Vampire," "Night in Question") and touched her affectionately ("Only the Lonely," "Forward into the Past," "Ashes to Ashes"), but it was usually more friendly than romantic. At one point, Natalie actually succeeded in curing Nick of his vampirism by treating him with a synthetic hormone, Lytovuterine-B. The success was short-lived, however. The drug was highly addictive, and Nick needed ever increasing amounts of it. The drug also caused Nick to become paranoid, delusional, and violent.

Using the name of Nicholas B. Knight ("The Games Vampires Play"), Nick worked as a homicide detective in Toronto. In 1992, he was partnered with Detective Don Schanke ("Dark Knight - The Second Chapter"), much to his dismay. Nick and Schanke had completely different styles and did not get along well initially. In fact, when Nick was first assigned to work with Schanke, he begged his fellow officers to shoot him ("Dark Knight"). Eventually, they came to respect and like each other very much. Originally, even though they were partners, they worked different shifts ("Dark Knight," "Dying to Know You," "1966"), although Schanke often put in overtime to help Nick out at night ("1966," "Last Act"). Later, Schanke joined Nick full-time on the night shift, although he complained that it was causing him to miss out on much of his daughter's life ("Father's Day"). Because of Nick's "addiction" to blood, he sometimes had to turn away from the sight of it ("Dark Knight"). Schanke took this as a sign of squeamishness and wondered why they put a guy like that on homicide. For the first season, Nick and Schanke worked for Captain Joe Stonetree at the 27th precinct. In the second season, they worked for Captain Amanda Cohen at the 96th precinct. Nick wasn't the easiest person to be partnered with. He was secretive ("Unreality TV," "Forward into the Past") and admittedly not a team player ("Cherry Blossoms"). He often flat-out ignored Schanke when he asked questions about what Nick ate or how Nick got places so fast ("Dark Knight - The Second Chapter," "Dying to Know You," "False Witness," "Feeding the Beast," "Undue Process"). Nick also tended to disappear in the middle of an investigation ("If Looks Could Kill," "A Fate Worse than Death," "Bad Blood," "Baby Baby"), often without a word of explanation. On those occasions when he did offer an explanation, it was only to say that he had something to check out on his own. Schanke was often frustrated by Nick's heroics and felt that Nick was always grabbing all the glory ("Crazy Love," "Partners of the Month"). Schanke was a loyal partner, however ("Last Act," "False Witness," "Feeding the Beast"), and eventually learned to accept, even to defend, his partner's eccentricities ("Father Figure," "Unreality TV," "Feeding the Beast," "Fatal Mistake," "Bad Blood"). At one point, Schanke put all the clues together and figured out that Nick was a vampire ("Close Call"). LaCroix, however, convinced him that he was merely feeling the effects of fatigue and trauma resulting from a shoot-out the night before. Schanke came to the conclusion that he'd been an idiot, and he decided that he shouldn't be probing into his partner's personal life.

Nick drove a blue 1962 convertible Cadillac (although it often appeared green on camera), whose ample trunk space served as shelter when Nick was away from home during daylight hours ("Dark Knight - The Second Chapter," "False Witness," "Dead Air"). The dispatch ID for Nick's car was 81-Kilo, and the license plate number was 35H MV6 ("Father Figure"). His badge number was 16596, and he claimed to have been born in Chicago on January 1, 1958 ("Hunters").

When Schanke and Cohen were killed in a plane crash ("Black Buddha - Part I") in the first episode of the third season, Nick was partnered with a rookie detective, Tracy Vetter, and worked for Captain Joe Reese. Tracy's father was Police Commissioner Richard Vetter ("Black Buddha - Part I," "Night in Question"), and Reese worried constantly about her safety because he wanted to stay on the commissioner's good side. Tracy knew about the existence of vampires. In fact, she had a romantic interest in the vampire Vachon. She did not, however, know the truth about her own partner. In the final episode of the series, Tracy was shot and critically wounded ("Last Knight"). Before she died, she realized the truth about Nick and told him, "You could have trusted me." This was an ironic statement, since she had never trusted her partner with her knowledge of vampires, either.

Although Nick regretted his own decision to become a vampire ("Near Death"), he brought others across, as well, including Elizabeth ("I Will Repay"), Richard ("I Will Repay"), Serena ("Baby Baby"), Dr.

Gerald Archer ("Fever"), and Janette ("The Human Factor"). He killed Elizabeth and Richard, who was Natalie's younger brother, when they killed against his wishes. Dr. Archer lost respect for human life, as well, and was burned to death by a priest. Serena was one of Nick's biggest mistakes. She wanted Nick to give her immortality, and he brought her across. As it turned out, Nick was tripped up by a metaphor. What Serena really wanted was for Nick to father a child for her. After he became a vampire, Nick married Alyssa von Lintz, a mortal ("Dead of Night"). On their wedding night, he tried to bring her across so that they could be together for eternity. It was his first attempt at bringing someone across, however, and he took too much blood. Alyssa died, and her ghost later visited him when a police investigation took him to a haunted house that served as a portal to the spirit world.

Nick lived in a loft apartment in a converted warehouse at 101 Gateway Lane ("Dark Knight - The Second Chapter," "Father Figure"). It featured a high-tech security system and remote-controlled, mechanical blinds on the windows. He had an affinity for images of the sun, and in addition to the large, black, sun-shaped clock that hung in his kitchen, there were several paintings of the sun in his apartment. Nick was probably the artist of at least some of these paintings, as painting was a hobby of his ("Feeding the Beast"), and he had a table that was perpetually loaded with painting supplies. His apartment also featured a Norton motorcycle and a piano, which he frequently played, especially when he was feeling melancholy ("Killer Instinct," "Capital Offense," "Black Buddha - Part I"). His fireplace was adorned by an ornate dragon mantel, which he had brought with him from Paris ("Baby Baby"). His refrigerator was stocked with bottles of cow's blood ("Last Act," "Killer Instinct"), but also contained some bags of what appeared to he human blood ("Father Figure"). Of course, the bags might have contained the "low fat, zero cholesterol, no sodium, absolutely no flavor" artificial blood that was part of Natalie's attempts at curing him ("Father Figure"). Besides rat poison ("Near Death"), he kept coffee under the sink ("Bad Blood"), which Natalie thought was "gross." But since Nick never drank it, he didn't see a problem. Nick had a habit of pulling the corks out of bottles of blood with his teeth ("Dark Knight," "Last Act," "False Witness," "Dead Air," "Dying to Know You"). He also tended to throw bottles of blood when he was in a bad mood and cursing his vampire existence ("Dark Knight," "Feeding the Beast").

Although Nick subsisted primarily on blood, he did occasionally eat and drink real food. To be polite to the Toffler family, he drank vodka and ate a bit of food, although he choked on it ("1966"). Once, in the Old West, he drank curare-laced whiskey ("The Code"). He had no problem swallowing the whiskey, although the curate intoxicated him. Of course, if he had been human, it would have killed him. At one point, he tried to kick his blood habit and ate French fries with no problem ("Feeding the Beast"). When he had amnesia and didn't know that he was a vampire, he ate all kinds of real food ("Night in Question"). Eventually, however, the need for blood reemerged. After four years of Natalie's attempts to cure him of his vampirism, he had progressed to the point that he was able to eat raw hamburger ("Black Buddha - Part I").

Although Nick tried to do good ("Cherry Blossoms") and wanted to atone for his past sins ("Near Death"), he hadn't always been so noble. In his earlier life as a vampire, he took conspicuous pleasure in the drinking of blood ("Fallen Idol"). Once, he followed a young woman into a church, and when he found that she wasn't afraid of him, he told her that she should be ("For I Have Sinned"). He was impressed by her lack of fear, however, and came to respect the woman, who turned out to be Joan of Arc. When she was about to be burned at the stake, he offered to bring her across to save her life, but she wanted spiritual immortality, not the kind that Nick had to offer. Nick was quite wealthy ("Love You to Death"), and his fortune was acquired in a less than honorable manner ("Blood Money"). It was literally a king's ransom. Centuries ago, Nick and an accomplice joined forces with a prince and staged the prince's abduction in an attempt to fleece the king out of a large sum. After acquiring the loot, Nick and his accomplice killed the prince. They rationalized that he deserved to die for swindling his father, the king, like that. Nick escalated the treachery even further, however, when he killed his accomplice and kept the entire fortune for himself. Nick's checking account contained $1.2 million ("Faithful Followers"), and the Nicholas de Brabant Foundation, from which he made $40 million worth of charitable contributions in one year, contained $478 million ("Blood Money").

Nick had a reverence for life and all that was human ("Be My Valentine"). He liked children and hoped that a family of his own would be possible one day ("Father Figure"). Although he did get depressed and frustrated at times ("Dark Knight," "Last Act," "Feeding the Beast"), he vowed that he would never die by his own hand ("Last Act").

Natalie was not the only mortal to be privy to Nick's secret. Usually, when someone discovered that Nick was a vampire, he would hypnotize that person into forgetting ("Unreality TV," "A Fate Worse than Death,"

"Father Figure," "Stranger than Fiction," "Close Call"). But over the centuries, there were those that he trusted to keep his secret, including Denise Ford ("Dying to Know You"), Lily Toffler ("1966"), Katherine Barrington ("Forward into the Past"), Don Thomas and David Constantine ("Father's Day"), Dr. Spense ("The Fix"), Charles Du Champs ("Blood Money"), Hans Victor ("Let No Man Tear Asunder"), and Czar Nicholas ("Strings").

In the final episode, Natalie was distraught over a friend's suicide, and Nick was distraught over Tracy's death ("Last Knight"). Natalie considered suicide, then asked Nick to bring her over instead. Nick refused, as he had when Natalie had made the same request once before ("A More Permanent Hell"). She reminded him that Janette was able to regain her mortality by making love with the mortal man that she loved, Robert McDonagh, and taking just a little blood at a time ("The Human Factor"). If they couldn't be together as vampires, she begged him to try one last time to be together as humans. Nick was hesitant because he wasn't sure that he would be able to stop himself from taking too much blood. He finally relented, and his fear proved to be justified. They never did make love, however, because Nick skipped right to the bloodletting and got carried away. Natalie lost too much blood to survive, and as LaCroix pointed out when he arrived, Nick was faced with the choice of either letting her die, or bringing her across. He couldn't condemn her to an eternity of darkness and chose instead to die along beside her. He handed LaCroix a wooden staff with which to stake him, then knelt beside Natalie's body. LaCroix cursed, "Damn you, Nicholas" and raised the staff to strike. The deathblow was never shown, however, so there was some question as to the final outcome. LaCroix might have killed Nick, of course, but it has been speculated that he either staked Nick nonfatally, or knocked him unconscious, then brought Natalie across, himself. There is no actual evidence to support this theory, however. It has also been speculated that LaCroix's utterance of "Damn, you, Nicholas" was made with the realization that Nick had at last regained his mortality, and LaCroix had finally, truly lost his "son." After all, it was not merely the taking of Robert's blood that allowed Janette to regain her mortality, it was also the emotional trauma she felt when Robert died. The final shot was of a rising sun and left much room for interpretation.

# CHARACTER HISTORY

## LaCroix

LaCroix's first name was given as both Lucien ("Be My Valentine," "Francesca") and Lucius ("A More Permanent Hell," "Ashes to Ashes"). As a mortal, he was a ruthless Roman general and had a wife, Seline, and a daughter, Divia ("A More Permanent Hell," "Ashes to Ashes"). He became a vampire on the day that Mount Vesuvius erupted in Pompeii in 79 A.D. Upon LaCroix's return from a victory over the Gauls, his wife informed him that Divia, who had been ill, had been cured by a mysterious stranger. In fact, Divia had become a vampire. When Mt. Vesuvius erupted, Divia told LaCroix to choose between life and death. He chose to live, and she brought him across ("A More Permanent Hell"). The mysterious stranger who brought Divia across was Qa' Ra, one of the first vampires, whom she later destroyed ("Ashes to Ashes"). Divia was evil, and since mortal conventions no longer applied to her, she wanted to become LaCroix's lover, in addition to being his human child and his vampire parent. He refused, they argued, and he ended up decapitating her with a sickle and interring her remains in a sarcophagus. The sun god on the lid of the sarcophagus imprisoned her in much the same way that a cross would have. When Divia was later inadvertently set free by a graverobber, the evil of Qa' Ra that still permeated the tomb enabled her to regenerate, and she tracked LaCroix down to exact her revenge. She wanted him to know how it felt to be left alone, so she set out to kill everyone around him. She killed vampires Vachon and Urs and attempted to kill Nick, but failed. Divia and LaCroix battled in the Raven, and as she was about to decapitate him with the same sickle that he had used on her, Nick staked her from behind. LaCroix burned her remains and committed her ashes to the wind to ensure that she would not regenerate again ("Ashes to Ashes").

LaCroix brought Janette across approximately 1,000 years ago ("A Fate Worse than Death"). She was a prostitute in Paris, and he saved her from being raped, then offered her a way out of her current life. Janette seduced Nick in 1228, then turned him over to LaCroix, who brought him across and became his master, as well ("Dance by the Light of the Moon"). LaCroix's other vampire offspring included Daniel ("Father Figure"), Alexandra ("Fatal Mistake"), Francesca ("Francesca"), Rasputin ("Strings"), and a member of the Viet Cong ("Can't Run, Can't Hide"). Jack the Ripper was also brought across by LaCroix, although it was unintentional ("Bad Blood"). The surgeon-barber was one of LaCroix's victims, but his evilness was so great that he merely laughed when LaCroix fed on him, but was unable to finish him off. LaCroix became terribly ill from the "bad blood" and asked Nick to return to the alley and make sure that the man was dead. Nick, however, wanted nothing to do with LaCroix and his killing, so he walked away, and Jack the Ripper came across. LaCroix almost brought across a young corporal named A. Hitler in Germany, but he reconsidered when he felt an evil in the man that did not need to be amplified ("Jane Doe").

LaCroix took great offense at the fact that he had given Nick the gift of eternity, and Nick had deserted him ("Dark Knight - The Second Chapter," "Father's Day"). He considered his vampire offspring to be his children ("Dark Knight," "Father's Day," "The Fix," "Close Call," "Sons of Belial," "Fever") and placed great importance on keeping his "family" together. He followed Nick through the centuries, continually thwarting his attempts to regain his mortality ("Dark Knight," "Cherry Blossoms," "1966"). At the beginning of the first season, Nick and LaCroix battled, and it appeared that Nick killed LaCroix. LaCroix was then seen only in flashbacks until the last episode of the first season, where it was revealed that he was still alive and not very happy with Nick ("Love You to Death"). No explanation was given for his survival, other than that he was "much too old and powerful" for Nick to have destroyed him ("Killer Instinct"). In many of the flashbacks, and for most of the second season, LaCroix tried to use force to convince Nick to rejoin the "family" and had no qualms about using physical violence ("Killer Instinct," "Father's Day"). By the end of the second season and into the third, he had realized that this tactic wasn't working and resorted to reasoning with Nick, even helping him on occasion ("Bad Blood," "Father's Day," "Baby Baby," "Sons of Belial").

LaCroix was ruthless, as he had been when he was a Roman general, and had no regard for human life. He killed whenever it suited his purposes - whether to thwart Nick's attempts at becoming human again ("Dark Knight," "Cherry Blossom"), or for the sheer pleasure of it ("Dead Air," "Hunted"). He did whatever he wanted, simply because he could. He often used people as pawns in his attempts to show Nick the error of his ways, with complete disregard for their well-being ("Love You to Death," "Killer Instinct," "Capital Offense," "Faithful Followers," "Undue Process," "Be My Valentine," "Outside the Lines," "Fallen Idol"). When the

vampire trio of LaCroix, Nick, and Janette came across a pair of escaped slaves, Nick sympathized with their plight ("The Fire Inside"). The slaves were being hunted like animals, and as Nick pointed out, the vampires knew what it was like to be in that position. LaCroix felt no such sympathy, however. Because they were human, he considered the slaves dispensable and referred to them as "lunch." LaCroix's ruthlessness was generally limited to humans, however. When it came to his vampire offspring, he believed in a benevolent tyranny ("Beyond the Law"). He gave them the gift of eternity, and expected loyalty in return. When Nick decided that he no longer wanted the gift, LaCroix saw Nick as an errant child and was sure that he, as the "father," knew what was best for his "son." Despite LaCroix's ruthlessness, he was not without honor, nor without heart. When the head of a crime family, who had helped LaCroix reclaim Nick decades earlier, was concerned that there would be no one to run the family business after he passed away, LaCroix brought the old man across, thereby repaying a decades-old debt ("Father's Day"). When LaCroix fell in love with a mortal woman and left her behind for her own good, he profoundly suffered the pain of that loss ("Be My Valentine"). The guilt he felt over having decapitated Divia tormented him for centuries, and when she returned to kill him and was fatally staked by Nick, LaCroix was obviously in anguish, and Nick had to hold him back to prevent him from helping her ("Ashes to Ashes"). LaCroix also demonstrated his opposition to true evil when he tried to make sure that Jack the Ripper would not come across ("Bad Blood"), when he reversed his decision to bring Hitler across ("Jane Doe"), and when he helped a priest exorcise a demon from Nick ("Sons of Belial").

LaCroix moved to Toronto because of his quest to reclaim Nick ("Dark Knight - The Second Chapter"), and he hosted a radio program on station CERK. In the third season, when he took over the Raven from Janette, he broadcast from a booth in the club, which then served as his home, as well ("Black Buddha - Part I"). His on-air name was "The Nightcrawler."

LaCroix had a long and colorful history. He "taught Nero the tune," and together they watched Rome bum. He rode with Charlemagne and taught Genghis Khan the lessons of war ("Dark Knight - The Second Chapter," "I Will Repay"). He played a lute-like instrument ("Dark Knight"), and one constant through the centuries was the large, oval ring that he wore. (It had a compartment that opened.) He didn't seem to have much affection for children ("Father Figure"), perhaps because of his experience with his own daughter ("Ashes to Ashes").

LaCroix considered himself to he above political concerns ("Jane Doe"), but he was often present during wars because he loved the "free food" ("Unreality TV," "Can't Run, Can't Hide," "Night in Question"). In addition to English, he spoke and/or understood French ("Dark Knight," "Killer Instinct," "A Fate Worse than Death," "The Human Factor"), Russian ("Night in Question"), Spanish ("Sons of Belial"), and German ("Jane Doe").

Shortly after bringing Nick across, LaCroix fell in love with Nick's sister, Fleur ("Be My Valentine"). He wanted to bring her across, as well, so that they could be together for eternity. Fleur loved LaCroix and wanted the same thing. Nick convinced LaCroix, however, that if he truly loved Fleur, he would not destroy her purity by turning her into a cold-blooded killer. LaCroix agreed to leave Fleur behind on the condition that he would exact retribution from Nick one day by taking from Nick what Nick had taken from him. When it became evident that Nick and Natalie were in love, LaCroix lured Natalie to a restaurant and mesmerized her to the point that she was completely defenseless and unaware of what was happening around her. LaCroix was about to bite Natalie's neck when Nick burst in. The two vampires battled, then Nick managed to convince LaCroix that he didn't love Natalie and was simply using her in his quest to regain mortality. Nick's debt remained unpaid, and LaCroix's pain over the loss of Fleur continued to torment him.

# CHARACTER HISTORY

## Dr. Natalie Lambert

Natalie Lambert was born on April 14, 1962 ("Only the Lonely," "Last Knight"). She lived alone with her cat, Sidney ("Only the Lonely") and worked as a forensic pathologist in Toronto in the Coroners Building at 26 Grenville St. The only thing on the job that she was squeamish about was having to deal with bum victims ("The Fire Inside," "Sons of Belial"). This was the result of having witnessed the victims of an automobile accident bum to death when she was a child ("The Fire Inside").

Her blood type was AB-negative ("Let No Man Tear Asunder"), and according to different messages on her answering machine, she could be reached for emergencies at 555-2269 ("My Boyfriend is a Vampire"), and the number for her answering service was 555-8860 ("Undue Process"). Twice, she had a car that got burned up during the course of an investigation ("Spin Doctor," "Bad Blood").

Her grandmother, whom she called "Nana," used to take care of her when she was a child and used to hit her ("Dead of Night"). Natalie carried the resentment around with her for years and didn't go to see her grandmother when she was dying in the hospital. After visiting a haunted house that served as a portal for spirits, Natalie received visits from her grandmother's ghost. The ghost continued to reappear until she and Natalie made their peace, then she vanished. Natalie didn't want to go on record as saying that she'd seen a ghost, and she said that if anyone asked her about it, she would have to "take the fifth." She had told Nick once before that she didn't believe in ghosts ("Fatal Mistake"). Of course, she hadn't previously believed in vampires, either.

Natalie had a younger brother, Richard, who was a prosecutor for the crown ("I Will Repay"). Richard was shot by a gunman at the police station, and Natalie begged Nick to bring him across to prevent his death. Against his better judgment, Nick obliged her. When Richard began killing recklessly because he couldn't control his desire to keep the streets safe, he and Nick battled, and Nick killed him by driving a stake through his heart. Richard was survived by his wife, Sarah, and daughter, Amy,

Natalie had a goddaughter, Cynthia Lambert Luce, who was abducted and killed by Ronald Gault. Gault was later killed by a medical examiner, Dr. Emma Reston, who had been raped as a child and had decided to take it upon herself to make sure that those who harm children could never do it again ("Undue Process").

Natalie first met Nick on her 28th birthday when he was brought into the morgue in a body bag ("Only the Lonely"). He had tried to stop a gang robbery, and someone had tossed him a pipe bomb. The blood that had leaked from the body bag was reabsorbed into his body, his wounds healed, and he came back to life on the examining table. He tried to hypnotize her into forgetting what she had seen, but she was resistant to hypnotism and offered to help him regain his mortality.

She believed that Nick could become mortal again by not drinking blood ("Dark Knight," "Feeding the Beast," "Capital Offense") and by overcoming his aversion to the things that vampires normally couldn't tolerate. She encouraged him to eat real food ("Killer Instinct"), and she had him drink green tea and lie in a sun bed ("Dark Knight"), drink protein shakes ("Dying to Know You") and veggie drinks ("Dead Issue"), eat garlic pills and hold a cross ("For I Have Sinned"), and drink artificial blood ("Father Figure"). At one point, she cured Nick temporarily by giving him a synthetic hormone, Lytovuterine-B ("The Fix"). Unfortunately, the drug was highly addictive, and Nick needed ever increasing amounts of it. It also caused Nick to become violent, paranoid, and delusional. After four years of working towards a cure, Nick had advanced to the point that he could eat raw hamburger ("Black Buddha - Part I).

Natalie was Nick's link to humanity. She admonished him when he used his vampire powers to catch a criminal ("Dark Knight"), when he lied to put a criminal away ("False Witness"), and when he stole because an article from his distant past was important to him ("Queen of Harps"). She was willing to do "any little thing" that she could do to make Nick "feel a bit more human" ("Be My Valentine").

Although Natalie claimed to be so busy with her career that she had little time for romance ("Only the Lonely," "Be My Valentine"), the truth was that the one man she was interested in, Nick, was unattainable. Natalie loved Nick ("Be My Valentine"), but knew that they couldn't have a relationship until he was cured ("Night in Question"). When she read a romantic vampire novel, she pictured herself and Nick in the starring roles ("Stranger than Fiction"). She even went undercover to infiltrate a cult when she thought that Nick's life

was in danger ("Faithful Followers"). She actually did save his life when an experiment in "flat-lining" went terribly wrong ("Near Death").

Nick had romantic feelings for Natalie, also, but couldn't act on them because it would have put her life in danger, from both himself and LaCroix. The danger from Nick stemmed from the fact that physical intimacy with her could have resulted in her death. He worried that he might not be able to refrain from taking too much blood for her to survive ("Be My Valentine," "The Human Factor," "Last Knight"). The danger from LaCroix stemmed from the fact that LaCroix had once been in love with Nick's sister, Fleur, but Nick had convinced LaCroix to abandon her for her own good. As a result, if Nick admitted that he loved Natalie, LaCroix would take revenge by either killing Natalie, or forcing Nick to bring her across, which would torment Nick more than if Natalie simply died ("Be My Valentine").

Although Natalie was normally resistant to hypnotism ("Only the Lonely," "A More Permanent Hell"), at one point, LaCroix was able to mesmerize her to the point that she was completely defenseless and unaware of what was happening around her, and she was later made to forget that she and Nick had admitted their feelings for each other ("Be My Valentine").

Although Natalie stated at one point that "suicide is never the answer" ("Last Act"), she twice briefly considered it herself. Both times, she rejected the idea and asked Nick to bring her across instead ("A More Permanent Hell," "Last Knight"). Both times, he refused. In the final episode of the series, Natalie told Nick that she loved him ("Last Knight"). Since he refused to bring her across so that they could be together as vampires, she suggested that they try one final attempt at a cure so that they could be together as mortals. Janette had regained her mortality when she fell in love with a human and, while making love to him, had taken just a little blood at a time ("The Human Factor"). Nick was reluctant to try this method for fear of killing Natalie, but she insisted that she trusted him and had faith that they would be together, if not in this life, then in another, so he relented. He couldn't stop himself and took too much blood, leaving her on the brink of death. LaCroix told Nick that he had two choices: bring her across, or let her die. Nick couldn't condemn her to an eternity of darkness and, choosing instead to die with her, handed LaCroix a wooden staff with which to kill him. The last moments showed Nick kneeling on die floor beside Natalie, with LaCroix raising the staff, about to strike.

# CHARACTER HISTORY

## Detective Don Schanke

Detective Donald G. Schanke ("Blood Money") was a Polish/Italian Catholic ("For I Have Sinned"). He and his wife, Myra, had been married since 1982 ("For I Have Sinned"), and they had a daughter, Jenny ("Hunters," "The Fire Inside," "The Code," "A More Permanent Hell"). There were some mixed messages early on in the series as to the sex and/or number of Schanke's children, but eventually it became settled that he had a single child, Jenny. (See the section on "Inconsistencies" for a further discussion on this matter.) The Schankes had a cottage up north ("Hunters," "Capital Offense," "Fathers"), and they had a dog ("False Witness").

Schanke's blood type was A-negative ("Dark Knight"), and his taste in music ranged from polka ("Dark Knight"), to easy listening ("Dying for Fame"), to opera ("Hunters"). One type of music that he just didn't "get" was heavy metal ("Dying for Fame"). His wife, Myra, had a habit of singing show tunes around the house ("Partners of the Month"). Schanke's favorite TV show was *I Dream of Jeannie* ("Father Figure"). He was a smoker in the first season ("Dark Knight," "Hunters," "Feeding the Beast"), but had quit by the second ("Queen of Harps").

Schanke was a dedicated husband and father ("For I Have Sinned," "Hunters," "Father's Day," "Partners of the Month," "Beyond the Law"), even though he liked to think of himself as a "killer ladies' man" ("For I Have Sinned"). His father was deceased ("Hunters") and had been a sewer worker ("The Fire Inside"). Schanke was ashamed of his father's profession and, as a child, had been taunted by the name "Rat Boy." The relationship that Schanke had with his father was not entirely clear. At one point, Schanke seemed to revere his father. He quoted advice that his father had given him (that the best defense is a good offense) and said "God rest his soul" ("Hunters"). It was later revealed that Schanke had moved out because he and his father were always at each others throats ("The Code").

Schanke was also a dedicated partner ("Last Act," "Feeding the Beast," "Killer Instinct") and believed that partners should trust each other and back each other up ("Forward into the Past," "Partners of the Month," "The Code"). This was fortunate for Nick, since Nick was not the most desirable partner. He was secretive ("Unreality TV," "Forward into the Past"), self-admittedly not a team player ("Cherry Blossoms"), and often just plain ignored Schanke when Schanke asked questions about what he ate ("Dying to Know You"), or how he got somewhere when he had, in fact, flown ("Dark Knight - The Second Chapter," "False Witness," "Feeding the Beast," "Undue Process"). Schanke was also frequently frustrated by the fact that Nick tended to disappear with little or no explanation ("If Looks Could Kill," "A Fate Worse than Death," "Bad Blood," "Baby Baby"), or make Schanke look bad by getting somewhere impossibly fast and grabbing all the glory ("Crazy Love," "Partners of the Month"). In fact, when Nick and Schanke transferred from the 27th precinct to the 96th, Schanke told Nick that it was his turn to look good for awhile ("Killer Instinct"). Nick, however, continued to outshine his partner. To his credit, Schanke simply learned to accept and even to defend his partner's eccentricities ("False Witness," "Father Figure," "Unreality TV," "Feeding the Beast," "Fatal Mistake," "Bad Blood"). Originally, although Schanke and Nick were partners, they worked different shifts ("Dark Knight," "Dying to Know You," "1966"). Schanke put in a lot of overtime, however, to be there for Nick when he needed him at night ("Last Act"). Eventually, Schanke joined Nick full-time on the night shift, even though he complained that it was causing him to miss much of his daughter's life ("Father's Day").

At one point, Schanke actually figured out that Nick was a vampire ("Close Call"). In an alley, Schanke got into a shoot-out with a suspect and fatally wounded the man. Before the man died, however, he got back up from the pavement and was about to shoot Schanke in return. Schanke wasn't looking at the suspect, however, because he was staring perplexedly up at Nick, who had suddenly appeared on a fire escape landing, seemingly out of thin air. When Nick saw the suspect get up, he flew down and knocked the man out. He hypnotized Schanke into forgetting that he had seen him fly, but as further evidence came to light, the hypnotic suggestion wore off. Schanke first became suspicious when Nick asked to be driven home in the trunk of his car in order to avoid the light of the rising sun. All the little hints that Schanke had turned a blind eye to in the past suddenly came together: Nick's "sun allergy," the blood in his refrigerator, Janette's remark about knowing Nick during the Renaissance, Nick's allegiance to "The Nightcrawler," a comment that Nick had made about leaving one life and starting another, his reaction to a cross, etc. Schanke went to "The Nightcrawler" to

confirm his suspicions, and LaCroix convinced him that the trauma of having just killed someone, combined with his fatigue, was playing on his imagination. Schanke accepted this explanation and concluded that he'd been an idiot and that he shouldn't be probing into Nick's private life. After all, Nick was his partner and had saved his life.

Two of the cops that Schanke had been partnered with in the past were Jimmy Anderson and Patrick Delehanty. Schanke and Anderson were partners for four years, then Anderson transferred to Vice ("Hunters"). Nick and Schanke were walking with Anderson on his beat one night, encouraging him to accept the promotion to daytime commander that he'd been offered, when Anderson was suddenly shot by a psychotic cop wannabe, "Buzzsaw McAvoy," and died in Schanke's arms. Schanke later killed McAvoy on a police training course known as "Memory Lane." Delehanty, whom Schanke called "D," was Schanke's childhood friend and former roommate, as well as having been his partner for seven years. Delehanty transferred to Montreal, then quit the force and became a private investigator in Arizona. Unfortunately, he had become crooked. He was inadvertently shot when Schanke tried to overpower his partner in crime, Tom Dukes, and Dukes's gun went off. Anderson would have shot Schanke if Nick hadn't burst in and grabbed his weapon. Like Anderson, Delehanty died in Schanke's arms. Another police buddy of Schanke's, Detective Brian Sykes, committed suicide when an Internal Affairs investigation was about to bring to light the fact that Sykes was taking graft from a crime boss, Jimmy Vinetti ("The Fix"). Each of these deaths hit Schanke hard.

Food was something of an obsession for Schanke ("Last Act," "A Fate Worse than Death," "Hunted"), and his favorite food was souvlaki ("Dark Knight," "Last Act," "The Code"). Schanke once told Nick that it was a scientific fact that people hallucinate when they don't get enough fat and sugar ("Fatal Mistake").

Schanke didn't deal well with authority figures and had trouble with both of his captains ("Dead Air," "Forward into the Past"). With Captain Stonetree, Schanke was often painfully blunt and tactless, especially when it came to matters of wardrobe and weight ("Last Act," "1966"). With Captain Cohen, he tried too hard to get on her good side, and the pendulum swung to the opposite extreme. She had no trouble seeing through his attempts at "brown-nosing" ("Killer Instinct"). Schanke was also chronically late, which did nothing to help him get into Cohen's good graces ("Father's Day," "The Code").

Although he pretended not to be affected by it, Schanke had a hard time dealing with it when he had to kill someone in the line of duty. After he killed a "perp" back in '88, he used to stay up all night taking showers ("Fatal Mistake"). When he killed a man in an alley in self-defense, the stress and trauma that he felt as a result contributed to his obsession with finding out the truth about Nick ("Close Call").

Schanke was naturally cheerful and talkative ("Partners of the Month") and had a tendency to interject foreign words into his speech, as in, "Death is nothing, nada, niènte" ("Near Death") and "Willkommen, bien venu, and welcome to the wonderful world of police work" ("A Fate Worse than Death"). One of his signature lines was "Hasta la bye-bye" ("For I Have Sinned," "Dying for Fame"). He was also very down-to-earth and didn't have much faith in psychics ("Dying to Know You, "Forward into the Past").

Ever since a childhood visit to Hollywood, Schanke had a secret desire to be a part of that world ("Amateur Night"). When a TV show, Cop Watch, did a segment on Nick and Schanke, Schanke hammed it up and even called a talent agency ("Unreality TV"). When the episode aired, however, the agency dropped him. Schanke used some of his vacation time to moonlight as a consultant during the filming of a cop movie ("Amateur Night"). After impressing the movie's star, Alix Logan, with his real-life heroics, he got to play a bit pan in the movie.

Schanke was killed, along with Captain Cohen, in the first episode of the third season. He and Cohen were escorting a prisoner, Dollard, on a plane to Alberta when the plane was blown up by a serial bomber known as "Vudu," who was later killed by the vampire Vachon.

# CHARACTER HISTORY

## Janette

Janette DuCharme ("Be My Valentine") was a prostitute in Paris approximately 1,000 years ago ("A Fate Worse than Death"). She described the period to Nick as a time when "a woman belonged to her father, and then to her husband. To be passed on to a servant if she failed to produce an heir, to be sold to the brothel keeper if she was in the way of another marriage." LaCroix saved her from being raped by a man who was trying to obtain her services without paying. He offered her a life where, without her permission, no mere mortal would ever dare touch her again. The brothel keeper, Daviau, had told LaCroix that Janette was of noble blood, but when LaCroix asked Janette if it were true, she replied that she was whatever he wanted her to be. Her first act as a vampire was to kill Daviau.

Janette reveled in being a vampire and didn't care much what happened to mortals ("For I Have Sinned," "False Witness"). Despite her general disdain for mortals, however, she did have some sympathy for prostitutes, having been one herself ("A Fate Worse than Death").

Janette claimed not to be the mothering type ("I Will Repay"), but she occasionally let her maternal instincts show through. She offered her nightclub, the Raven, which also served as her home ("Close Call"), as a haven for vampires ("Hunters," "Love You to Death") and prostitutes ("A Fate Worse than Death"). As a mortal, she was clearly envious of her friend's pregnancy ("A Fate Worse than Death"). Later, as part of the vampire trio consisting also of LaCroix and Nick, she convinced the others to take in a homeless boy, Daniel, in London during World War II ("Father Figure"). She enjoyed having a little one about the house because it made them seem like a real family.

At one point, Janette told Nick that she had never brought anyone across ("I Will Repay"), explaining that she was never able to stop herself in time, while there was still life left in the person. History changed, as so often happens in television, and it was later revealed that she had brought across a baroness ("If Looks Could Kill") because she sympathized with the woman's desire to remain young and beautiful.

Janette and Nick had an on-again-off-again relationship for centuries. She loved him, but felt that eternity was too long to spend with one person ("Partners of the Month"). Although they had become primarily friends, they did have occasional romantic liaisons ("Crazy Love," "Partners of the Month," "Blood Money"). Janette liked it when Nick "needed" her ("Crazy Love"), and she was happy to provide him with shelter from the storm ("Curiouser and Curiouser") and to ease his burden in any way that she could ("Blood Money").

Although French was the native language of both Janette and Nick, Janette retained her French accent, while Nick lost his. They sometimes spoke French when they conversed privately ("Dark Knight"), and she had a tendency to interject French words even while speaking English ("Cherry Blossoms," "Feeding the Beast," "Killer Instinct"). She called Nick "Nicholah."

She was an occasional smoker ("Dark Knight," "False Witness," "Love You to Death"). She admitted that it was a bad habit, but at least it couldn't kill her ("Dark Knight"). She drank her blood mixed with wine, and she hated baseball because slow games make eternity seem so much longer ("Dark Knight").

Janette seduced Nick, a knight returning from the crusades, in 1228 ("Dance by the Light of the Moon"), then turned him over to LaCroix to bring him across. Although she loved Nick and helped him when she could, her greater loyalty was to their master vampire, LaCroix. Once, after helping Nick escape LaCroix's clutches in Paris, she later betrayed him and helped LaCroix reclaim him in Los Angeles ("Father's Day").

Janette and Nick had a long history and were consequently very in sync with each other and physically very comfortable with one another. They almost invariably kissed when greeting one another, departing from one another, or thanking one another ("Love You to Death," "Killer Instinct," "Forward into the Past"). When they were together, they often touched, embraced, or leaned against one another ("Dead Issue," "If Looks Could Kill," "Love You to Death").

For the two seasons that Janette was a regular character, she discouraged Nick's attempts to find a cure ("The Fix") and encouraged him to rejoin the vampire community ("Cherry Blossoms", "Killer Instinct").

Before the beginning of the third season, Janette left town without saying good-bye to Nick. In the first episode of the third season, Nick visited the Raven and was surprised to discover that it was now owned by LaCroix. Janette, it seems, had decided that, after twenty years in Toronto, it was time to move on ("Black Buddha"). Before turning over the Raven, however, she told LaCroix to "make sure there is always a place

where strays like us are welcome" ("The Human Factor"). The real reason that Janette left was later revealed through flashbacks ("The Human Factor"). After disapproving for centuries of Nick's quest to regain his mortality, she had finally begun to wonder if he might be right. She left town to reaffirm the vampire in her, only to fall in love with a mortal fireman, Robert McDonagh, who rescued her from a burning building in Montreal. She revealed the truth about herself to Robert, and while making love to him, she drank his blood, but was able to stop herself before taking too much. Each time they made love, she needed less and less blood. When Robert, who had become an arson investigator after being injured on the job, was shot to death by an arsonist, she tried to bring him across to save his life, but was unable to do so. Their lovemaking had somehow begun to change her vampire nature. When she retaliated and shot Robert's killer to death, the vampire in her vanished completely, and she regained her mortality. After Robert's death, she became the guardian of his son, Patrick, and finally achieved her centuries-old desire for a child. When Janette was shot, Nick brought her back across, against her protests, to save her life. She left town again, leaving Patrick in the custody of his aunt and uncle.

# CHARACTER HISTORY

## Detective Tracy Vetter

Tracy Vetter was a rookie detective who became Nick's partner after Schanke was killed in a plane crash at the beginning of the third season ("Black Buddha - Part I"). She graduated ninth in her class at the academy and was in uniform for five years before she made detective ("My Boyfriend is a Vampire"). Her father was Police Commissioner Richard Vetter ("Black Buddha - Part I," "Night in Question"), and her superior, Captain Reese, was constantly concerned about her safety because he wanted to stay on the commissioner's good side ("Black Buddha - Part II," "Trophy Girl"). Although no specific brothers or sisters were ever mentioned, Tracy must not have been an only child, since she had a nephew ("Blind Faith").

She came from a "family of cops," and her mother felt that Tracy had become one, also, purely because of her father's influence ("Avenging Angel"). The fact is, when Tracy was in college, she tried pre-med, pre-law, and computers before realizing that she was meant to be a cop ("Blackwing"). Tracy belonged to a sorority in college ("Blind Faith"). Early on in the season, when Natalie worried that she was sounding like Tracy's mother, Tracy replied, "Mom's okay; Dad's the killer" ("Black Buddha - Part II"). Later, it became clear that her relationship with her mother was, in fact, very strained ("Avenging Angel"). Her mother paid her a surprise visit, and right from the start, they were awkward and stiff with each other. Tracy's parents were getting a divorce, and Tracy blamed it on her mother's drinking. Her mother blamed her drinking on the fact that she was constantly worried and alone and the fact that her husband had cheated on her. They argued, and Tracy ended up slapping her mother, which she almost immediately regretted. Her relationship with her father wasn't completely smooth sailing, either. At one point, he tried to pressure her into accepting a transfer to Corporate Crime, which was a smart career move and a much safer assignment, but incredibly boring ("Strings"). She worked for one day as a "forensic accountant," then ignored her new superior's directives and took off to rejoin Nick on a homicide investigation. Tracy took it hard when she had to make her first kill, but it was in self-defense ("Trophy Girl"), and she knew in her heart that she was a good cop ("Blackwing").

Because her father was a police commissioner, she felt a great need to prove that she could succeed on her own merits ("Black Buddha - Part I"). Nevertheless, she wasn't above using her father's name and influence when she considered it necessary ("Black Buddha - Part I," "Strings").

After Schanke's death, Nick didn't want another partner ("Outside the Lines"), but he and Tracy ended up working well together, and she even withheld information from Captain Reese when she had reason to believe that Nick was helping a killer to escape ("The Human Factor").

Tracy was a very independent young woman and did what she thought was necessary, even when that meant directly proceeding against orders, or simply not telling anyone else what she was doing ("Black Buddha - Part II," "Strings," "Trophy Girl," "Let No Man Tear Asunder"). She didn't like having to ask anyone for help, but she went to her vampire friend, Vachon, for help and advice whenever anything weird came up that she thought might have a supernatural explanation ("My Boyfriend is a Vampire," "Hearts of Darkness," "Let No Man Tear Asunder," "Francesca").

Tracy was not a "night person" and found it difficult to adjust to her new shift, which started at 9:00 p.m. ("Black Buddha - Part I"). She was resistant to hypnotism ("Black Buddha - Part I"), and her idea of fun was to be in the studio audience of *The Jerry Show,* a TV tabloid talk show with topics such as "Supernatural Lovers," "Punks and Monks," and "Hit Men Who Marry Their Intended Victims" ("My Boyfriend is a Vampire"). As a child, she witnessed a friend, Susan Feldman, get killed by a train and was later visited by Susan's ghost after visiting a haunted house during the course of an investigation ("Dead of Night").

Tracy was somewhat anal retentive and a bit of a perfectionist. When Vachon checked out her refrigerator, he incredulously remarked that the contents are alphabetized ("My Boyfriend is a Vampire"). As a Girl Guide in the sixth grade, she won a merit badge in Native American Cultures ("Blackwing"). When she told Nick that she used to have a dog named "Sparky," he said that that's what he would expect, then asked if she also had a cat named "Fluffy" ("Blind Faith"). When Vachon saw her car for the first time, he asked if she picked it out herself and said that it looked like something her parents would drive ("Black Buddha - Part I"). He sarcastically admired the dual air bags, antilock brakes, and the fact that it probably got great gas mileage.

Tracy was very squeamish ("Trophy Girl," "Sons of Belial," "Jane Doe"), but Captain Reese forced her to confront the problem by ordering her to assist Natalie on an autopsy ("Jane Doe"). Once she focused on the investigative aspects of the autopsy, she was able to almost completely overcome her squeamishness.

Tracy knew that vampires existed, and she knew about Vachon and Screed, but she didn't know that her own partner was one ("Black Buddha - Part I," "Black Buddha - Part II," "My Boyfriend is a Vampire"). She was romantically interested in Vachon ("Black Buddha - Part I," "My Boyfriend is a Vampire") and cared deeply for him ("Fever," "Ashes to Ashes"), but she knew that nothing could come of it. She could feel the evil that was a part of what he was, and it frightened her ("Ashes to Ashes"). In the second-to-last episode, Vachon was attacked by LaCroix's evil daughter, Divia ("Ashes to Ashes"). He was unable to recuperate from the wounds and was dying a slow, agonizing death. Divia's thoughts and images were taking over his mind, and he was becoming incoherent. He begged Tracy to drive a stake through his heart, but she couldn't do it. He ran at her while she was holding the stake and drove it into his own heart. Tracy held him as he died and said that she loved him because he had opened her eyes. To ease her grieving, Nick asked LaCroix to hypnotize her so that all she would remember was that Vachon was a vampire and a good friend who had decided that it was time to move on. The knowledge of their existence had been Vachon's gift to Tracy, and Nick didn't want that taken away. Tracy had been resistant to hypnotism in the past ("Black Buddha - Part I"), but Nick had seen LaCroix work around that before.

In the final episode of the series, a transfer prisoner, Delbert Dawkins, managed to get a gun away from a police officer in the precinct ("Last Knight"). Nick tried to talk Dawkins into putting the gun down, but Dawkins fired instead. Nick took several bullets, not realizing that Tracy was standing behind him and had gotten shot, as well. Tracy saw what Nick was, and her last words to him before she lost consciousness were: "You could have trusted me." This was an ironic statement, since she hadn't trusted him, either. She knew the truth about vampires, but never shared that knowledge with her partner. Nick felt guilty and responsible for Tracy's injuries. As she lay dying in the hospital, he almost brought her across to save her life, but Natalie stopped him because he had no way of knowing if that was what Tracy would want. Tracy died later that night.

# CHARACTER HISTORY

## Javier Vachon

Javier Vachon was brought across in 1531 ("Black Buddha - Part II"). He was a soldier who got into a battle with an Inca. They battled for hours and delivered fatal blows to each other. As they both lay dying, a beautiful female vampire came to them and brought them both across. She told them that she wanted them to stop senseless killing in the world. She then walked towards the rising sun and perished. When Vachon and the Inca woke up the next night, Vachon tried to kill the Inca, but failed. He ran from the Inca for centuries, until they met in Toronto in 1995. The Inca turned out to be quite noble. He saved the lives of many people, but lost his own in the process when he took a bomb just as it was about to explode and flew into the sky with it. With the threat of the Inca behind him, Vachon decided to remain in Toronto for awhile.

Approximately two hundred years ago, Vachon fought in Queen Anne's Campaign in the French and Indian Wars ("Blackwing"). On and off for seventy-five years, he fought on whichever side was losing. He fought with the Iroquois against the French and with the Ojibwas against the English.

Vachon met Tracy because of the plane crash that killed Schanke and Cohen ("Black Buddha - Part I"). He was on the plane when it exploded, and Tracy saw him open his eyes as he lay among the wreckage. She told Reese that she had found a survivor, but Reese examined him and said that he was dead. Tracy later saw him running away from the wreckage. She next met up with him in a warehouse where body parts were being pieced together in an attempt to identify the victims. Vachon had lost his right hand in the crash and had come to reclaim it. He tried to hypnotize her into forgetting, but she resisted. Through Vachon, Tracy soon met two other vampires, the Inca and Vachon's friend, Screed. Screed was a lower form of vampire known as a karouche, and he subsisted primarily on rats. Tracy had no idea that her partner was a vampire, also.

In the past, Vachon and Screed had done a lot of carousing, occasionally joined by a third vampire, Bourbon ("My Boyfriend is a Vampire," "Hearts of Darkness"). It was on one of these outings that they met Urs, a saloon singer ("Hearts of Darkness"). Urs was desperately unhappy and allowed herself to be mistreated by men. She asked Vachon to kill her, but he couldn't bring himself to take her life, so he brought her across instead - a move that turned out to be very presumptuous. She wanted an end, but he gave her a beginning. She wanted a release from her emotional pain, and he gave her an eternity in which to bear it. Urs was a dancer at the Raven and was killed by LaCroix's daughter, Divia, towards the end of the series.

Tracy was romantically interested in Vachon ("Black Buddha - Part I," "My Boyfriend is a Vampire," "Fever"), but also felt an evil in him that frightened her ("Ashes to Ashes"). For the most part, Vachon acted as Tracy's protector and jumped into action whenever he felt that she was in danger - whether she needed his help or not ("My Boyfriend is a Vampire," "Trophy Girl"). He also served as an advisor to her whenever she ran into something inexplicable in a case. As she put it, "You're the only supernatural friend I have" ("Let No Man Tear Asunder").

Vachon almost died when he was infected by a man-made virus that was being developed as a possible cure for AIDS ("Fever"). Screed contracted the virus from a lab rat and passed it on to Vachon. Screed died, and Vachon fulfilled his promise to bury him by the water. As Vachon was dying, Tracy sat vigil at his bedside, but he sent her away when he saw Nick in the shadows. Nick injected Vachon with AIDS-tainted blood, which destroyed the virus.

In the second-to-last episode of the series, Vachon was attacked by LaCroix's daughter, Divia, the vampire who had brought LaCroix across ("Ashes to Ashes"). Her evil was so pervasive that he was unable to recover from his wounds. Her thoughts were becoming his, and he was slowly, painfully dying. He asked Tracy to kill him, but she couldn't do it. Instead, he ran at her while she was holding a stake, driving it into his own heart. As he died, Tracy told him that she loved him. She later buried him by the water, next to Screed.

# CHARACTER HISTORIES

## Captain Joe Stonetree

In the first season, Nick and Schanke worked for Captain Stonetree at the 27th Precinct. He was married ("Dead Issue"), and his badge number was 8623 ("Fatal Mistake"). In 1988, he won a trophy for his accordion playing at a Hempsburg Festival ("Dance by the Light of Moon"), and he kept a Neil Diamond CD in his office ("Dying for Fame"). He was low-key and philosophical and tended to use stories to illustrate his points ("Dark Knight," "Dead Air"). He did get stressed-out on occasion, however, and was variously described as sweating blood ("Dying for Fame") and eating Kleenex ("Dark Knight").

Two of his police buddies went bad, and he took it hard on both occasions. David Burkhart killed for a woman and was then killed by that woman ("Dance by the Light of the Moon"). Police Inspector Anthony Fiori killed his wife's lover and would have killed Stonetree if Nick hadn't arrived in time ("Dead Issue"). In 1978, he lost his partner, Billy Wisdom, when a parolee ambushed them with a shotgun ("Hunters"). Stonetree emptied his revolver and killed the man.

Stonetree was devastated when he had to kill a young man in self-defense ("Fatal Mistake"). At first, he never wanted to pick up his gun again, but he eventually worked through the guilt.

## Captain Amanda Cohen

In the second season, Nick and Schanke transferred to the 96th precinct and worked for Captain Cohen. She was brisk, efficient, and authoritative. She had little patience, especially for Schanke, and little sense of humor, especially when it came to Schanke ("Killer Instinct," "A Fate Worse than Death," "Partners of the Month"). She was not totally immune to a man's charms, however, and got on very well with Schanke's former partner, Patrick Delehanty ("The Code"). She had a young daughter ("Amateur Night") and was once heard whispering sweet nothings into the phone ("Be My Valentine").

Cohen started out in law enforcement as a federal agent. One day, while breaking up a drug ring, a terrible firefight broke out, and three agents were killed, including her partner. The bullet that killed him was never found, but evidence suggested that it might have been "friendly fire" - Cohen's fire. She was terribly afraid to return to duty, but finally realized that fear is an enemy that must not be ignored. If you face it, rather than run from it, it will make you stronger.

In the first episode of the third season, Cohen was killed, along with Schanke, when they were escorting a prisoner, Dollard, on a plane to Alberta. The plane was blown up by a serial bomber known as "Vudu," who was later killed by the vampire Vachon.

## Captain Joe Reese

Joe Reese, a former vice cop ("Jane Doe"), was supposed to fill for Cohen while she and Schanke transported a prisoner. When their plane went down, he was promoted and permanently transferred from Castle Frank to the 96th precinct ("Black Buddha - Part I"). He had a wife, Denise ("Black Buddha - Part I," "My Boyfriend is a Vampire"), and two children ("Black Buddha - Part I"). He claimed not to believe in ghosts, but after visiting a haunted house, he was visited by the ghost of a young soldier, Jordan, who had died in war. It was never stated, but the impression was given that Jordan was his older brother, since the ghost called Reese "Little Joe."

Reese freely admitted that he "sucked up" to Police Commissioner Richard Vetter ("Black Buddha - Part I," "Night in Question") in order to win the promotion to the rank of Captain. Vetter's daughter, Tracy, was a rookie detective who became Nick's partner when Schanke died. Reese worried constantly about Tracy's safety because he wanted to stay on the commissioner's good side ("Black Buddha - Part I," "Black Buddha - Part II," "Trophy").

Reese had a very straightforward, no-nonsense manner. He liked to cut to the chase, and everyone knew exactly where they stood with him ("Dead of Night," "Jane Doe"). He treated his detectives with respect, and it was reciprocated. Although it was always clear that he was the boss, he was not above sharing a moment of humor with them ("My Boyfriend is a Vampire").

# CHARACTER HISTORIES

## Alma

Alma was a beautiful vampire who seduced Schanke and would have killed him if Janette hadn't stopped her ("Hunters"). She apparently had a flair for interior decorating, and Janette suggested that she might be able to improve the decor of the 27th precinct ("Love You to Death").

## Grace Balthazar

Grace was Natalie's friend and coworker. She couldn't resist the romantic vampire novel, *The Denied* ("Stranger than Fiction"), and she was delighted when Natalie finally had some romance in her life ("Only the Lonely"). She organized a surprise party for Natalie's 30th birthday and presented her with sexy lingerie as a gift from the morgue's staff ("Only the Lonely").

She helped solve a case when she noticed gunpowder bums on the elbow of a dead suspect's jacket, indicating that it was not the dead man who had shot at Captain Stonetree, but an accomplice who had been standing on the other side of a chain-link fence ("Fatal Mistake").

## Lapinsky

Lapinsky was an oft-mentioned, never seen member of the 96th precinct ("Killer Instinct," "Beyond the Law," "Baby Baby"). It was implied that he was married ("Beyond the Law").

## Miklos

Miklos was the mysterious bartender at the Raven. He was not a vampire ("Bad Blood").

## Norma

Norma was a desk clerk at the 27th precinct ("Hunters," "Only the Lonely"). At one point, she discovered that, according to her database, Detective Nick Knight did not exist ("Hunters"). A computer expert, Larry Merlin, corrected the problem by downloading information into systems all the way down the line - from the hospital that Nick was supposedly born in, to his last job.

## Screed

Screed was a cockney vampire friend of Vachon's. He was approximately 450 years old ("Fever"), and subsisted primarily on rats ("Black Buddha - Part II"). He was a karouche - a lower form of vampire that fed primarily on animals ("Blind Faith"). Whatever a newly made vampire fed on first was the thing that that vampire would hunger for. For Screed, it was rats. He did occasionally drink human blood ("My Boyfriend is a Vampire"), and spent some time carousing with Vachon and another vampire, Bourbon ("My Boyfriend is a Vampire," "Hearts of Darkness").

Screed contracted a fatal virus from an escaped lab rat ("Fever"). It was a man-made virus that was being developed as a possible cure for AIDS. Before he died, he asked Vachon to bury him by the water, since he had been a sailor in life. Vachon contracted the virus from Screed and was dying, also, but a cure was discovered in time to save him. Shortly thereafter, Vachon was killed by LaCroix's daughter, Divia, and Tracy buried him next to Screed ("Ashes to Ashes").

## Urs

Urs, a vampire, was a dancer at the Raven. As a mortal saloon singer, she met the vampire trio of Vachon, Screed, and Bourbon ("Hearts of Darkness"). She was desperately unhappy and allowed men to mistreat her. Since the age of twelve, when her father abandoned her family, she had sought the approval and love of every man she had met. When she saw what Vachon was, she begged him to kill her. He couldn't bring himself to do it, and to her great disappointment, he brought her across instead. She'd asked for an end to her misery. Instead, she'd gotten an eternity in which to endure it. She was later killed by LaCroix's daughter, Divia ("Ashes to Ashes").

# VAMPIRE LORE

Vampire folklore differs from culture to culture, legend to legend, and author to author. Even within the realm of *Forever Knight,* the rules tended to change from episode to episode, creating a challenging maze of myths. What follows is a breakdown of some of the more common elements of vampire lore and a discussion of how they relate to the *Forever Knight* universe.

**Animals** - *In Forever Knight,* it was possible for animals to be "brought across." A guide dog, Perry, was made a vampire in "Blind Faith."

The *Forever Knight* vampires could live on animal blood, as well as human blood, but it was an acquired taste. Nick drank cow's blood, and Janette shuddered when she tasted it in "Cherry Blossoms." LaCroix expressed his distaste for it in "Baby Baby" and "A More Permanent Hell." As stated in "Blind Faith," if a vampire's first kill was not human, that vampire would not hunger for humans. These vampires who fed primarily on animals were known as karouches. In that same episode, LaCroix said that dogs were for breakfast, but only in the hardest of times.

**Appearance** - In some myths, a vampire's appearance remains forever as it was at the moment of death. This was not the case in *Forever Knight.* The hair lengths and styles of Nick and Janette changed frequently, as did Nick's degree of facial hair. The color of LaCroix's hair changed, as well. When Janette got a tattoo in "Faithful Followers," however, it would be gone the next night.

Other than being cold and pale, as stated in "Only the Lonely" and "The Human Factor," the *Forever Knight* vampires looked "normal" and could pass for human. When they fed, became sexually aroused, or fought, however, they changed to the vampire state, which included glowing eyes and/or bared fangs. Although these usually manifested themselves at the same time, there were exceptions. In "Father's Day," an angry LaCroix's eyes blazed, but his teeth appeared normal. At different times in "The Fix," Nick displayed each of the conditions separately.

**Ashes** - To ensure that a *Forever Knight* vampire stayed dead, it was advisable to bum the body and scatter the ashes. In "Ashes to Ashes," Divia was decapitated, but later regenerated. When Nick later staked her, LaCroix burned her body and committed her ashes to the wind to prevent her from regenerating again. In "Dark Knight - The Second Chapter," Nick drove a burning stake into LaCroix and appeared to kill him. LaCroix survived, however, and no real explanation was given. One theory is that Nick neglected to scatter his ashes.

Of course, this only applies when there is actually a body to bum. In "If Looks Could Kill," Nick told Natalie that vampires disappeared when they died. Indeed, this was what happened when Nick staked Richard in "I Will Repay." At some point, however, the rules changed. When Nick staked Spark in "A More Permanent Hell," his body did not disappear. Likewise, Vachon had to bury Screed's body in "Fever," and Tracy had to bury Vachon's body in "Ashes to Ashes."

Two vampires committed suicide by letting the sun incinerate them. In "Last Act," nothing was left of Erica but the clothes she'd been wearing. In "Can't Run, Can't Hide," the ashes of the Viet Cong vampire were left behind, although Forensics wasn't able to identify them.

**Bats** - The *Forever Knight* vampires did not transform into bats.

**Becoming a Vampire** - As in many vampire myths, it was generally true in *Forever Knight* that a person became a vampire (i.e., was "brought across" or "brought over") by being almost completely drained of blood, then ingesting the blood of a vampire. LaCroix brought Nick across in this manner in "Near Death," and Nick attempted (but failed) to bring Alyssa across in this way in "Dead of Night." It should be noted that the person need not be brought across by the same vampire who had drained his or her blood. In "Fatal Mistake," Nick drank Alexandra's blood and left her for dead, but LaCroix detected a spark of life and brought her across with his own blood. There were numerous instances where the draining of blood was shown, but not the transference of the vampire's blood. Only the initial bite was shown in "Dark Knight - The Second Chapter," "I Will Repay," "Baby Baby," "Hearts of Darkness," "Fever," and "The Human Factor."

As usual, there were inconsistencies. Bringing someone across appeared to be a deliberate act, yet Jack the Ripper was unintentionally made a vampire in "Bad Blood." In "Dark Knight - The Second Chapter," Alyce offered her blood to give Nick the strength that he needed to fight LaCroix. He protested that it could kill her, but she countered that it might make her immortal.

Whether or not one must choose to become a vampire was another area of inconsistency. Choice appeared to be an important consideration in "Father Figure," "A Fate Worse than Death," and "Fever," but it was not a factor in "Fatal Mistake," "Baby Baby," and "Hearts of Darkness."

According to some legends, a person who dies in an unnatural manner, such as by suicide, violence, or a sudden accident, may become a vampire. This was not the case in *Forever Knight.*

In *Forever Knight,* an eternal bond existed between a vampire and the one who brought him or her across. Janette asked if Nick was prepared for this when he considered bringing Richard over in "I Will Repay." Nick didn't think that it would happen, but Janette reminded him of how LaCroix had followed him through the centuries. Because of this bond, Nick was unable to successfully lie to LaCroix in "Father's Day," and LaCroix pointed out that Nick couldn't hide his thoughts from him in "Unreality TV." In "The Code," LaCroix told Nick that he would always be able to find him, and in "The Human Factor," LaCroix was sure that he would have felt Janette's presence if she were in town. He didn't know, of course, that she had regained her mortality.

**Bitten** - What happens to someone who is bitten by a vampire, but not killed? In *Forever Knight,* the answer varied. In "If Looks Could Kill," Nick told Natalie that such a person would become a zombie. In "Crazy Love," however, Nick fed on Amalia several times. She grew weaker each time, but suffered no other ill effects. In "Strings," Rasputin's "treatments" caused Alexi to become weak, pale, feverish, and thirsty. His bones ached, and bright lights hurt his eyes.

In "Bad Blood," LaCroix bit the barber (who later turned out to be Jack the Ripper), but because of the man's evil, LaCroix became ill and wasn't able to finish him off. He asked Nick to take care of it, but Nick refused. The barber was left to die, but somehow came across. In the same episode, O'Neal was bitten and half-drained as a child, then brought to a priest who sprinkled holy water on the wound. Unlike the barber, O'Neal didn't "taste" enough vampire blood to come fully across. Instead, he became a vampire hunter. He was not immortal (he aged), but he had a mild intolerance to sunlight, and he had the ability to sense vampires. Both the barber and O'Neal were bitten, but since no deliberate attempt was made to bring either of them across, how did either of them "taste" vampire blood? The question was left unanswered. One theory is that bodily fluids were exchanged through the puncture wounds, but this was never actually stated.

**Blood (as Nourishment)** - As in every vampire myth, the *Forever Knight* vampires lived on blood. As shown in several episodes, including "Feeding the Beast" and "Night in Question," they could eat real food, but the need for blood would reassert itself. It needn't be human blood, however. Nick subsisted primarily on cow's blood, much to the disgust of his fellow vampires. Janette found it repugnant in "Cherry Blossoms," as did LaCroix in "Baby Baby" and "A More Permanent Hell." In "Love You to Death," Janette lamented to Nick, "You know how rarely any of us gets to feed on humans anymore - not that it isn't sometimes very tempting." Presumably, she was referring to the fact that modem vampires tended to drink bottled human blood instead of feeding on live humans, rather than implying that she drank the blood of other animals.

One taste of a person's blood did not necessarily compel the vampire to drain that person. Nick drank from women in stages, stretching their deaths out over several nights, in "Fallen Idol" and "Crazy Love." Nick briefly tasted Claire's blood in "Black Buddha - Part I," as did LaCroix with Fleur's in "Be My Valentine." If the vampire was sexually aroused, it was more difficult to stop, as shown in "Last Knight," but it was not impossible, as evidenced in "The Human Factor."

In some vampire legends, vampires must feed on the blood of the living. This was not the case in *Forever Knight.* As shown in "Francesca," sudden death sweetened the blood. Without a beating heart to bring the blood to the neck, the victim's blood would have to be drained, but the blood of someone who had been killed right before being drained was something of a delicacy.

**Blood (contains Memories)** - In *Forever Knight,* blood was much more than nourishment for the vampires. It was the way they felt life. Each drop of blood contained a person's whole life, and with one sip, the vampire

could know the person's soul. In "Francesca," Nick explained to Natalie that that was what made it such a tough habit to break. When Nick and Francesca drank the blood of the violinist Faubert, they acquired his musical skills, although it would last only a few hours. When Nick and Erica drank each other's blood while making love in "Last Act," she shared his memories of the crusades, and she hoped that she hadn't infected him with her ideas of death.

**Blood (Sweat & Tears)** - As in many vampire legends, the *Forever Knight* vampires sweat blood and cried blood tears. Nick woke up in a blood sweat many times, as seen in "Dark Knight," "False Witness," "Dying For Fame," and "Feeding the Beast," as did Richard in "I Will Repay." Nick also sweat blood when he was sick in "Fever," and Serena cried blood tears in "Baby Baby."

It was stated in "Stranger than Fiction" that the *Forever Knight* vampires had no blood in their bodies unless they'd just fed. This was supported by the fact that Nick usually shed no blood when he got shot. However, a bullet grazed Nick's cheek in "Hunted" and left a streak of blood, and in "Feeding the Beast," Nick woke up in a blood sweat, even after abstaining from blood.

**Choice** - One of the inconsistent tenets in the *Forever Knight* universe was that a person must choose to become a vampire. LaCroix told Janette that she must choose in "A Fate Worse than Death." In "Father Figure," Nick protested that Daniel was too young to choose, although LaCroix took it upon himself to make the choice for Daniel. In "Fever," Dr. Gerald Archer wanted Nick and LaCroix to share with him whatever it was that kept them safe from the plague. LaCroix told Nick, "Free consent, freely given. Let him be saved." Only then did Nick bring the doctor across.

There were some discrepancies, however. In "Fatal Mistake," Alexandra was unconscious when LaCroix poured blood into her mouth to bring her over. She definitely did not choose to become a vampire and was certainly not happy about it. Likewise, Serena had no idea what was happening to her in "Baby Baby." She thought it was a dream and was horrified to discover that it was real. Urs, in "Hearts of Darkness," was hoping to die and never wanted the gift of eternity.

**Churches** - The reaction that the *Forever Knight* vampires had to churches was a matter of some inconsistency. In a flashback in "For I Have Sinned," Nick followed Joan of Arc into a church. Yet in the present, he didn't want to enter one, and when he had to, he became weak and dizzy. In "The Games Vampires Play," Nick was a bit wary in a church, but had no real problems. In "Black Buddha - Part I," Vachon lived in an abandoned church and had no problems, whatsoever.

**Coffins** - For the most part, the *Forever Knight* vampires did not sleep in coffins. Nick was shown waking up in his bed on many occasions, including "Dark Knight" and "Dying for Fame." In "Dying to Know You," he told Denise Ford that he did not sleep in a coffin. As seen in "Hunters," however, Janette kept a coffin in the Raven's wine cellar, which also served as a haven for vampires. One vampire in that same episode even slept hanging upside down, bat-like, in a closet.

**Crosses** - The *Forever Knight* vampires were repelled by the sight of crosses and burned by contact with them. In "For I Have Sinned," Nick explained that vampires feared the cross because it was a symbol of the one true light, and they were creatures of the dark. Just being around them made Nick feel weak and afraid. In a flashback in that episode, Nick's hand burst into flames when he simply reached towards a cross. Later, when he held a cross, the only damage was an imprint burned into his palm. This indicated that Natalie's attempts to cure him were having some effect. There were further examples of vampires being repelled by crosses in "Killer Instinct," Bad Blood," "Forward into the Past," "Hunted," "Hearts of Darkness," and "Sons of Belial."

**Daytime** - In many myths, vampires must sleep during the day. This was not the case in *Forever Knight.* While they couldn't tolerate sunlight, they could remain awake indoors. Nick spent the day in a church in "For I Have Sinned," he had to make a daytime court appearance in "False Witness," he had to show up for work early in "Dying for Fame," he spent the day in the Raven in "Bad Blood," and he saved Schanke's life during the day in "Hunted." As shown in "False Witness" and "Hunted," Nick felt relatively weak when he had to function during the daytime.

**Decapitation** - Although it was stated in "Dark Knight - The Second Chapter" that decapitation was lethal to the *Forever Knight* vampires, there was at least one exception. In "Ashes to Ashes," LaCroix decapitated his daughter, Divia, in ancient Egypt and interred her remains in a sarcophagus with a sun god on the lid which acted much as a cross would to imprison her for centuries. A graverobber inadvertently set her free, and she was able to regenerate due to the evil of the ancient vampire Qa' Ra that still permeated the crypt. When Nick later staked and killed Divia, LaCroix burned her body and scattered her ashes to prevent her from regenerating again.

**Dhampirs** - In some myths, a dhampir is the son of a male vampire and a human female. While not immortal, they have some supernatural powers, including the ability to detect vampires. For this reason, they make excellent vampire hunters. Since the *Forever Knight* vampires could not reproduce, as stated in "Father Figure" and "Baby Baby," dhampirs were not a part of that world.

**Empirical Evidence** - As shown in "Unreality TV," if a person had empirical evidence of a vampire's existence, such as a photograph or videotape, that person could not be hypnotized into forgetting what he or she had seen until the evidence was destroyed. It was the duty of the Enforcers to destroy the evidence and/or kill the person.

**Enforcers** - As stated in "Unreality TV," the Enforcers were sworn to protect the vampires' secret and to keep the world from learning of their existence. They were a particularly ruthless breed of vampire and would not only destroy any evidence that a mortal might have of a vampire's existence, but would kill the mortal and the vampire, as well, if necessary. When a mortal, Tawny Teller, learned that Nick was a vampire, the Enforcers came to destroy her videotaped evidence and would have killed her, as well, if Nick had not intervened. The Enforcers were probably tipped off by a vampire named Danny, who worked as a night technician at the television studio.

It is unclear why the Enforcers never came after Natalie or Tracy. It was no secret that Natalie not only knew about vampires, but was trying to help Nick regain his mortality. Janette confronted Natalie about it in "The Fix," as did LaCroix in "Be My Valentine" and "Night in Question." Likewise, there were others besides Vachon who knew that Tracy knew the truth - Screed and the Inca, for example. Of course, it could be that none of these vampires ever reported Natalie or Tracy to the Enforcers, as Danny apparently reported to Tawny Teller. In "The Fix," however, Janette said that there were no secrets among their kind and that "they" would know what Nick was doing even if she didn't tell them. In that same episode, LaCroix likewise warned Nick that there were those who would view his potential cure as a threat to the vampires' existence. Yet Natalie continued to work towards curing Nick without interference from the Enforcers.

**Entering without an Invitation** - In some legends, vampires cannot enter a new place unless they are bid. In others, they may enter, but are powerless. This bit of lore did not apply in the *Forever Knight* universe. Nick burst into many places without an invitation and never suffered any loss of powers. There were many examples of this, including "False Witness," "Only the Lonely," "Unreality TV," "Forward into the Past," and "Trophy Girl."

**Eyes** - Only when in the vampire state (i.e., when feeding, sexually aroused, or fighting) did the *Forever Knight* vampires' eyes glow. Otherwise, they appeared normal. When they did glow, the color was anything from yellow to amber to red.

**Fangs** - Only when in the vampire state (i.e., when feeding, sexually aroused, or fighting) did the *Forever Knight* vampires have fangs. Otherwise, their teeth appeared normal.

**Fingernails** - Contrary to some other myths, the *Forever Knight* vampires did not have talon-like fingernails, even when they changed to the vampire state.

**Fire** - Fire was lethal to the *Forever Knight* vampires. In "The Fire Inside," Nick told Natalie that death by fire was his worst nightmare. The vampire Elizabeth died by fire in "I Will Repay," as did the vampire Dr. Gerald

Archer in "Fever." Small bums were not lethal, however. Nick burned LaCroix's face in "Dark Knight - The Second Chapter," which only served to anger LaCroix. In a flashback in "For I Have Sinned," Nick's hand burst into flames when he tried to touch a cross, but his injuries were not fatal. Although fire was potentially deadly to him, Nick ran into a burning motel room to save Schanke in "Hunters," he helped two escaped slaves get out of a burning cabin in "The Fire Inside," he saved a woman from being burned to death while tied to a cross in "For I Have Sinned," he played with a candle flame in "Hunters" and "Dance by the Light of the Moon," and he had a fire burning in his fireplace on a number of occasions.

**First Feeding/First Kill** - It was stated in "Fever" that when a newly made vampire awakened for the first time, the hunger was so great that the vampire would do anything for the blood he or she needed. The vampire would kill an enemy, a friend, even a lover. Also, if the vampire's first kill was not human, he or she would not hunger for humans. Screed first fed on rats, so that was what he hungered for. He did occasionally indulge in a human meal, however, as in "My Boyfriend is a Vampire." As defined in "Blind Faith," vampires who fed on animals were known as karouches.

**Flying** - The *Forever Knight* vampires could fly, as shown in numerous episodes, including "Dying to Know You," "Killer Instinct," and "Crazy Love." They did not, however, turn into bats.

**Food** - Although food was unnecessary, even repugnant, to the *Forever Knight* vampires, it was possible for them to eat and drink regular food. In "Dark Knight," Janette revealed that she drank her blood mixed with a little wine. In "Feeding the Beast," Nick tried to kick his blood habit and ate French fries with no ill effect. In "1966," he drank vodka and ate food, although he choked on it. In "The Code," he drank curare-laced whiskey. Although the poison intoxicated him, he had no problem drinking the whiskey. In "Night in Question," when Nick had amnesia and didn't know that he was a vampire, he ate all kinds of regular food. Eventually, however, the need for blood reasserted itself. After four years of Natalie's attempts to cure him of his vampirism, Nick had progressed to the point that he could eat raw hamburger, as stated in "Black Buddha - Part I."

**Garlic** - The *Forever Knight* vampires were repelled by garlic, as shown in "Dark Knight" and "Father Figure."

**Heartbeat** - In most legends, a vampire's heart does not beat. In "I Will Repay," it was revealed that a *Forever Knight* vampire's heart would beat once every ten minutes or so. In "The Human Factor," Janette held Robert's hand to her heart, and he was shocked to find that it was not beating.

**Holy Water** - As shown in "Hunted," holy water was repellent to the *Forever Knight* vampires. In "Bad Blood," holy water was used to treat O'Neal when he was bitten by a vampire as a child.

**Hypnotism** - The *Forever Knight* vampires could hypnotize most mortals. Nick did it in on numerous occasions, including "Dark Knight," "A Fate Worse than Death," and "Queen of Harps." The Baroness and Serena hypnotized jail guards in "If Looks Could Kill" and "Baby Baby," respectively. Some mortals were resistant, however. Natalie was resistant in "Only the Lonely" and "A More Permanent Hell," and Tracy was resistant in "Black Buddha - Part I." Others who resisted hypnotism included Matthew in "Dying to Know You," Dr. Chung in "Cherry Blossoms," Sean Du Champs in "Blood Money," and Charly in "My Boyfriend is a Vampire." As stated in "Unreality TV," a person with empirical evidence of a vampire's existence, such as a photograph or videotape, could not be hypnotized into forgetting what he or she had seen until the evidence was destroyed. It was the duty of the Enforcers to destroy the evidence and/or kill the person.

**Immortality** - The *Forever Knight* vampires were, for all intents and purposes, immortal. That is to say, they would not die of disease or old age. They could be killed, however, by sunlight, fire, a stake through the heart, decapitation, starvation, or a certain man-made virus.

**Invisibility** - The *Forever Knight* vampires did not have the ability to become invisible, although they often moved faster than the human eye could detect, as in "Spin Doctor," "A Fate Worse than Death," and "Night in Question."

**Karouche** - In the *Forever Knight* universe, a karouche was a lower form of vampire who fed on animals, as described in "Blind Faith." In "Fever," Vachon explained that whatever a vampire fed on for his or her first feeding was the thing that that vampire would hunger for. In the case of Vachon's friend, Screed, it was rats. Screed did occasionally partake in a human meal, however, as seen in "My Boyfriend is a Vampire." In "Blind Faith," Screed said that the crop circles and mutilated cows found in England were not the work of extraterrestrials, but of karouches.

**Killing a Vampire** - In "Dark Knight - The Second Chapter," LaCroix stated that vampires could be killed by sunlight, fire, a stake through the heart, or decapitation. Later in that episode, as well as in "A More Permanent Hell," it was also claimed that they could die of starvation. In "Fever," a man-made virus that was being developed as a possible cure for AIDS was lethal to them, as well.

There were some discrepancies as to what happened after a vampire was destroyed. In "If Looks Could Kill," it was stated that the vampire's body would disappear. Indeed, this was what happened in "I Will Repay." In later episodes, however, such as "A More Permanent Hell," "Fever," and "Ashes to Ashes," the vampires' bodies did not disappear and had to be disposed of.

**Mist** - The *Forever Knight* vampires did not transform into mist.

**Native Soil** - There was no evidence that the *Forever Knight* vampires had to sleep on or in their native soil, line the soles of their shoes with it, or ever have any of it nearby.

**Odor** - Unlike in so many other vampire myths, there was nothing to suggest that the smell of death, decay or blood lingered on the *Forever Knight* vampires.

**Photographs/Videotape** - Contrary to many other vampire legends, the *Forever Knight* vampires could be photographed and videotaped. Janette had photographs of herself, Nick, and LaCroix in "Close Call," as well as a photograph of herself and Nick in "The Human Factor." In "Spin Doctor," a photograph of Nick appeared in an old Chicago Herald newspaper article; in "1966," Nick had a photograph of himself with the Toffler family; in "Forward into the Past," Katherine Barrington kept a photograph of Nick; and in "Unreality TV," photographs of LaCroix were taken on a battlefield during the Civil War. Nick was caught on videotape using his vampire powers to catch a criminal in "Unreality TV," and he answered questions for television reporters in "Dark Knight," "Spin Doctor," and "Avenging Angel." Vachon appeared on television in "Blackwing," and he was videotaped for *The **Jerry** Show* in "My Boyfriend is a Vampire."

As shown in "Unreality TV," as long as a person possessed photographic or videotaped proof of a vampire's existence, that person could not be hypnotized into forgetting what he or she had seen. It became the mission of the Enforcers to destroy the evidence and/or kill the person.

**Psychic Abilities** - The *Forever Knight* vampires had the ability to hypnotize mortals, as seen in numerous episodes, including 'Dark Knight," "A Fate Worse than Death," and "Queen of Harps." Some mortals were resistant, however, as seen in several episodes, including "Only the Lonely" and "Black Buddha - Part I." Additionally, the *Forever Knight* vampires had the ability to recognize others of their kind and to sense their presence. Nick recognized Danny as a vampire in "Unreality TV," and he sensed the presence of Janette in "Killer Instinct" and Urs in "Hearts of Darkness." Janette sensed LaCroix's arrival in "Stranger than Fiction." As usual, there were inconsistencies. LaCroix surreptitiously observed Nick and Amalia in "Crazy Love," and Nick spied on Serena and Trilling in "Baby Baby." Additionally, Nick had no idea that Janette was no longer a vampire in "The Human Factor," yet he should have been able to sense this.

There was nothing to suggest that the *Forever Knight* vampires had other psychic abilities such as telekinesis, pyrokinesis, psychometry, or telepathy.

**Recuperative Powers** - As in most vampire lore, the *Forever Knight* vampires had incredible recuperative powers. The speed of the healing process was somewhat inconsistent, however. LaCroix was shot and dropped to his knees in "Hunters," but quickly recovered. Nick and Janette were shot in "A Fate Worse than Death" and showed no ill effects, whatsoever. Nick got shot on numerous other occasions, as well, including "Dark

Knight," "For I Have Sinned," "Unreality TV," and "Hunted." Bullets usually passed right through him and never slowed him down. In "Father Figure," however, a bullet remained in his shoulder, and the wound did not heal right up. Natalie took this as a sign that his metabolism was changing and that he was becoming more human.

In "I Will Repay," Nick's face was burned by a cross. Later, he wore a bandage on his face, so apparently, it took a bit of time to heal. Nick recovered fairly quickly from bums caused by the sun in "Capital Offense," "Hunted," and "Night in Question," as did LaCroix in "Be My Valentine."

Since vampires healed quickly, one might wonder why Urs and Serena still bore bite marks on their necks when they first woke up as vampires in "Hearts of Darkness" and "Baby Baby," respectively. One theory is that they wouldn't have healed until they had fed for the first time.

**Reflections/Shadows** - One of the more common elements of vampire mythology is that vampires cast neither reflections, nor shadows. This was not the case in *Forever Knight,* although there was some question on the matter early on in the series. In "Dark Knight," Natalie called Nick to check on his progress and asked, "Have you checked yourself in the mirror? Is it working?" In "Father Figure," Nick revealed to Natalie that he could see himself in the mirror, but only sometimes. She took this as sign that he was getting closer to mortality. Nick was clearly reflected in a mirror in a hotel room in "A Fate Worse than Death," and he was reflected in the mirror in the interrogation room on a number of occasions. It certainly would have made it difficult for him to masquerade as a mortal if he hadn't been. In "Dying to Know You," Denise Ford saw Nick reflected in a mirror, but because of her psychic abilities, she saw him reflected in the vampire state, with glowing eyes and bared fangs. Vachon was reflected in a mirror in Tracy's apartment in "Black Buddha - Part I," and he was certainly not making any attempt to regain his mortality.

Vampires' shadows were seen in any number of episodes. "Baby Baby" is one example.

**Religious Symbols** - An aversion to Christian symbols was seen in numerous episodes, such as "For I Have Sinned," "Bad Blood," "Forward into the Past," "Hunted," and "Sons of Belial." In "False Witness," Nick burned his hand when he placed it on a bible to be sworn in as a witness at a murder trial. He managed to conceal this fact from the others in the courtroom, however.

Nick also received a shock when he touched a Native American ceremonial knife in "Blackwing," and he became uneasy and wouldn't go past a menorah in "Partners of the Month."

**Repelling a Vampire** - The *Forever Knight* vampires were repelled in many of the traditional ways. They shied away from religious symbols, as shown in "For I Have Sinned," "Partners of the Month," "Hunted," "Blackwing," and "Sons of Belial." Garlic was repellent to them, as well, as shown in "Dark Knight" and "Father Figure."

Some elements of traditional vampire lore did not apply, however. There was no evidence that the *Forever Knight* vampires were repelled by iron or silver. In some legends, vampires can be kept at bay by seeds because they become obsessed with counting them and will not continue on their way until they have counted all that lie in their path. Some legends have the additional stipulation that they can only count them at the rate of one per year. There was no evidence that this was true in *Forever Knight.* Similarly, in some legends, vampires become obsessed with the written word and must read all that is placed before them. Therefore, vampires could be kept at bay by books and newspapers. Again, this myth did not apply in *Forever Knight.* Wolfsbane is another traditional vampire repellent that did not appear to be a part of *Forever Knight.*

**Reproduction** - The *Forever Knight* vampires could not reproduce, as stated in "Father Figure" and "Baby Baby."

**Running Water** - Some myths hold that vampires cannot cross running water. There was no evidence to suggest that this held true in the *Forever Knight* universe.

**Sex** - This issue is one of the most complicated and contradictive subjects in vampire lore. The nature of vampire/vampire and vampire/human sex was addressed time and again in *Forever Knight,* and the rules kept changing! Whether or not the *Forever Knight* vampires had conventional sex, it was clear that the desire for

blood was an integral part of sexual arousal. Nick kissed Amalia until he couldn't resist biting her in "Crazy Love," as he did with Liselle in "Trophy Girl" and Natalie in "Last Knight." Vachon did the same with Urs in "Hearts of Darkness."

There was some evidence to suggest that the *Forever Knight* vampires (male vampires, anyway) could not have sex. In "Let No Man Tear Asunder," Hans, a mortal who was trying to "cure" Nick, remarked that he would give his fortune for Nick's vitality, to which Nick replied, "So you would like to step into my boots, would you, Hans? You'd have to give up the women." In "Hearts of Darkness," a woman with multiple personalities, Ellen Simmons, was able to function as a mortal, even though one of her personalities was truly a vampire. Whenever Ellen adopted one of her human personalities, she was able to tolerate sunlight and food, and she was able to have sex (with humans). These were things that Nick, as a vampire, could not do. Natalie marveled at the powers of the mind and told Nick that it was something for him to think about. In "Love You to Death," Nick was infatuated with a mortal, and LaCroix plainly told him, "There really are only three choices in this matter. Try to love her as a human. Well, we all know that's impossible so let's move right along. Continue in this manner to gaze at her over the balustrade like a lovestruck mongrel, which would be a terrific waste of eternity. Or consummate your intense love for her in the most intense way. Take her. Kill her."

The preponderance of evidence, however, suggested that the *Forever Knight* vampires could and did have sex, at least with each other. The sexual innuendo between Nick and Erica in "Last Act" left little room for misinterpretation. Backstage after performing a play, Erica said to Nick, "You, sir, are very skilled with your sword. Do you wish to run me through again?" "And again, and again," Nick replied, while lifting Erica up and pulling her on top of himself. There seemed to be some unfastening of clothing going on below camera level, as well. In "Ashes to Ashes," Divia wanted LaCroix to make love to her, but he refused. The fact that she asked him to, however, indicates that it was possible. Centuries later, LaCroix told Nick that he could have done what Divia asked and not despised himself any more than he despised himself for decapitating her. Needless to say, vampire/vampire intimacy included bloodletting, as well. Nick's romantic liaisons with Erica in "Last Act" and Janette in "Crazy Love" were evidence of that.

Vampire/human sex was another matter entirely. If the *Forever Knight* vampires could have sex with humans, was there necessarily bloodletting involved? If there was, was it a *fait accompli* that the human must either die, or be brought across? The answers to these questions depended on which episode one watched.

In "Dance by the Light of the Moon," it appeared that the vampire Janette made love to the mortal Nick without taking his blood. First, Janette seduced Nick, and they were seen kissing passionately. Later, Nick, in a state of undress, moved the strap of Janette's gown back up onto her shoulder, and she got up from the bed, leaving Nick to recline with a very satisfied smile on his face. It was then that LaCroix arrived to bring Nick across.

It seemed evident that Nick slept with a mortal woman, Ann Foley, in "Dance by the Light of the Moon," and there was no suggestion that he took her blood. In "Blackwing," Nick slept with Marian Blackwing, and although they were only shown to mix their blood while on the "spirit plane," they presumably mixed blood in the real world, as well. This, apparently, was what allowed Marian to take the killer out of Nick and into herself. Neither of these sexual encounters with Nick proved fatal. In "Crazy Love," LaCroix said that Amalia had made love to Nick, although Nick was never shown to do more than kiss her and drink her blood.

In "Baby Baby," Janette remarked that since Trilling (a mortal) was still alive, Serena (a vampire) wasn't with him for sex. Nick asked LaCroix if it would really be possible for Serena to mate with Trilling, and he answered that it depended on what Serena was after. They did make love, and it proved to be fatal for Trilling. In "Be My Valentine," LaCroix told Natalie that it could be very hazardous to her health if she and Nick were to do more than mix minds, but he didn't say that it would be impossible. Natalie replied that she knew the risks when she signed on.

In "The Human Factor," Janette made love to a mortal, Robert McDonagh. She took his blood, but was able to stop herself before taking too much. Each time they made love, she needed less and less blood. This began to change her vampire nature, and she was eventually able to regain her mortality.

In "Last Knight," the final episode of the series, Natalie asked Nick to make love to her. There was no question about whether or not he would take her blood. They both understood that he would. He hesitated, however, because he wasn't sure that he would be able to stop himself from taking too much. This concern proved to be justified, since that was exactly what happened. They never did make love, however, although Natalie presumably wouldn't have asked if it hadn't been possible. Nick, however, skipped right to the bloodletting. He took too much blood and left her on the brink of death. He was then faced with the choice of

bringing her across, or letting her die. He chose to die along beside her and asked LaCroix to kill him. The deathblow was never shown, however, so the outcome remained a mystery.

**Shape-shifting** - Contrary to many popular vampire legends, the *Forever Knight* vampires did not change into bats, mist, wolves, or anything else.

**Silver** - The *Forever Knight* vampires had no adverse reaction to silver. In fact, Natalie gave Nick a sterling pill box in "Be My Valentine."

**Sleep** - As shown in "Father Figure," the *Forever Knight* vampires slept a coma-like, even deathlike steep from which it was not easy to arouse them. In "Sons of Belial," Nick and LaCroix were vulnerable enough while they slept that they were captured during the Spanish Inquisition.

**Souls** - There was some discrepancy as to whether or not the *Forever Knight* vampires had souls. LaCroix told Nick in "False Witness" that vampires did not have souls. Janette reiterated the sentiment later in that same episode when she told Nick that his soul was long gone. Likewise, in "Love You to Death," Janette said that Nick was tortured by a soul that he did not have. However, in "Cherry Blossoms," LaCroix told Nick that his desires were in his soul.

**Stakes** - Although potentially fatal, stakes were not a foolproof method of disposing of a *Forever Knight* vampire. In "Dark Knight - The Second Chapter," Nick drove a burning stake into LaCroix, apparently killing him, but he returned in "Love You to Death." The only explanation for this was offered in "Killer Instinct," when LaCroix declared that he was much too old and powerful for Nick to have destroyed him. When LaCroix was staked in "Night in Question," he had enough time to bargain with Nick for his life. Alexandra nonfatally staked Nick in "Fatal Mistake." Nick, however, fatally staked Richard in "I Will Repay," Spark in "A More Permanent Hell," and Divia in "Ashes to Ashes." Since Divia had already regenerated after being decapitated, LaCroix burned her body and committed her ashes to the wind as an additional safety measure.

Unlike in some other vampire myths, no particular type of wood was ever said to be more effective than any other type of wood when it came to staking the *Forever Knight* vampires.

**Starvation** - In "Dark Knight - The Second Chapter," LaCroix recited sunlight, fire, a stake through the heart, and decapitation as the ways to kill a vampire. Later in the episode, however, Natalie said that she gave Nick a transfusion of Schanke's blood to prevent him from starving to death. This begs the question: How long could a *Forever Knight* vampire go without blood before starving? After all, Natalie had seen him drink blood just two days earlier. In "Feeding the Beast," Nick abstained for three days, although he ate French fries in the interim. In "A More Permanent Hell," LaCroix said that the younger vampires, such as Nick, would eventually starve and die once the humans were gone, whereas the ancient immortals would linger for some time afterwards.

**Sunlight** - The *Forever Knight* vampires could tolerate brief exposure to sunlight. Their bodies would smoke, as seen in "Dark Knight - The Second Chapter," "Last Act," "Cherry Blossoms," "Hunters," "Dying for Fame," "Killer Instinct," and "The Fix," but death would not be instantaneous. In "I Will Repay," Nick told the newly made vampire, Richard, that he would be able to gain tolerance to sunlight in time, but in the beginning, he should stay away from it. Brief exposure sometimes resulted in minor bums, as shown in "Capital Offense," "Be My Valentine," and "Night in Question." Anything more than brief exposure was fatal, however. Two vampires committed suicide in this manner: Erica in "Last Act" and the Viet Cong vampire in "Can't Run, Can't Hide." Apparently, artificial sunlight was dangerous, as well. In "Blood Money," Feliks Twist had to avoid the rays of the sunlamps in his indoor greenhouse. Nick, however, was able to tolerate brief sessions in a sun bed, as evidenced in "Dark Knight" and "Killer Instinct."

As usual, there were inconsistencies. In "Hearts of Darkness," Ellen Simmons suffered from multiple personalities, and when she adopted one of her human personalities, she was able to tolerate sunlight even though one of her personalities was actually a vampire. If the tolerance to sunlight was therefore a question of mind over matter, why couldn't Nick tolerate sunlight in "Night in Question" when he had amnesia and didn't know that he was a vampire?

The episode "The Fire Inside" contained what are probably not inconsistencies so much as they are major bloopers. Nick, Janette, and LaCroix arrived in an abandoned house to spend the day, although why they bothered is unclear because in this particular episode, the sunlight apparently had no ill effect on them, whatsoever. They arrived after the sun was up, but unlike in "Hunters" and "Be My Valentine," they did not rush in with smoking bodies. They entered leisurely, happily discussing the night's hunting. There were holes in the walls and roof, and there was a window which they made no attempt to cover up. A trapdoor led to the basement where they were to spend the day, yet they calmly stood in the room above discussing what to do about the escaped slaves. When a search party arrived, Janette, LaCroix, and the escaped slaves hid in the basement, while Nick opened the front door and stood in full sunlight. He let the head of the search party into the house and calmly sat in the sunlit room, convincing him that the slaves were not there. Inexplicably, the vampires waited for nightfall before leaving the house.

Another oddity occurred in "Love You to Death." Janette allowed the Raven to be used for a photo shoot, and Nick asked where "they" were, referring to the club's usual vampire inhabitants. Janette replied, "Don't worry. I've sent them out to play, and they won't start straggling back until dawn." Presumably, they should have had to be back before dawn.

**Superhuman Abilities** - In addition to the abilities to fly and to hypnotize mortals, the *Forever Knight* vampires had supernatural speed, strength, vision, and hearing. This was demonstrated in many episodes, including "Last Act," "False Witness," "Father Figure," "Spin Doctor," "If Looks Could Kill," "Hunted," "Partners of the Month," and "Crazy Love."

**Virus** - In "Fever," a man-made virus was being developed as a possible cure for AIDS. It worked in the test tube, but HIV overwhelmed it in the body. Screed caught the virus when he snacked on an escaped lab rat, and it was transmitted via contact throughout the vampire community. Screed and several other vampires died, then it was found that since HIV destroyed the virus in the body, the surviving vampires could be cured by drinking or being injected with AIDS-tainted blood.

**Wolfsbane** - In traditional vampire lore, the wolfsbane plant is an effective vampire repellent. There was no evidence that wolfsbane had any effect in the *Forever Knight* universe.

**Wolves** - The *Forever Knight* vampires did not transform into wolves.

**Wood** - In many myths, some types of wood are more effective than others when it comes to staking vampires. These include ash, aspen, blackthorn, hawthorn, maple, and whitethorn. There was no evidence in *Forever Knight* that any type of wood was more effective than any other type.

# INCONSISTENCIES

## I. From Episode to Episode

Anyone planning to write a *Forever Knight* story should be aware not only of the premises of the show and the characters' histories, but the fact that those premises and histories tended to change from episode to episode. This was not an entirely unusual situation in episodic television, since different episodes were written by different writers. *Forever Knight* didn't have a writers' guide (it's little wonder, since they are often referred to as "bibles"), and that made for some interesting discrepancies.

**Four Years of Progress** - In the 1995 episode "Black Buddha - Part I," it was stated that after four years of Natalie's attempts to cure Nick of his vampirism, he had progressed to the point that he could eat raw hamburger. It should have been five years. It was shown in the 1992 episode "Only the Lonely" that Natalie had been trying to cure Nick for two years (in other words, since 1990). The fact that their association began in 1990 is corroborated by the fact that in the 1996 episode "Last Knight," Natalie said that it had been six years since Nick had come into her life.

**Janette (Bringing Others Across)** - The question of whether or not Janette ever brought anyone across was an area of some inconsistency. In "I Will Repay," Nick asked Janette if she'd ever brought anyone across, and she answered that she had not. She claimed that she could never stop herself in time, while there was still life left in the person. Yet in "If Looks Could Kill," Janette brought across a baroness because she sympathized with the woman's desire to stay young and beautiful. Not only did Janette bring the baroness across, she freely admitted it to Nick at the time.

**Janette's Age** - Janette's age was another matter of some discrepancy. In "A Fate Worse than Death," she told Nick that nothing had changed in 1,000 years, referring to the time when she was brought across. Nick said that he'd never seen her act this way, not in 800 years, but this referred to the fact that he was 800 years old and therefore had known her only that long. However, in "The Human Factor," Janette told Nick that 800 years was a long time to live with a cold heart and that when her mortal lover, Robert, died, eight centuries of repressed emotion were released.

Additionally, whether Janette was 800 or 1,000 years old, there was no way that she could have known what LaCroix's father looked like. In "Dead Air," LaCroix was tormenting a victim before killing him, and Janette remarked, "He does look like your father, doesn't he?" As shown in "A More Permanent Hell," LaCroix was brought across in 79 A.D., so his father must have lived over 1,900 years ago.

**Natalie's Resistance to Hypnotism** - Although Natalie was resistant to hypnotism in "Only the Lonely" and "A More Permanent Hell," LaCroix managed to mesmerize her to the point that she was completely defenseless and unaware of her surroundings in "Be My Valentine." In that same episode, she was also made to forget that she and Nick had admitted their love for each other.

**Nick (Killing)** - There were also some discrepancies on the subject of when Nick stopped killing. In "Cherry Blossoms," Nick told Dr. Chung that he hadn't killed anyone in a hundred years. This was corroborated by the fact that in "Love You to Death," Nick was tricked by LaCroix into killing a woman that he loved, prompting him to give up killing altogether. According to Janette, that incident occurred one hundred years ago. Yet in " 1966, " Nick killed two German policemen, and in "Outside the Lines," he killed a Nazi, as well as two members of the French Resistance, whom he believed to be traitors.

**Nick's Hair** - An odd, albeit trivial, inconsistency was the matter of Nick's hair. In "Dance by the Light of the Moon," the vampire Janette seduced the mortal Nick, who happened to have shoulderlength hair, then she turned him over to LaCroix, who brought him across. In "Near Death," the moment that Nick was brought across was shown. LaCroix had bitten him, and he was dying. Rather than go into the light, he chose to return as a vampire, and he drank from LaCroix's wrist. He had shoulder-length hair in that episode, also. However, in "Dark Knight," a short-haired Nick awakened as a vampire for the first time. Later in that same episode, the

short-haired Nick had his first feeding as a vampire. In "Curiouser and Curiouser," LaCroix told Nick, who once again had shoulder-length hair, that his first week of feeding had gone well.

**Nick's Skylight & Windows** - In numerous episodes, the downstairs windows in Nick's apartment were shown to be protected by blinds which kept out the deadly sunlight. This begs the question: Why weren't the skylight and the windows on the upper part of his loft similarly protected? When LaCroix visited Nick during the day in "The Fix," the skylight and upper windows were clearly seen, and they were definitely not protected. The blue sky was visible through them. Yet the daylight which filled the apartment caused no problem for LaCroix. When Nick opened the blinds on a downstairs window, however, and LaCroix stepped into the shaft of sunlight coming through that window, smoke rose from his body. The skylight was definitely not opaque, since a hit man was seen through it in "Father Figure," and LaCroix was seen through it in "Stranger than Fiction." Yet in none of the episodes where Nick was seen opening or closing the downstairs blinds, was there ever shown to be any protection for the upper windows or the skylight.

**Ninety-Sixth Precinct's Location** - The location of the 96th precinct presented another interesting question. In the first season, when Nick and Schanke worked out of the 27th precinct, Schanke responded to an emergency call at Queen and Spadina in the episode "Dead Air." In the third season, Nick and Tracy worked out of the 96th precinct. In the episode "Black Buddha - Part I," Tracy told Vachon to drive to the police station, located at Queen and Spadina. Granted, the intersection has four comers, but why would Schanke have been sent to the emergency at Queen and Spadina if the 96th precinct was fight across the street? It can't even be explained away by the fact that three years elapsed between the episodes. It might have been possible to speculate that the 96th precinct was built in the interim, except that in the second season episode "Forward into the Past," Nick visited that very police station as a civilian in the 1950's.

**Schanke's Child(ren)**- One of the earliest discrepancies was in regard to the number and/or sex of Schanke's children. In "Dying to Know You," Schanke said that he was working overtime for the kids and for Myra. Yet in "Dying for Fame," Schanke said that he was too busy to watch the rock channel because of Myra and the kid. Also, in "False Witness," when Schanke was having a bit of a career crisis, Stonetree advised him to take a trip with the wife and kid. In "Hunters," Schanke sent Myra and Jenny away for their safety, yet at the department picnic at the end of "Dead Issue," Schanke sent a little boy off to play, with instructions to play nice, don't fight, and stay away from the girls. After the first season, the issue settled down, and it became apparent that Schanke had a single child - a daughter named Jenny. In "Father's Day," he wanted to go away with his wife and kid and lamented that working nights was causing him to miss much of his daughter's life. In "The Code," Schanke talked about how Myra and Jenny would like Arizona, and in "A More Permanent Hell," he worried about Myra and Jenny when he thought that the world was going to end. In "The Fire Inside," Schanke was asked if he had any children. Nick answered for him and said, "Yeah. He's got a little girl. Name's Jenny."

**Schanke's Mother-in-Law** - Another interesting contradiction arose when Schanke's mother-in-law apparently returned from the dead. In "I Will Repay," Schanke mentioned that it took a long time for his wife, Myra, to get over her mother's death. In "Love You to Death," however, Schanke said that Myra was in Tampa with her mother, and in "Partners of the Month," Schanke talked to his mother-in-law over the telephone.

**Tracy's Resistance to Hypnotism** - Tracy was shown to be resistant to hypnotism in "Black Buddha - Part I," but in "Ashes to Ashes," when Tracy was grieving over Vachon's death, Nick asked LaCroix to alter her memory so that all she would remember was that Vachon was a good friend and a vampire who had decided that it was time to move on. He knew that Tracy was resistant to hypnotism, but said that he had seen LaCroix work around that before.

## II. Within a Single Episode

In addition to the inconsistencies that occurred from episode to episode, there were occasionally discrepancies that occurred within a single episode.

**Aristotle's Location** - "Forward into the Past" contained a rather humorous discrepancy. Nick asked for Janette's help in contacting the relocation expert, Aristotle. When he visited Aristotle, however, he was in the

same basement that he'd been in forty years earlier. Of course, it had been modernized and computerized in the interim, but it was nevertheless the same basement.

**Daylight** - In "For I Have Sinned," Nick stood across the street from St. John's Church in the early morning light (this in itself is inexplicable), while Schanke was on the phone to Myra saying, "I know it's not even light yet, honey, but I just wanted to call and see how you were doing."

## III. Historical Inaccuracies

Another category of inconsistencies is historical anachronisms.

**Battle of Hastings** - In "Forward into the Past," Aristotle owed Nick a favor because of something that had happened at the Battle of Hastings, which occurred in 1066. Yet as the opening narration described, Nick wasn't brought across until 1228.

**"Living well ..."** - In "A Fate Worse than Death," LaCroix recited the quote: "Living well is the best revenge." He disagreed with that philosophy and said that living forever is the best revenge. Janette later amended it further by stating that the best revenge is revenge. The problem lies in the fact that Janette was brought across approximately 1,000 years ago, and the author of the quote in question is George Herbert, who lived from 1593 to 1633.

## IV. Vampire Lore

The last area of inconsistencies is vampire lore. This is a can of worms unto itself, and a separate (previous) section has been devoted to a discussion of the different elements of vampire lore, how they fit into the world of *Forever Knight,* and the inconsistencies that cropped up from episode to episode.